

THE
HISTORY
OF
ENGLAND,

FROM
The INVASION of JULIUS CÆSAR
TO
The REVOLUTION in 1688.

IN EIGHT VOLUMES.

By DAVID HUME, Esq;

VOL. V.

A NEW EDITION, Corrected.

To which is added, a COMPLETE INDEX.

DUBLIN:

Printed for JAMES WILLIAMS, at No. 5. Skinner-Row.
M,DCC,LXIX.



C O N T E N T S

O F T H E

F I F T H V O L U M E.

C H A P. XXXIX.

E L I Z A B E T H.

Queen's popularity. — Re-establishment of the protestant religion. — A Parliament. — Peace with France. — Disgust between the Queen and Mary Queen of Scots. — Scots affairs. — Reformation in Scotland. — Civil wars in Scotland. — Interposal of the Queen in Scots affairs. — Settlement of Scotland. — French affairs. — Arrival of Mary in Scotland. — Bigotry of the Scotch reformers. — Wise government of Elizabeth.

Page 1

C H A P. XL.

State of Europe. — Civil wars of France. — Havre de Grace put in possession of the English. — A Parliament. — Havre lost. — Scotch affairs. — The Queen of Scots marries the earl of Darnley. — Confederacy against the Protestants. — Murder of Rizzio. — A Parliament. — Murder of Darnley. — Queen of Scots marries Bothwel. — Insurrections in Scotland. — Imprisonment of Mary. — Mary flies into England. — Conferences at York and Hampton-Court.

65

A 2

C H A P.

C O N T E N T S.

C H A P. XL.

Character of the Puritans.—Duke of Norfolk's conspiracy.—Insurrection in the north.—Assassination of the Earl of Murray.—A Parliament.—Civil wars of France.—Affairs of the Low Countries.—New conspiracy of the duke of Norfolk.—Trial of Norfolk,—His execution.—Scotch Affairs.—French affairs.—Massacre of Paris.—French affairs.—Civil wars of the Low Countries.—A Parliament.

156

C H A P. XLI.

Scots affairs.—Spanish affairs.—Sir Francis Drake.—A Parliament.—Negotiations of marriage with the duke of Anjou.—Scots affairs.—Letter of Queen Mary to Elizabeth.—Conspiracies in England.—A Parliament.—The ecclesiastical commission.—Affairs of the Low Countries.—Hostilities with Spain.

234

C H A P. XLII.

Zeal of the Catholics.—Babington's conspiracy.—Mary assents to the conspiracy.—The conspirators seized and executed.—Resolution to try the Queen of Scots.—The commissioners prevailed on her to submit to the trial.—The trial.—Sentence against Mary.—Interposition of King James.—Reasons for the execution of Mary.—The execution.—Mary's character.—The Queen's affected

C O N T E N T S.

affected sorrow.—Drake destroys the Spanish fleet at Cadiz.—Philip projects the invasion of England.—The Invincible Armada.—Preparations in England.—The Armada arrives in the Channel.—Defeated—A Parliament.—Expedition against Portugal.—Scots affairs. 286

C H A P. XLIII.

French affairs.—Murder of the duke of Guise.—Murder of Henry the third.—Progress of Henry the fourth.—Naval enterprizes against Spain.—A Parliament.—Henry the fourth embraces the catholic religion.—Scotch affairs.—Naval enterprizes.—A Parliament.—Peace of Vervins.—The earl of Essex. 368

C H A P. XLIV.

State of Ireland.—Tyrone's rebellion.—Essex sent over to Ireland.—His ill success.—Returns to England.—Is disgraced.—His intrigues.—His insurrection.—His trial and execution.—French affairs.—Mountjoy's success in Ireland.—Defeat of the Spaniards and Irish.—A Parliament.—Tyrone's submission.—Queen's sickness.—And death.—And character.—Government, manners, commerce, arts, and learning. 411

C H A P.

C O N T E N T S.

C H A P. XLV.

HISTORY OF GREAT BRITAIN.

J A M E S I.

Introduction.—James's first transactions.—State of Europe.—Rosni's negotiations.—Raleigh's conspiracy.—Hampton-court conference.—A Parliament.—Peace with Spain.

510

C H A P. XLVI.

Gun-powder conspiracy.—A parliament.—Truce betwixt Spain and the United Provinces.—A parliament.—Death of the French King.—Arminianism.—State of Ireland.

541

T H E

T H E
H I S T O R Y
O F
E N G L A N D,
U N D E R T H E
H O U S E o f T U D O R.

E L I Z A B E T H.

C H A P. XXXIX.

Queen's popularity.—Re-establishment of the protestant religion.—A Parliament.—Peace with France.—Disgust between the Queen and Mary Queen of Scots.—Scotch affairs.—Reformation in Scotland.—Civil wars in Scotland.—Interposal of the Queen in Scotch affairs.—Settlement of Scotland.—French affairs.—Arrival of Mary in Scotland.—Bigotry of the Scotch reformers.—Wise government of Elizabeth.

IN a nation divided like the English, it could scarce be expected, that the death of one sovereign, and the accession of another, who was strongly suspected to have embraced opposite principles to those which prevailed, could be the object of universal satisfaction: Yet so much were Men displeased with the present conduct of affairs, and such apprehensions were entertained of fu-

C H A P.

XXXIX.

1558.

VOL. V.

B

turity,

C O N T E N T S.

C H A P. XLV.

HISTORY OF GREAT BRITAIN.

J A M E S I.

Introduction.—James's first transactions.—State of Europe.—Rosni's negotiations.—Raleigh's conspiracy.—Hampton-court conference.—A Parliament.—Peace with Spain. 510

C H A P. XLVI.

Gun-powder conspiracy.—A parliament.—Truce betwixt Spain and the United Provinces.—A parliament.—Death of the French King.—Arminianism.—State of Ireland. 541

THE
HISTORY
OF
ENGLAND,
UNDER THE
HOUSE of TUDOR.

ELIZABETH.

CHAP. XXXIX.

Queen's popularity.—Re-establishment of the protestant religion.—A Parliament.—Peace with France.—Disgust between the Queen and Mary Queen of Scots.—Scotch affairs.—Reformation in Scotland.—Civil wars in Scotland.—Interposal of the Queen in Scotch affairs.—Settlement of Scotland.—French affairs.—Arrival of Mary in Scotland.—Bigotry of the Scotch reformers.—Wise government of Elizabeth.

IN a nation divided like the English, it could scarce be expected, that the death of one sovereign, and the accession of another, who was strongly suspected to have embraced opposite principles to those which prevailed, could be the object of universal satisfaction: Yet so much were Men displeased with the present conduct of affairs, and such apprehensions were entertained of futurity,
CHAP. XXXIX.
1558.

VOL. V. B turity,

CHAP.
XXXIX.

1558.

turity, that the people, overlooking their theological disputes, expressed a very general and unfeigned joy that the scepter had passed into the hands of Elizabeth. That princess had discovered great prudence in her conduct during the reign of her sister; and as men were sensible of the imminent danger to which she was every moment exposed, the compassion towards her situation, and concern for her safety, had rendered her, to an uncommon degree, the favourite of the nation. A Parliament had been assembled a few days before Mary's death; and when Heathe, archbishop of York, then chancellor, notified to them that event, scarce an interval of regret appeared; and the two houses immediately resounded with the joyful acclamations of "God save Queen Elizabeth: Long and happily may she reign." The people, less actuated by faction, and less influenced by private views, expressed a joy still more general and hearty on her proclamation; and the auspicious commencement of this reign prognosticated that felicity and glory which, during its whole course, so uniformly attended it^a.

ELIZABETH was at Hatfield when she heard of her sister's death; and after a few days she proceeded thence to London, thro' crowds of People, who strove with each other in giving her the strongest testimony of their affections. On her entrance into the Tower, she could not forbear reflecting on the great difference between her present fortune and that which a few years before had attended her, when she was conducted to that place as a prisoner, and lay there exposed to all the bigotted malignity of her enemies. She fell on her knees, and expressed her thanks to heaven, for the deliverance which the Almighty had granted her from her bloody persecutors; a deliverance, she said, no less miraculous than that which Daniel had received from the den

^a Burnet, vol. ii. p. 373.

den of lions. This act of pious gratitude seems to have been the last circumstance in which she remembered any past injuries and hardships. With a prudence and magnanimity truly laudable, she buried all offences in oblivion, and received with affability even those who had acted with the greatest virulence against her. Sir Harry Benningfield himself, to whose custody she had been committed, and who had treated her with uncommon severity, never felt, during the whole course of her reign, any effects of her resentment^b. Yet was not the gracious reception which she gave, prostitute and undistinguishing. When the bishops came in a body to make their obeisance to her, she expressed to all of them sentiments of regard; except to Bonner, from whom she turned aside, as from a Man polluted with blood, who was a just object of horror to every heart susceptible of humanity^c.

AFTER employing a few days in ordering her domestic affairs, Elizabeth notified to foreign courts, her sister's death, and her own accession to the crown. She sent lord Cobham to the Low Countries, where Philip then resided; and she took care to express to that monarch, her gratitude for the protection which he had afforded her, and her desire of persevering in that friendship which was so happily commenced between them. Philip, who had long foreseen this event, and who still hoped, by means of Elizabeth, to obtain that dominion over England, which he had failed of in espousing Mary, immediately dispatched orders to the duke of Feria, his ambassador at London, to make proposals of marriage to the Queen, and he offered to procure from Rome a dispensation for that purpose. But Elizabeth soon came to the resolution of declining this proposal. She saw that the nation had entertained an extreme aversion to the Spanish alliance during her sis-

CHAP.

XXXIX.

1558.

^b Burnet, vol. ii. p. 374.^c Ibid. Heylin, p. 102.

4 HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

CHAP. ter's reign; and that one great cause of the popula-
 XXXIX. rity which she herself enjoyed, was the prospect of
 1558. being freed, by her means, from the danger of foreign subjection. She was sensible, that her affinity with Philip, was exactly similar to that between her father and Catherine of Arragon; and that her marrying that monarch was, in effect, declaring herself illegitimate, and incapable of succeeding to the throne. And tho' the power of the Spanish monarchy might still be sufficient, in opposition to all pretenders, to support her title, her masculine spirit disdained such precarious dominion, which, as it would depend solely on the power of another, must be exercised according to his inclination^d. But while these views prevented her from entertaining any thoughts of a marriage with Philip, she gave him a very obliging, tho' evasive answer; and he still retained such hopes of success, that he sent a messenger to Rome, with orders to solicit the dispensation.

THE Queen too, on her sister's death, had wrote to Sir Edward Carne, the English ambassador at Rome, to signify her accession to the pope; but the precipitate nature of Paul broke thro' all the cautious measures concerted by that young princess. He told Carne, that England was a fief of the holy see; and it was a great temerity in her to have assumed, without his participation, the title and authority of Queen: That Elizabeth, being illegitimate, could not possibly inherit that kingdom; nor could he annul the sentence pronounced by Clement the seventh, and Paul the third, with regard to Henry's marriage: That were he to proceed with rigour, he would punish this criminal invasion of his rights, by rejecting all her applications; but being willing to treat her with paternal indulgence, he would still keep the door of grace open to her: And that if she would renounce all pretensions to the throne, and sub-

^d Camden in Kennet, p. 370. Burnet, vol. ii. p. 375.

1558.

mit entirely to his will, she should experience the utmost lenity which was compatible with the dignity of the apostolic see^e. When this answer was reported to Elizabeth, she was astonished at the character of that aged pontiff; and having recalled her ambassador, she continued with more determined resolution to pursue those measures which she had already secretly embraced.

THE Queen, not to alarm the partizans of the catholic religion, had retained eleven of her sister's counsellors; but in order to balance their authority, she added eight more who were known to be affectionate to the protestant communion: The marquis of Northampton, the earl of Bedford, Sir Thomas Parry, Sir Edward Rogers, Sir Ambrose Cave, Sir Francis Knolles, Sir Nicholas Bacon, whom she created lord keeper, and Sir William Cecil, secretary of state^f. With these counsellors, particularly Cecil, she frequently deliberated concerning the expediency of restoring the protestant religion, and the means of executing that great enterprise. Cecil told her, that the greatest part of the nation had, ever since her father's reign, inclined to the reformation; and tho' her sister had constrained them to profess the antient faith, the cruelties exercised by her ministers, had still more alienated their affections from it: That happily the interests of the sovereign concurred here with the inclinations of the people; nor was her title to the crown compatible with the authority of the Roman pontiff: That a sentence, so solemnly pronounced by two popes against her mother's marriage, could not possibly be recalled, without inflicting a mortal wound on the credit of the see of Rome; and even if she was allowed to retain the crown, it would be only on an uncertain and dependant footing: That this motive counterbalanced all dangers whatever; and these

Re-establishment
of the
protestant
religion.

^e Father Paul, lib. v.

^f Strype's Ann. vol. i. p. 5.

dangers

CHAP. dangers themselves, if narrowly viewed, would be
 XXXIX. found very little formidable: That the curses and
 1558. execrations of the Romish church, when not se-
 conded by military force, were, in the present age,
 more an object of ridicule than of terror, and had
 now as little influence in this world as in the
 next: That tho' the bigotry or ambition of Henry
 or Philip might incline them to execute a sentence
 of excommunication against her, their interests were
 so incompatible, that they never could concur in
 any plan of operations; and the enmity of the one
 would always ensure to her the friendship of the
 other: That if they encouraged the discontents of
 her catholic subjects, their dominions also abounded
 with protestants, and it would be easy to retaliate
 that injury upon them: That even such of the
 English as seemed at present zealously attached to
 the catholic faith, would most of them embrace
 the religion of their new sovereign; and the nation
 had of late been so accustomed to these revolutions,
 that men had lost all idea of truth and falsehood
 in such subjects: That the authority of Henry the
 eighth, so highly raised by many concurring circum-
 stances, first enured the people to this submissive
 deference; and it was the less difficult for the suc-
 ceeding princes to continue the nation in a train to
 which it had been so long accustomed: And that it
 would be easy for her, by bestowing on protestants
 all the commissions in civil offices and the militia,
 the church and the universities, both to ensure her
 own authority, and to render her religion entirely
 predominant^s.

THE education of Elizabeth, as well as her interest,
 led her to favour the reformation; and she remained
 not long in suspense with regard to the party, which
 she should embrace: But tho' determined in her own
 mind, she resolved to proceed by gradual and secure

^s Burnet, vol. ii. p. 377. Camden, p. 370.

steps, and not to imitate the example of Mary, in encouraging the bigots of her party to make immediately a violent invasion on the established religion^h. CHAP. XXXIX.

1558.

She thought it requisite, however, to discover such symptoms of her intentions, as might give encouragement to the protestants, so much depressed by the late violent persecution. She immediately recalled all the exiles, and gave liberty to the prisoners who were confined on account of religion. We are told of a pleasantry of one Rainsford on this occasion, who said to the Queen, that he had a petition to present her in behalf of other prisoners called Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John: She readily replied, that it behoved her first to consult the prisoners themselves, and to learn of them whether they desired that liberty, which he demanded for themⁱ.

ELIZABETH also proceeded to exert, in favour of the reformers, some acts of power, which were consistent with the extent of the royal prerogative, during that age. Finding, that the protestant teachers, irritated by persecution, broke out in a furious attack on the antient superstition, and that the Romanists replied with no less zeal and acrimony, she published a proclamation, by which she inhibited all preaching without a special licence^k; and tho' she dispensed with these orders in favour of some preachers of her own sect, she took care, that they should be the most calm and moderate of the party. She also suspended the laws so far as to order a great part of the service; the litany, the Lord's prayer, the creed, and the gospels; to be read in English. And having first published injunctions, that all the churches should conform themselves to the practice of her own chapel, she forbade the hoste to be any more elevated in her presence; an innovation, which, however frivo-

^h Burnet, vol. ii. p. 378. Camden, p. 371.

ⁱ Heylin, p. 103.

^k Heylin, p. 104. Strype, vol. i.

CHAP. lous it may appear, implied the most material con-
XXXIX. sequences¹.

1558.

THESE declarations of her intention, concurring with the preceding suspicions, made the bishops foresee with certainty a revolution in religion. They therefore refused to officiate at her coronation; and it was with some difficulty, that the bishop of Carlisle was at last prevailed on to perform that ceremony. When she was conducted thro' London, amidst the joyful acclamations of her subjects, a boy, who personated Truth, was let down from one of the triumphal arches, and presented her with a copy of the Bible. She received the book with the most gracious deportment, placed it next her bosom, and declared, that, amidst all the costly testimonies which the city had that day given her of their attachment, this present was by far the most precious and most acceptable^m. Such were the innocent artifices, by which Elizabeth insinuated herself into the affections of her subjects. Open in her address, gracious and affable in all public appearances, she rejoiced in the concourse of her Subjects, entered into all their pleasures and amusements, and without departing from her dignity, which she knew well how to preserve, she acquired a popularity beyond what any of her predecessors or successors ever could attain. Her own sex exulted to see a woman hold the reins of empire with such prudence and fortitude: And while a young princess of twenty-five years (for that was her age at her accession) who possessed all the graces and insinuation, tho' not all the beauty of her sex, courted the affections of individuals by her civilities, of the public by her services, her authority, tho' corroborated by the strictest bands of law and religion, appeared to be derived entirely from the choice and inclination of the people.

¹ Camden, p. 371. Heylin, p. 104. Strype, vol. i. p. 54.
Stowe, p. 635. ^m Burnet, vol. ii p. 380. Strype, vol. i. p. 29.

A SOVEREIGN of this disposition was not likely to offend her subjects by any useless or violent exertions of power; and Elizabeth, tho' she threw out such hints as encouraged the protestants, delayed the entire change of religion till the meeting of the Parliament, which was summoned to assemble. The elections had gone entirely against the catholics, who seemed not indeed to have made any great struggle for the superiority; and the Houses met in a disposition of gratifying the Queen in every particular, which she could desire of them. They began the session with an unanimous declaration, "that Queen Elizabeth was, and ought to be, as well by the word of God, as the common and statute laws of the realm, the lawful, undoubted, and true heir to the crown, lawfully descended from the blood-royal, according to the order of succession, settled in the 35th of Henry VIII." This act of recognition was undoubtedly dictated by the Queen herself and her ministers; and she shewed her magnanimity, as well as moderation, in the terms, which she employed on that occasion. She followed not Mary's practice in declaring the validity of her mother's marriage, or in expressly repealing the act formerly made against her own legitimacy: She knew, that this attempt must be attended with reflections on her father's memory, and on the birth of her deceased sister; and as all the world were sensible that Henry's divorce from Anne Boleyn was merely the effect of his violence and caprice, she scorned to found her title on any act of an assembly, which had too much prostituted its authority by its former variable, servile, and iniquitous decisions. Satisfied therefore in the general opinion entertained with regard to this fact, which appeared the more undoubted, the less anxiety she discovered in fortifying it by votes and enquiries; she took possession

CHAP.
XXXIX.

1559.

A Parli-
ment.ⁿ 1 Eliz. cap. 3.

CHAP. of the throne, both as her birth-right, and as en-
 XXXIX. fured to her by former acts of Parliament; and
 1559. she never appeared solicitous to distinguish these ti-
 tles^o.

THE first bill which was brought into the Parlia-
 ment with a view of trying their disposition with re-
 gard to religion, was that for suppressing the monas-
 teries lately erected, and for restoring the tenths and
 first-fruits to the Queen. This point being gained
 without much difficulty, a bill was next introduced,
 annexing the supremacy to the crown; and tho' the
 Queen was there denominated *governess*, not *head*,
 of the church, it conveyed the same extensive power,
 which had formerly been exercised by her father and
 brother. All the bishops who were present in the
 upper house strenuously opposed this law; and as
 they possessed more learning than the temporal peers,
 they triumphed in the argument; but the majority
 of voices in that house, as well as among the com-
 mons, was against them. By this act the crown,
 without the concurrence, either of the Parliament
 or even of the convocation, was vested with the
 whole spiritual power; might repress all heresies^p,
 might establish or repeal all canons, might alter
 every point of discipline, and might ordain or a-
 bolish any religious rite or ceremony^q. In order
 to exercise this unlimited authority, the Queen,
 by a clause of the act, was empowered to name
 commissioners, either laymen or clergymen, as she
 should think proper; and on this clause was after-

^o Camden, p. 372. Heylin, p. 107, 108.

^p In determining heresy, the crown was only limited (if that
 could be called a limitation) to such doctrines as had been ad-
 judged heresy, by the authority of the Scripture, by the first
 four general councils, or by any general council, which follow-
 ed the Scripture as their rule, or to such other doctrines as
 should hereafter be denominated heresy by the Parliament and
 convocation. 1 Eliz. cap. 2.

^q 1 Eliz. cap. 1. This last power was anew granted in the
 act of uniformity. 1 Eliz. cap. 2.

wards founded the court of ecclesiastical commission; CHAP. XXXIX.
 which assumed very large discretionary, not to say arbitrary powers, totally incompatible with any exact limitations in the constitution. Their proceedings indeed were only consistent with absolute monarchy; but were entirely suitable to the genius of the act on which they were established; an act that at once gave the crown all the power, which had formerly been claimed by the popes, but which even these usurping prelates had never been able fully to exercise, without some concurrence of the clergy. 1559.

WHOEVER refused to take an oath, acknowledging the Queen's supremacy, was incapacitated from holding any office; whoever denied the supremacy, or attempted to deprive the Queen of that prerogative, forfeited, for the first offence, all their goods and chattles; for the second were subjected to the penalty of a premunire; but the third offence was declared treason. These punishments, however severe, were less rigorous than such as were formerly, during the reigns of her father and brother, inflicted in like cases.

A LAW was passed, confirming all the statutes enacted in King Edward's time with regard to religion: The nomination of bishops was given to the crown without any election of the chapters: The Queen was empowered, on the vacancy of any see, to seize all the temporalities, and to bestow on the bishops-elect an equivalent in the impropriations belonging to the crown. This pretended equivalent was commonly very much inferior in value; and thus the Queen, amidst all her concern for religion, followed the example of the preceding reformers, in committing depredations on the ecclesiastical revenues.

THE bishops and all incumbents were prohibited from alienating their revenues, and from letting leases

CHAP. longer than twenty one years or three lives. This
 XXXIX: law seemed to be intended for securing the property
 of the church; but as an exception was left in fa-
 1559. vour of the crown, great abuses still prevailed. It
 was usual for a courtier, during this reign, to make
 an agreement with a bishop or incumbent; and to
 procure a fictitious alienation to the Queen, who
 afterwards transferred the lands to the person agreed
 on*. This method of pillaging the church was not
 remedied till the beginning of James the first. The
 present depression of the clergy exposed them to
 all injuries; and the laity never stopped till they had
 reduced the church to such poverty, that her plunder
 was no longer a compensation for the odium incurred
 by it.

A SOLEMN and public disputation was held during
 this session, in presence of Lord keeper Bacon, be-
 tween the divines of the protestant and those of the
 catholic party. The champions appointed to defend
 the religion of the sovereign, were, as in former in-
 stances, entirely triumphant, and the popish disputants,
 being pronounced refractory and obstinate, were even
 punished by imprisonment*. Emboldened by this
 victory, the protestants ventured on the last and most
 important step, and brought into Parliament a bill
 for abolishing the mass, and re-establishing the litur-
 gy of King Edward. Penalties were enacted, as well
 against those who departed from this mode of worship,
 as those who absented themselves from the church
 and the sacraments. And thus in one session, with-
 out any violence, tumult, or clamour, was the whole
 system of religion altered, on the very commence-
 ment of a reign, and by the will of a young woman,
 whose title to the crown was by many esteemed liable
 to great objections: An event, which, tho' it may ap-
 pear surprising to men in the present age, was every

* Strype, vol. i. p. 79.

† 1 Eliz. cap. 2.

* Ibid. p. 95.

where expected on the first news of Elizabeth's accession. CHAP. XXXIX.

1559.

THE commons also made a sacrifice to the Queen, more difficult to obtain than that of any articles of religion: They voted a subsidy of four shillings in the pound on land, and two shillings and eight pence on goods, together with two fifteenths*. The house in no instance departed from the most respectful deference and complaisance towards the Queen. Even the importunate address, which they made her on the conclusion of the session, to fix her choice of a husband, could not, they supposed, be very disagreeable to one of her sex and age. The address was couched in the most respectful expressions; yet met with a refusal from the Queen. She told the speaker, that as the application from the house was conceived in general terms, only recommending marriage, without pretending to direct her choice of a husband, she could not take offence at the address, or regard it as other than a new instance of their affectionate attachment towards her: That any farther interposition on their part would have

* The Parliament also granted the Queen the duties of tonnage and poundage; but this accession was at that time regarded only as a matter of form, and she had levied these duties before they were voted by the Parliament: But there was another exertion of power, which she practised, and which people, in this age, from their ignorance of the antient constitution, may be apt to think a little extraordinary. Her sister, after the commencement of the war with France, had, from her own authority, imposed four marks on each ton of wine imported, and had increased the poundage a third on all commodities. Queen Elizabeth continued these impositions as long as she thought convenient. The Parliament, who had so good an opportunity of restraining these arbitrary taxes when they voted the tonnage and poundage, thought proper not to make any mention of them. They knew, that the sovereign, during that age, pretended to have the sole regulation of foreign trade, and that their intermeddling with that prerogative would have drawn on them the severest reproof, if not chastisement. See Forbes, vol. i. p. 132, 133. We know certainly from the statutes and journals, that no such impositions were granted by Parliament.

CHAP.
XXXIX.

1559.

ill become either them to make, as subjects, or her to hear as an independant princess: That even while she was a private person, and exposed to much danger, she had always declined that engagement; which she regarded as an incumbrance; much more, at present would she persevere in that sentiment, when the charge of a great kingdom was committed to her, and her life ought to be entirely devoted to promoting the interests of religion and the happiness of her subjects: That as England was her husband, wedded to her by this pledge (and here she shewed them her finger with the same gold ring upon it, with which she had solemnly betrothed herself to the kingdom at her inauguration) so all Englishmen were her children; and while she was employed in the rearing or governing such a family, she could not deem herself barren, or her life useless and unfruitful: That if she ever entertained thoughts of changing her condition, the care of her subjects welfare would still be uppermost in her thoughts; but should she live and die a virgin, she doubted not but the divine providence, seconded by their counsels and her own measures, would be able to prevent all dispute with regard to the succession, and secure them a sovereign, who, perhaps better than her own issue, would imitate her example in loving and cherishing her people: And that for her part, she desired that no higher character, nor fairer remembrance of her should be transmitted to posterity, than to have this inscription engraved on her tomb-stone, when she should pay the last debt to nature; "Here lies Elizabeth, who lived and died a maiden Queen".

8th May. AFTER the prorogation of the Parliament², the laws, enacted with regard to religion, were put in execution,

¹ Camden, p. 375. Sir Simon d'Ewes.

² It is thought remarkable by Camden, that tho' this session was the first of the reign, no person was attainted; but on the contrary,

1559.

ecution, and met with no opposition from any quarter. The liturgy was again introduced in the vulgar tongue, and the oath of supremacy was tendered to the clergy. The number of bishops had been reduced to fourteen by a very sickly season, which preceded; and all of these, except the bishop of Landaffe, having refused compliance, were degraded from their sees: But of the inferior clergy throughout all England, where there are near 10,000 parishes, only eighty parish rectors, fifty prebendaries, fifteen heads of colleges, twelve archdeacons, and as many deans, sacrificed their livings to their religious principles*. Those in high ecclesiastical stations, who were exposed to the eyes of the world, seem chiefly to have placed a point of honour in their perseverance; but on the whole, the protestants, in the former change introduced by Mary, appear to have been much more rigid and conscientious. Tho' the catholic religion, adapting itself to the senses, and requiring observances, which enter into the common train of life, does at present lay much faster hold of the mind than the reformed, which, being chiefly spiritual, resembles more a system of metaphysics; yet was the proportion of zeal, as well as of knowledge, during the first ages after the reformation, much greater on the side of the protestants. The catholics continued, ignorantly and supinely, in their antient belief, or rather their antient practices: But the reformers, obliged to dispute on every occasion, and enflamed to a degree of enthusiasm by novelty and persecution, had strongly attached themselves to their tenets; and were ready to sacrifice their fortunes and even their lives, in defence of their speculative and abstract principles.

contrary, some restored in blood by the Parliament. A good symptom of the lenity, at least of the prudence, of the Queen's government.

* Camden, p. 376. Heylin, p. 115. Strype, vol. i. p. 73. with some small variations.

The

CHAP. The forms and ceremonies, still preserved in the
 XXXIX. English liturgy, as they bore some resemblance to
 the antient service, tended farther to reconcile the
 catholics to the established religion; and as the
 Queen permitted no other mode of worship, and
 at the same time struck out every thing that could
 be offensive to them in the new liturgy^b, even those
 addicted to the Romish communion made no scruple
 of attending the established church. Had Elizabeth gratified her own inclinations, the exterior appearance, which is the chief circumstance with the people, would have been still more similar between the new and the antient form of worship. As she loved state and magnificence in every thing, she was somewhat addicted to the pomp of the catholic religion; and it was merely in compliance with the prejudices of her party, that she gave up either the images or the addresses to the saints, or prayers for the dead^c. Some foreign princes interposed to procure the Romanists the privilege of separate assemblies in particular cities, but the Queen would not comply with their request; and represented the manifest danger of disturbing the national peace by a toleration of different religions^d.

Peace
 with
 France.

WHILE the Queen and Parliament were employed in settling the public religion, the negotiations for a peace were still conducted, first at Cercamp, then at Chateau-Cambresis, between the ministers of France, Spain and England; and Elizabeth, tho' equally prudent, was not so successful in this transaction. Philip employed his utmost efforts to procure the restitution of Calais, both as bound in honour to indemnify England, which, merely on his account, had been drawn into the war, and as engaged in interest to remove

^b Heylin, p. 111.
 Camden, p. 371.
 150, 370.

^c Burnet, vol. ii. p. 376. 397.
^d Camden, p. 378. Strype, vol. i. p.

1559.

France from his frontiers in the Low Countries. So long as he entertained hopes of espousing the Queen, he delayed concluding a peace with Henry; and even after the change of religion in England deprived him of all such views, his ministers hinted a proposal, which may be regarded as reasonable and honourable. After all his own terms with France were settled, he seemed willing to continue the war, till she should obtain satisfaction; provided she would stipulate to adhere to the Spanish alliance, and continue hostilities against Henry, during the course of six years^e: But Elizabeth, after consulting with her ministers, very wisely rejected this proposal. She was sensible of the low state of her finances; the great debts contracted by her father, brother and sister; the disorders introduced into every part of the administration; the divisions by which her people were agitated; and she was convinced that nothing but tranquillity during some years could bring the kingdom again into a flourishing condition, or enable her to act with dignity and vigour, in her transactions with foreign nations. Well acquainted with the value which Henry put upon Calais, and the impossibility of recovering it by treaty, during the present emergency, she was willing rather to suffer that loss, than submit to such a dependence on Spain, as she must expect to fall into, if she continued pertinaciously in her present demand. She ordered, therefore, her ambassadors, the Lord Effingham, the bishop of Ely, and Dr. Wotton, to conclude the negociation, and to settle a peace with Henry, on any reasonable terms. Henry offered to stipulate a marriage between the eldest daughter of the dauphin, and the eldest son of Elizabeth; and to engage for the restitution of Calais as the dowry of that princess^f; but as the Queen was sensible that this treaty would appear to the world a

^e Forbes's full View, vol. i. p. 59.^f Forbes, vol. i. p. 54.

CHAP.
XXXIX.

1559.

palpable evasion, she insisted upon more equitable, at least, more plausible conditions. It was at last agreed, that Henry should restore Calais at the expiration of eight years; that in case of failure, he should pay five hundred thousand crowns, and the Queen's title to Calais still remain; that he should find the Security of seven or eight foreign merchants, not natives of France, for the payment of this sum; that he should deliver five hostages till that security was provided; that if Elizabeth broke the peace with France or Scotland during that interval, she should forfeit all title to Calais; but if Henry made war on Elizabeth, he should be obliged immediately to restore that fortress². All men of penetration easily saw, that these stipulations were but a colourable pretence for abandoning Calais; but they excused the Queen on account of the necessity of her affairs, and they even extolled her prudence, in submitting, without further struggle, to that necessity. A peace with Scotland was a necessary consequence of that with France.

PHILIP and Henry concluded hostilities with a mutual restitution of all places taken during the course of the war; and Philip espoused the princess Elizabeth, eldest daughter of France, formerly betrothed to his son Don Carlos. The duke of Savoy married Margaret, Henry's sister, and obtained a restitution of all his dominions of Savoy and Piedmont, except a few towns, retained by France. And thus general tranquillity seemed to be restored to Europe.

Disgust
between
the Queen
and Mary
Queen of
Scots.

BUT tho' a peace was signed and concluded between France and England, there soon appeared a ground of quarrel, of the most serious nature, and which was afterwards attended with the most important consequences. The two marriages of Henry the eighth, that with Catherine of Arragon, and that with Anne Boleyn, were totally incompatible with each other, and it seemed impossible that

² Forbes, p. 68. Rymer, tom. xv. p. 505.

that both of them could be regarded as valid and legal: But still the birth of Elizabeth lay under some disadvantages, to which that of her sister, Mary, was not exposed. Henry's first marriage had obtained the sanction of all the powers, both civil and ecclesiastical, which were then acknowledged in England; and it was natural, for protestants as well as Romanists, to allow, on account of the sincere intention of the parties, that their issue ought to be regarded as legitimate. But his divorce, and second marriage, had been concluded in direct opposition to the see of Rome; and tho' they had been ratified by the authority both of the English Parliament and convocation, those who were strongly attached to the catholic church, and who reasoned with great strictness, were lead to regard them as entirely invalid, and to deny altogether the Queen's right of succession. The next heir of blood was the Queen of Scots, now married to the dauphin; and the great power of that princess, joined to her plausible title, rendered her a very formidable rival to Elizabeth. The King of France had secretly been soliciting at Rome a bull of excommunication against the Queen; and she had here been beholden to the good offices of Philip, who, from interest more than either friendship or principle, had negotiated in her favour, and had successfully opposed the pretensions of Henry. But the court of France was not discouraged with this repulse: The duke of Guise, and his brothers, thinking, that it would much augment their credit, if their niece should bring an accession of England, as she had already done of Scotland to the crown of France, engaged the King not to neglect the claim; and, by their persuasion, he ordered his son and daughter-in-law to assume openly the arms as well as title of England, and to quarter these arms on all their equipages, furniture, and liveries. When

CHAP.
XXXIX.

1559.

CHAP.
XXXIX.

1559.

the English ambassador complained of this injury, he could obtain nothing but an evasive answer; that as the Queen of Scots was descended from the blood-royal of England, she was entitled, by the example of many princes, to assume the arms of that kingdom. But besides that this practice had never prevailed without permission being first obtained, and without making a visible difference between the arms, Elizabeth plainly saw, that this pretension had not been advanced during the reign of her sister Mary; and that, therefore, the King of France intended, on the first opportunity, to dispute her legitimacy, and her title to the crown. Alarmed with the danger, she thenceforth conceived a strong jealousy against the Queen of Scots; and was determined, as far as possible, to incapacitate Henry from the execution of his project. The sudden death of that monarch, who was killed in a tournament at Paris, while he was celebrating the espousals of his sister with the duke of Savoy, altered not her views. Being informed, that his successor, Francis the second, still continued to assume, without reserve, the title of King of England, she began to consider him and his Queen as her most mortal enemies; and the present situation of affairs in Scotland afforded her a favourable opportunity, both of revenging the injury, and of providing for her own safety.

Scots af-
fairs.

THE murder of the cardinal-primate at St. Andrews, had deprived the Scots catholics of a head whose severity, courage, and capacity had rendered him extremely formidable to the innovators in religion; and the execution of the Laws against heresy began thenceforth to be much more remiss and gentle. The Queen-regent governed the Kingdom by prudent and moderate councils; and as she was not disposed to sacrifice the civil interests of the state to the bigotry or interests of priests, she deemed it more expedient to temporize, and to connive at the

the progress of a doctrine which she had not power entirely to repress. When informed of the death of Edward, and the accession of Mary to the crown of England, she entertained hopes, that the Scottish reformers, deprived of the countenance which they received from that powerful kingdom, would lose their ardour with their prospect of success, and would gradually return to the faith of their ancestors. But the progress and revolutions of religion are little governed by the usual maxims of civil policy; and the event much disappointed the regent's expectations. Many of the English preachers, terrified with the severity of Mary's government, took shelter in Scotland, where they found more protection, and a milder administration; and while they propagated their theological tenets, they filled that whole kingdom with a just horror against the cruelties of the bigotted catholics, and showed their disciples the fate which they must expect, if ever their adversaries should attain an uncontrouled authority over them.

CHAP.
XXXIX.

1559.

A HIERARCHY, moderate in its acquisitions of power and riches, may safely grant a toleration to sectaries; and the more it abates the fervor of innovators by lenity and liberty, the more securely will it possess those advantages which the legal establishments bestow upon it. But where superstition has raised a church to such an exorbitant height as that of Rome, persecution is less the result of bigotry in the priests, than of a necessary policy; and the rigour of law is the only method of repelling the attacks of men, who, besides religious zeal, have so many other motives, derived both from public and private interest, to engage them on the side of innovation. But tho' such overgrown hierarchies may long support themselves by these violent expedients, the time comes, when severities tend only to enrage the new sectaries, and make them break thro' all bounds

CHAP. bounds of reason and moderation. This crisis was
 XXXIX. now visibly approaching in Scotland; and whoever
 1559. considers merely the transactions resulting from it,
 will be inclined to throw the blame equally on both
 parties; whoever enlarges his view, and reflects on
 the situations, will observe the necessary progress of
 human affairs, and the operation of those principles
 which are inherent in human nature.

Reforma- SOME heads of the reformers in Scotland, such as
 tion in the earl of Argyle, his son lord Lorne, the earls of
 Scotland. Morton, and Glencarne, Erskine of Dun, and others,
 finding the danger to which they were exposed, and
 desirous to propagate their principles, entered pri-
 vately into a bond or association; and called them-
 selves the *Congregation* of the Lord, in contradistin-
 ction to the established church, which they denomi-
 nated the congregation of Satan. The tenor of the
 bond was as follows: " We, perceiving how Satan,
 " in his members, the anti-christs of our time, do
 " cruelly rage, seeking to over-throw and to destroy
 " the gospel of Christ and his congregation, ought,
 " according to our bounden duty, to strive, in our
 " master's cause, even unto the death, being certain
 " of the victory in him. We do therefore promise,
 " before the majesty of God and his congregati-
 " on, that we, by his grace, shall with all dili-
 " gence continually apply our whole power, sub-
 " stance, and our very lives, to maintain, set for-
 " ward, and establish the most blessed word of
 " God and his congregation; and shall labour, by
 " all possible means, to have faithful ministers, tru-
 " ly and purely to minister Christ's gospel and
 " sacraments to his people: We shall maintain
 " them, nourish them, and defend them, the whole
 " congregation of Christ, and every member there-
 " of, by our whole power, and at the hazard of
 " our lives, against Satan, and all wicked pow-
 " er, who may intend tyranny and trouble against
 " the

“ the said congregation : Unto which holy word CHAP.
 “ and congregation we do join ourselves ; and we XXXIX.
 “ forsake and renounce the congregation of Satan, 1559.
 “ with all the superstitious abomination and idolatry
 “ thereof ; and moreover shall declare ourselves ma-
 “ nifestly enemies thereto, by this faithful promise
 “ before God, testified to this congregation by our
 “ subscriptions. At Edinburgh, the third of De-
 “ cember, 1557 ^h.”

HAD the subscribers of this zealous league been contented only to demand a toleration of the new opinions ; however incompatible their pretensions might have been with the policy of the church of Rome, they would have had the praise of opposing tyrannical laws, enacted to support an establishment prejudicial to civil society : But it is plain, that they carried their views much farther ; and their practice immediately discovered the spirit by which they were actuated. Supported by the authority which, they thought, belonged to them as the congregation of the Lord, they ordained that prayers in the vulgar tongueⁱ should be used in all the parish churches of the kingdom ; and that preaching, and the interpretation of the scriptures should be practised in private houses, till God should move the prince to grant public preaching by faithful and true ministers^k. Such bonds of association are always the forerunners of rebellion ; and this violent invasion of the established religion was the actual commencement of it.

BEFORE this league was publickly known or avowed, the clergy, alarmed with the progress of the reformation, attempted to recover their lost authority, by a violent exercise of power, which tended still farther to augment the zeal and number of their enemies. Hamilton, the primate, seized Walter Mill, a priest

^h Keith, p. 66. Knox, p. 101. ⁱ The reformers used at that time King Edward's liturgy in Scotland. Forbes, p. 155.

^k Keith, p. 66. Knox, p. 101.

CHAP. of an irreproachable life, who had embraced the new
 XXXIX. doctrines; and having tried him at St. Andrews,
 1559. condemned him to the flames for heresy. Such general
 aversion was discovered to this barbarity, that
 it was some time before the bishops could prevail
 on any one to act the part of a civil judge, and pro-
 nounce the sentence upon him; and even after the
 time of his execution was fixed, all the shops of St.
 Andrews being shut, no one would sell a rope to tie
 him to the stake, and the primate himself was ob-
 liged to furnish this implement. The man bore the
 torture with that courage which, tho' usual on these
 occasions, always appears astonishing and super-
 natural to the multitude: The people, to express
 their abhorrence against the cruelty of the priests,
 raised a monument of stones on the place of his
 execution; and as fast as the stones were removed
 by order of the clergy, they were again supplied
 from the voluntary zeal of the populace¹. It is in
 vain for men to oppose the severest punishments to
 the united motives of religion and public applause;
 and this was the last barbarity of the kind which
 the catholics had the power to exercise in Scot-
 land.

SOME time after, the people discovered their senti-
 ments in such a manner, as was sufficient to prog-
 nosticate to the priests, the fate which was awaiting
 them. It was usual on the festival of St. Giles, the
 tutelar saint of Edinburgh, to carry in procession
 the image of that saint; but the protestants, in order
 to prevent the ceremony, found means, on the eve
 of the festival, to purloin the statue from the
 church, and they pleased themselves with imagining
 the astonishment and disappointment of his vo-
 taries. The clergy, however, framed hastily a
 new image, which, in derision, was called by the
 people young St. Giles; and they carried it thro' the
 streets, attended with all the ecclesiastics in the

¹ Knox, p. 122.

town and neighbourhood. The multitude abstained from violence so long as the Queen-regent continued a spectator, but the moment she retired, they invaded the idol, threw it in the dirt, and broke it in pieces. The flight and terror of the priests and fryars, who, it was remarked, deserted, in his greatest distress, the object of their worship, was the source of universal mockery and laughter.

CHAP.
XXXIX.

1559.

ENCOURAGED by all these appearances, the congregation proceeded with alacrity in openly soliciting subscriptions to their league; and the death of Mary of England, with the accession of Elizabeth, which happened about this time, contributed much to increase their hopes of final success in their undertaking. They ventured to present a petition to the regent, craving a reformation of the church, and of the *wicked, scandalous, and detestable* lives of the prelates and ecclesiasticks^m. They framed a Petition, which they intended to present to Parliament, and in which, after premising, that they could not communicate with the damnable idolatry, and intolerable abuses of the papistical church, they desired, that the laws against heretics should be executed by the civil magistrate alone, and that the scripture should be the sole rule for judging of heresyⁿ. They even petitioned the convocation, and insisted that prayers should be said in the vulgar tongue, and that bishops should be chosen with the consent of the gentry of the diocese, and priests with the consent of the parishioners^o. The regent prudently temporized between these parties; and as she aimed at procuring a matrimonial crown for her son-in-law, the dauphin, she was, on that as well as other accounts, unwilling to come to extremities with either of them.

BUT after this concession was obtained, she received orders from France, probably dictated by the

^m Knox, p. 121.

ⁿ Ibid, p. 123.

^o Keith, p. 78, 81, 82.

CHAP. haughty spirit of her brothers, to proceed with violence against the reformers, and to restore the royal authority, by some signal act of power^p. She made the most eminent of the protestant teachers be cited to appear before the council at Stirling; but when their followers were marching thither in great multitudes, in order to protect and countenance them, she entertained apprehensions of an insurrection, and dissipated the people by a promise^q, that nothing should be done to the prejudice of the ministers. This promise was violated; and a sentence passed, by which all the ministers were pronounced rebels, on account of their not appearing. A measure, so rash and ill advised, enraged the people, and made them resolve to resist her authority by force of arms, and to proceed to extremity against the clergy of the established religion.

1559.
11th May. In this critical time John Knox arrived from Geneva, where he had passed some years in banishment, and where he had imbibed, from his commerce with Calvin, the highest fanaticism of his sect, augmented by the natural ferocity of his own character. He had been invited back to Scotland by the leaders of the reformation; and mounting the pulpit at Perth, during the present ferment of mens minds, he declaimed with his usual vehemence against the idolatry and other abominations of the church of Rome, and incited his audience to exert their utmost zeal for its subversion. A priest was so imprudent after this sermon, as to open his repository of

^p Melvil's Memoirs, p. 24. Jebb, vol. II. p. 446.

^q Knox, p. 127. We shall suggest afterwards some reasons to suspect, that, perhaps, no express promise was given. Calumnies easily arise during times of faction, especially those of the religious kind, when men think every art lawful for promoting their purpose. The congregation in their manifesto, where they enumerate all the articles of the regent's mal-administration, do not reproach her with this breach of promise. It was probably nothing but a rumour spread abroad to catch the populace. If the papists have sometimes maintained, that no faith was to be kept with heretics, their adversaries seem also to have thought, that no truth ought to be told of idolaters.

images and reliques, and prepare himself to say mass. CHAP.
XXXIX.
 The audience, who were wrought up to a disposition for any furious enterprize, were as much enraged as if the spectacle had not been quite familiar to them: They attacked the priest with fury, broke the images in pieces, tore the pictures, overthrew the altars, scattered about the sacred vases; and left no implement of idolatrous worship, as they called it, entire or unbroken. They thence proceeded with additional numbers, and augmented rage, to the monasteries of the Grey and Black friars, which they pillaged in an instant: The Carthusians underwent the same fate; and the populace, not content with robbing and expelling the monks, vented their fury on the buildings, which had been the receptacles of such abomination; and in a very little time nothing but the walls of these stately edifices were left standing. The inhabitants of Couper in Fife soon after imitated the example*.

THE Queen-regent, provoked at these violences, Civil wars
in Scot-
land. assembled an army, and prepared to chastise the rebels. She had about two thousand French under her command, with a few Scots troops; and being assisted with such of the nobility as were well affected to her, she pitched her camp within ten miles of Perth. Even the earl of Argyle, and the lord James Stuart, prior of St. Andrew's, the Queen's natural brother, tho' deeply engaged with the reformers, attended the regent in this enterprize, either because they blamed the fury of the populace, or hoped by their influence and authority to mediate some agreement between the parties. The congregation, on the other hand, made preparations for defence; and being joined by the earl of Glencarne from the west, and being countenanced by many of the nobility and gentry, they appeared formidable from their numbers, as well as from the zeal by which they were animated.

* Spotswood, p. 121. Knox, p. 127.

CHAP. They sent an address to the regent, where they plainly
 XXXIX. insinuated, that if they were pursued to extremity,
 1559. by the cruel beasts, the churchmen, they would have recourse to foreign powers for assistance; and they subscribed themselves her faithful subjects in all things not repugnant to God; assuming, at the same time, the name of the faithful congregation of Christ Jesus*. They applied to the nobility attending her, and maintained, that their past violences were justified by the word of God, which commands the godly to destroy idolatry, and all the monuments of it; that tho' all civil authority was sacred, yet was there a great difference between the authority and the persons who exercised it†; and that it ought to be considered whether or not those abominations, called by the pestilent papists, religion, and which they defend by fire and sword, be the true religion of Christ Jesus. They remonstrated with such of the Queen's army as had formerly embraced their party, and told them, "That as they were already reputed
 " traitors by God, they should likewise be ex-
 " communicated from their society, and from the
 " participation of the sacraments of the church,
 " which God by his mighty power had erected a-
 " mong them; whose ministers have the same autho-
 " rity which Christ granted to his apostles in these
 " words, *Whose sins ye shall forgive shall be forgiven,*
 " *and whose sins ye shall retain shall be retained*." We may here see that these new saints were no less lofty in their pretensions than the antient hierarchy; and it was therefore no wonder they were enraged against the latter as their rivals in dominion. They joined to all these declarations an address to the established church; and they affixed this title to it. "To
 " the generation of antichrist, the pestilent prelates
 " and their *shavelings*‡ in Scotland, the congregation

* Knox, p. 129.

† Ibid. p. 131.

‡ Ibid. p. 133.

* A contemptuous term for a priest.

" of

“ of Christ Jesus within the same sayeth.” The tenor of the manifesto was agreeable to the title. They told the ecclesiastics, “ As ye by tyranny intend not only to destroy our bodies, but also by the same to hold our souls in bondage of the devil, subject to idolatry ; so shall we, with all the force and power which God shall grant unto us, execute just vengeance and punishment upon you : Yea, we shall begin that same war which God commanded Israel to execute against the Canaanites ; that is, contract of peace shall never be made, till you desist from your open idolatry, and cruel persecution of God’s children. And in this, in the name of the eternal God, and of his son, Christ Jesus, whose verity we profess, and Gospel we have preached, and holy sacraments rightly administred, we signify unto you, to be our intent, so far as God will assist us to withstand your idolatry. Take this for warning, and be not deceived.” With these outrageous symptoms commenced that cant, hypocrisy, and fanaticism which long infested that kingdom ; and which, tho’ now mollified by the lenity of the civil power, is still ready to break out on all occasions.

THE Queen-regent, finding such obstinate zeal in the malecontents, was contented to embrace the councils of Argyle and the prior of St. Andrew’s, and to form an accommodation with them. She was received into Perth, which submitted to her on promising an indemnity of past offences, and engaging not to leave any French garrison in the place. This capitulation, it is pretended, was not exactly observed. Some of the inhabitants were molested on account of the late violences ; and some companies of Scots soldiers, supposed to be in French pay, were quartered in the town ; which

✓ Keith, p. 85, 86, 87. Knox, p. 134.

CHAP. step, tho' taken on a very plausible pretence, was
 XXXIX. regarded by the congregation as an infraction of the
 1559. treaty^z. It is asserted, that the regent, to justify
 these measures declared, that princes ought not to
 have their promises too strictly urged upon them;
 nor was any faith to be kept with heretics: And
 that for her part, could she find as good a colour of
 reason, she would willingly bereave all these men of
 their lives and fortunes^a. But it is no wise likely,
 that such expressions dropt from this prudent and
 virtuous princess. On the contrary, it appears, that
 these violences were very disagreeable to her; that
 she was in this particular over-ruled by the authority
 of the French counsellors placed about her; and that
 she often thought, if the management of these affairs
 had been entrusted wholly to herself, she could easily,
 without force, have accommodated all differences^b.

THE congregation enflamed with their own zeal,
 and enraged with these disappointments, remained

^z Knox, p. 139.

^a Ibid. Spotswood, p. 123.

^b Spotswood, p. 146. Melvil, p. 29. Knox, p. 225, 228.
 Lesly, lib. x. That there was really no violation of the capi-
 tulation of Perth, appears from the manifesto of the congrega-
 tion in Knox, p. 184, where it is not so much as pretended.
 The companies of Scots soldiers were, probably, in Scots pay,
 since the congregation complains, that the country was oppres-
 sed with taxes to maintain armies. Knox, p. 164, 165. And
 even if they had been in French pay, it were no breach of the
 capitulation, since they were national troops, not French.
 Knox does not say, p. 139, that any of the inhabitants of
 Perth were tried or punished for their past offences; but only
 that they were oppressed with the quartering of soldiers: And
 the congregation in their manifesto, say only that many of them
 had fled for fear. This plain detection of the calumny with re-
 gard to the breach of the capitulation of Perth, may make us
 suspect a like calumny with regard to the promise pretended not
 to give sentence against the ministers. The affair lay altogether
 between the regent and the laird of Dun; and that gentleman,
 tho' a man of sense and character, might be willing to take some
 general professions for promises. If the Queen, overawed by
 the power of the congregation, gave such a promise in order to
 have liberty to proceed to a sentence; how could she expect to
 have power to execute a sentence so treacherously obtained? And
 to what purpose could it serve?

not long in tranquillity. Even before they left CHAP.
Perth, and while as yet they had no colour to com- XXXIX.
plain of any violation of treaty, they had signed a
new covenant, in which, besides their engagements
to mutual defence, they vowed in the name of God
to employ their whole power in destroying every
thing that dishonoured his holy name; and this co-
venant was subscribed, among others, by Argyle and
the prior of St. Andrew's^c. These two leaders now
desired no better Pretence for deserting the regent
and openly joining their associates, than the com-
plaints, however doubtful, or rather false, of her
breach of promise. The congregation also, encou-
raged by this accession of force, gave themselves up
entirely to the furious zeal of Knox, and renewed at
Crail, Anstruther, and other places in Fife, like de-
predations, on the churches, and monasteries with
those formerly committed at Perth and Couper.
The regent, who marched against them with her ar-
my, finding their power so much increased, was glad
to conclude a truce for a few days, and to pass over
with her forces to the Lothians. The reformers be-
sieged and took Perth; proceeded thence to Stir-
ling, where they exercised their usual fury; and
finding nothing able to resist them, they bent their
march to Edinburgh, the inhabitants of which, as
they had already anticipated the zeal of the congre-
gation against the churches and monasteries, gladly
opened their gates to them. The regent, with the
few forces which remained with her, took shelter in
Dunbar, where she shut herself up, in expectation
of a reinforcement from France.

MEANWHILE, she employed her partizans in repre-
senting to the people the dangerous consequences of
this open rebellion; and she endeavoured to convince
them, that the lord James, under pretence of re-

^c Keith, p. 89. Knox, p. 138.

CHAP. XXXIX. 1559. ligion, had formed the scheme of wresting the scepter from the hands of the sovereign. By these considerations many were engaged to desert the army of the congregation; but much more by the want of pay or any means of subsistence; and the regent, observing the insurgents to be much weakened, ventured to march to Edinburgh, with a design to suppress them. On the interposition of the duke of Chatelraut, who still adhered to her, she agreed to a capitulation, in which she granted them a toleration of their religion, and they engaged to commit no farther depredations on the churches. Soon after they evacuated the city of Edinburgh; and before they left it, they proclaimed the articles of agreement; but they took care to publish only the articles favourable to themselves, and they were guilty of an imposture, in adding one to the number, viz. that idolatry shall not again be erected in any place where it was at that time suppressed^d.

AN agreement concluded, while men's minds were in this disposition, could not be durable; and both sides endeavoured to strengthen themselves as much as possible, against the ensuing rupture, which appeared inevitable. The regent, having got a reinforcement of 1000 men from France, began to fortify Leith; and the congregation seduced the duke of Chatelraut to their party, who had long appeared inclined to them, and who was at last determined by the arrival of his son, the earl of Arran, from France, where he had escaped many dangers, from the jealousy, as well as bigotry, of Henry and the duke of Guise. More French troops soon after disembarked under the command of La Brosse, who was fol-

^d Knox, p. 153, 154, 155. This author pretends that this article was agreed to verbally, but that the Queen's scribes omitted it in the treaty which was signed. This story is very unlikely, or rather very absurd; and in the mean time it is allowed, that the article is not in the treaty: Nor do the congregation in their subsequent manifesto insist upon it. Knox, p. 184.

1559.

followed by the bishop of Amiens, and three doctors of the Sorbonne. These last were supplied with store of syllogisms, authorities, citations, and scholastic arguments, which they intended to oppose to the Scots preachers, and which, they justly presumed, would acquire force, and operate conviction on mens minds, by the influence of the French arms and artillery^e.

THE constable Montmorency had always opposed the marriage of the Queen of Scots with the dauphin, and had foretold, that, by forming such close connexions with Scotland, the antient league would be dissolved; and the natives of that kingdom, jealous of a foreign yoke, would soon become, instead of allies, attached by interest and inclination, the most inveterate enemies to the French dominion. But tho' the event seemed now to have justified the prudence of that aged minister, it is not improbable, considering the violence of the councils, by which France was governed, that the insurrection was esteemed a favourable event; as affording a pretence for sending over armies, for entirely subduing the country, for attainting the rebels^f, and for preparing means thence to invade England, and support Mary's title to the crown of that kingdom. The leaders of the congregation, well acquainted with these views, were not insensible of their danger, and saw that their only safety consisted in the vigour and success of their measures. They were encouraged by the intelligence received of the sudden death of Henry the second; and having passed an act from their own authority, depriving the Queen dowager of the regency, and ordering all the French troops to evacuate the kingdom, they collected forces to put their edict in execution against them. They became masters again of Edinburgh; but found themselves unable to keep long possession of that

^e Spotswood, p. 134. Thuan. lib. xxiv. c. 10.

^f Forbes, vol. I. p. 139. Thuan. lib. xxiv. c. 13.

CHAP.
XXXIX.

1559.

city. Their tumultuary armies, assembled in haste, and supported by no pay, soon separated themselves upon the least disaster, or even any delay of success; and were incapable of resisting such veteran troops as the French, who were also seconded by some of the Scots nobility, among whom the earl of Bothwell distinguished himself. Hearing that the marquis of Elbeuf, brother to the regent, was levying a new army against them in Germany, they thought themselves excusable for applying, in this extremity, to the assistance of England; and as the sympathy of religion, as well as regard to national liberty, had now counterbalanced the antient animosity against that kingdom, this measure was the result of inclination no less than of interest. Maitland of Ledington, therefore, and Robert Melvil, were secretly dispatched by the Congregation to solicit succours from Elizabeth.

Interposi-
tion of the
Queen in
Scots af-
fairs.

THE wise council of Elizabeth deliberated not long in assenting to this proposal, which concurred so well with their views and interests. Cecil in particular represented to the Queen, that the union of the crowns of Scotland and France, both of them the hereditary enemies of England, was ever regarded as a very pernicious event; and her father, as well as protector Somerset, had employed every expedient, both of war and negotiation, to prevent it: That the claim, which Mary pretended to the crown, rendered the present situation of England still more dangerous, and demanded,

§ The Scots lords in their declaration say, “ How far we have
“ fought support of England, or of any other prince, and what just
“ cause we had and have so to do, we shall shortly make manifest
“ unto the world, to the praise of God’s holy name, and to the
“ confusion of all those that slander us for so doing: For this we
“ fear not to confess, that, as in this enterprise against the devil,
“ against idolatry and the maintainers of the same, we chiefly and
“ only seek God’s glory to be notified unto men, sin to be punished,
“ and virtue to be maintained; so where power faileth of our-
“ selves, we will seek it, wheresoever God shall offer the same.”

Knox, p. 176.

on

on the part of the Queen, the greatest vigilance and precaution : That the capacity, ambition, and exorbitant views of the family of Guise, who now entirely governed the French councils, were sufficiently known, and they themselves made no secret of their design to advance their niece to the throne of England : That deeming themselves secure of success, they had already, very imprudently and prematurely, taken off the mask : and Throcmorton, the English ambassador at Paris, sent over, by every courier, incontestible proofs of their hostile intentions ^h : That they only waited till Scotland should be entirely subdued ; and having thus deprived the English of the advantage, resulting from their situation and naval power, they prepared means for subverting the Queen's authority : That the zealous catholics in England, discontented with the present government, and satisfied with the legality of Mary's title, would bring them considerable reinforcement, and would disturb every measure of defence against that formidable power : That the only expedient for preventing these designs was to seize the present opportunity, and take advantage of a like zeal in the protestants of Scotland ; nor could any doubt be entertained with regard to the justice of a measure, founded on such evident necessity, and directed only to the ends of self-preservation : That tho' a French war, attended with great expence, seemed the necessary consequence of supporting the Scots malecontents, that power, if removed to the continent, could never be very formidable ; and a small disbursement at present would in the end be found the greatest frugality : And that the domestic dissensions of France, which every day augmented, together with the support of Philip, who, notwithstanding all his bigotry and hypocrisy, would never permit the entire conquest of England,

CHAP.
XXXIX.

1559.

^h Forbes, vol. i. p. 134, 136, 149, 150, 159, 165, 181, 194, 229, 231, 235—241, 253.

CHAP. were sufficient to secure the Queen against the dan-
 XXXIX. gerous ambition and resentment of the house of
 Guise¹.

1559.

ELIZABETH's propensity to caution and œconomy were, tho' with some difficulty^k, overcome by these powerful motives; and she prepared herself to support by arms and money the declining affairs of the Congregation in Scotland. She equipped a fleet, which consisted of thirteen ships of war; and giving the command of it to Winter, she sent it to the Firth of Forth: She named the young duke of Norfolk her lieutenant in the northern counties, and assembled at Berwic an army of eight thousand men under the command of lord Gray, warden of the east and middle marches. Tho' the court of France, sensible of the danger, offered her to make immediate restitution of Calais, provided she would not interpose in the affairs of Scotland; she resolutely told them, that she never would put an inconsiderable fisher-town in competition with the safety of her dominions^l; and she still continued her preparations. She concluded a treaty of mutual defence with the congregation, which was to last during the marriage of the Queen of Scots with Francis and a year after; and she promised never to desist till the French had entirely evacuated Scotland^m. And having thus taken all proper measures for success, and received from the Scots six hostages for the performance of articles, she ordered her fleet and army to begin their operations.

1560.

15th Jan.

THE appearance of Elizabeth's fleet in the Firth very much disconcerted the French army, who were at that time ravaging the county of Fife; and obliged them to make a circuit by Stirling, in order to reach Leith, where they shut themselves up, and prepared

¹ Forbes, vol. i. p. 387. Jebb, vol. i. p. 448. Keith, append. 24.

^k Forbes, vol. i. p. 454. 460.

^l Spotswood, p. 146.

^m Knox, p. 217. Haynes's

State Papers, vol. i. p. 153. Rymer, tom. xv. p. 569.

for defence. The English army, reinforced by 500 Scots^a, sat down before Leith; and after two skirmishes, in the former of which, the English had the advantage, in the latter the French, they began to batter the town; and tho' repulsed with considerable loss in a rash and ill conducted assault, they reduced the garrison to great difficulties. Their distress was augmented by two events; the dispersion by a storm of d'Elbeuf's fleet, which carried a considerable army on board^o, and the death of the Queen-regent, who expired about this time in the castle of Edinburgh; a woman endowed with all the capacity which shone forth in her family, but possessed of much more virtue and moderation than appeared in the conduct of the other branches of it. The French, who found it impossible to subsist for want of provisions, and who saw that the English were continually reinforced by fresh numbers, were obliged to capitulate. And the bishop of Valence and count Randan, plenipotentiaries from France, 5th July. signed a treaty at Edinburgh with Cecil and Dr. Wotton, whom Elizabeth had sent to Edinburgh for that purpose. It was there stipulated, that the French should, all of them, instantly evacuate Scotland; that the King and Queen of France and Scotland should thenceforth abstain from bearing the arms of England, or assuming the title of that kingdom; that farther satisfaction for the injury already done in that particular should be granted Elizabeth; and that commissioners should meet to settle this point, or if they could not agree, that the King of Spain should be arbiter between the crowns. Besides these stipulations, which regarded England, some concessions were granted to the Scots, which the plenipotentiaries, in the name of the King and Queen of France and Scotland, promised in the treaty with

CHAP.
XXXIX.

1560.

Settle-
ment of
Scotland.^a Haynes, vol. i. p. 256, 259.^o Ibid. p. 223.

CHAP. Elizabeth to observe; that an amnesty should be
 XXXIX. published for all past offences; that none but natives
 1560. should be put into any office in Scotland; that the
 states should name twenty-four persons, of whom
 the Queen of Scots should chuse seven, and the states
 five, and in the hands of these twelve should the
 whole administration be placed during that Queen's
 absence; and that Mary should neither make peace
 nor war without consent of the states^p. In order to
 hasten the execution of this important treaty, Eliza-
 beth sent ships, by which the French forces were
 transported into their own country.

THUS all Europe saw, in the first transaction of
 this reign, the genius and capacity of the Queen
 and her ministers. She discerned at a distance the
 danger, which threatened her; and took instantly
 vigorous measures to prevent it. Making all the
 possible advantages of her situation she proceeded
 with celerity to a decision; and was not diverted by
 any offers, negotiations, or remonstrances of the
 French court. She stopped not till she had brought
 the matter to a final issue; and had converted that
 very power, to which her enemies trusted for her
 destruction, into her firmest support and security.
 By exacting no improper conditions from the Scots
 malecontents even during their greatest distress, she
 established an entire confidence with them; and ha-
 ving cemented the union by all the ties of gratitude,
 interest and religion, she now possessed an influence
 over them above what remained even with their na-
 tive sovereign. The regard which she acquired by
 this dextrous and spirited conduct, gave her every
 where, abroad as well as at home, more authority
 than had attended her sister, tho' supported by all
 the power of the Spanish monarchy^q.

^p Rymer, vol. xv. p. 593. Keith, p. 137. Spotswood, p.
 147. Knox, p. 229. ^q Forbes, vol. i. p. 354, 372.
 Jebb, vol. ii. p. 452.

THE subsequent measures of the Scots reformers tended still more to cement their union with England. Being entirely masters of the kingdom, they made no farther ceremony or scruple, in fully effecting their purpose. In the treaty of Edinburgh it had been agreed, that a Parliament or convention should soon be assembled; and the leaders of the Congregation, not waiting till the Queen of Scots should ratify that treaty, thought themselves fully intitled, without the sovereign's authority, immediately to summon a Parliament. The reformers presented a petition to this assembly; in which they are not contented with desiring the establishment of their doctrine; they also apply for the punishment of the catholics, whom they call vassals to the Roman harlot; and they assert, that, amongst all the rabble of the clergy, such is their expression, there is not one lawful minister; but that they are, all of them, thieves and murderers; yea rebels and traitors to civil authority; and therefore unworthy to be suffered in any reformed commonwealth. The Parliament seem to have been actuated by the same spirit of rage and persecution. After ratifying a confession of faith, agreeable to the new doctrines, they passed a statute against the mass, and not only abolished it in all the churches, but enacted, that whoever any where, either officiated in it or was present at it, should be chastised, for the first offence, with confiscation of goods, and corporal punishment, at the discretion of the magistrate; for the second, with banishment; and for the third, with loss of life*. A law was also voted for abolishing the papal jurisdiction in Scotland: The presbyterian form of discipline was settled, leaving only at first some shadow of authority to certain ecclesiastics, whom they called superintendants. The prelates of the antient faith appeared in order to complain of great injustice committed

CHAP:
XXXIX.

1560.

* Knox, p. 237, 238.

* Ibid, p. 254.

CHAP.
XXXIX.

1560.

on them by the invasion of their property, but the Parliament took no notice of them; till at last, these ecclesiastics, tired with fruitless attendance, departed the town. They were then cited to appear; and as no body presented themselves, it was voted by the Parliament, that the ecclesiastics were entirely satisfied, and found no reason of complaint.

SIR James Sandilands, prior of St. John, was sent over to France to obtain the ratification of these acts; but was very ill received by the Queen, who absolutely denied the validity of a Parliament, summoned without the royal consent; and she refused her sanction to these statutes. But the protestants gave themselves little concern about their Queen's refusal. They immediately put the statutes in execution: They abolished the mass; they settled their ministers; they committed every where furious devastations on the monasteries, and even on the churches, which they thought to be profaned by idolatry; and deeming the property of the clergy lawful prey, they took possession, without ceremony, of the far greater part of the ecclesiastical revenues. Their new preachers, who had authority sufficient to incite them to war and insurrection, could not restrain their rapacity; and fanaticism concurring with avarice, an incurable blow was given to the papal authority in that country. The protestant nobility and gentry, united by the consciousness of such unpardonable guilt, alarmed for their new possessions, well acquainted with the imperious character of the house of Guise, saw no safety for themselves but in the protection of England; and they dispatched Morton, Glencarne, and Ledington to express their sincere gratitude to the Queen for her past favours, and to represent to her the necessity of continuing them.

French
affairs.

ELIZABETH had equal reason to maintain an union with the Scots protestants; and soon found, that the
house

1560.

house of Guise, notwithstanding their past disappointments, had not laid aside the design of contesting her title, and subverting her authority. Francis and Mary, whose councils were wholly directed by them, refused to ratify the treaty of Edinburgh; and showed no disposition to give her any satisfaction for that mortal injury and affront which they had put upon her, by so openly assuming the title and arms of England. She was sensible of the danger attending such pretensions; and it was with pleasure she heard of the violent factions, which prevailed in the French government, and of the opposition, which had arisen against the measures of the duke of Guise. That ambitious prince, supported by his four brothers, the cardinal of Lorraine, the duke of Aumale, the marquis of Elbeuf, and the grand prior, men no less ambitious than himself, had engrossed all the authority of the crown: and as he was possessed of every quality, which could command the esteem or seduce the affections of men, there appeared no end of his acquisitions and pretensions. The constable Montmorency, who had long balanced his credit, was deprived of all power: The princes of the blood, the King of Navarre and his brother the prince of Condé, were entirely excluded from offices and favour: The Queen-mother herself, Catherine de Medicis, found her influence every day declining: And as Francis, a young prince, infirm both in mind and body, was wholly governed by his spouse, who knew no law but the pleasure of her uncles, men despaired of ever obtaining freedom from the dominion of that aspiring family. It was the contests of religion, which first inspired the French with courage openly to oppose their exorbitant authority.

THE theological disputes, first started in the north of Germany, and next in Switzerland, countries at that

CHAP.
XXXIX.

1560.

time wholly illiterate, had long ago penetrated into France; and as they were assisted by the general discontents against the court and church of Rome, and by the zealous spirit of the age, the proselytes to the new religion were secretly encreasing in every province. Henry the second, in imitation of his father Francis, had opposed the progress of the reformers; and tho' a prince addicted to pleasure and society, he was transported by a vehemence, as well as bigotry, which had little place in his predecessor's conduct. Rigorous punishments had been inflicted on the most eminent of the protestant party; and a point of honour seemed to have arisen, whether the one sect could exercise or the other suffer most barbarity. The death of Henry put some stop to the persecutions; and the people, who had admired the constancy of the new preachers, now heard with favour and prepossession their arguments and doctrines. But the cardinal of Lorrain, as well as his brother, who were possessed of the legal authority, thought it their interest to support the established religion; and when they revived the exercise of the penal statutes, they necessarily engaged the malecontent princes and nobles in the protection of the new religion. The King of Navarre, a man of mild dispositions, but of a weak character, and the prince of Conde, who possessed many heroic qualities, having declared themselves in favour of the protestants, that sect acquired new force from their countenance; and the admiral de Coligni, with his brother Andelot, no longer scrupled to declare themselves openly of their communion. The integrity of the admiral, who was believed sincere in his profession, and his high renown both for valour and conduct, for the arts of peace as well as of war, gave credit to the reformers; and after a frustrated attempt of the malecontents to seize the King's person at Amboise, of which Elizabeth

beth had probably some intelligence^t, every place was full of distraction, and matters hastened to an extremity between the parties. But the house of Guise, tho' these factions had obliged them to remit their efforts in Scotland, and had been one chief cause of Elizabeth's success, were determined not to relinquish their authority in France, or yield to the violence of their antagonists. They found an opportunity to seize the King of Navarre and the prince of Condé; they threw the former into prison; they obtained a sentence of death against the latter; and they were proceeding to put the sentence in execution, when the king's sudden death saved the noble prisoner, and interrupted the prosperity of the duke of Guise. The Queen-mother was appointed regent to her son Charles the ninth, now in his minority: The King of Navarre was named lieutenant-general of the kingdom: The sentence against Condé was annulled: The constable was recalled to court: And the family of Guise, tho' they still enjoyed great offices, and great power, now found a counterpoise to their authority.

CHAP.
XXXIX.

1560.

4 Decem-
ber.
1561.

ELIZABETH was not dissatisfied to learn, that her avowed enemies had met with so severe a check, and she determined to make advantage of it against the Queen of Scots, whom she still regarded as a dangerous rival. She saw herself freed from the perils attending an union of Scotland with France; and was pleased to find, that so powerful a prince as the French monarch was no longer a pretender to her crown and kingdoms. But she considered, on the other hand, that the English catholics, who were very numerous, and who were generally prejudiced in favour of Mary's title, would now ad-

^t Forbes, vol. I. p. 214. Throcmorton, about this time unwilling to entrust to letters the great secrets committed to him, obtained leave, under some pretext, to come over to London.

CHAP. here to that princess with more zealous attachment,
 XXXIX. when they saw, that her succession no longer endan-
 1561. gered the liberties of the kingdom, and was rather at-
 tended with the advantages of producing an entire
 union with Scotland. She gave orders, therefore, to
 her ambassador, Throcmorton, a very vigilant and
 able minister, to renew his applications to the Queen
 of Scots, and to require her ratification of the trea-
 ty of Edinburgh. But tho' Mary had desisted, af-
 ter her husband's death, from bearing the arms and
 title of Queen of England, she still declined gratify-
 ing Elizabeth in this momentous article; and heark-
 ening too much to the ambitious suggestions of her
 uncles, she refused to make any formal renunciation
 of her pretensions.

MEANWHILE, the Queen-mother of France, who
 imputed to Mary all the mortifications which she had
 met with during Francis's life-time, took care to re-
 taliate on her by like injuries; and the Queen of Scots,
 who found her abode in France disagreeable, began
 to think of returning into her native country. Lord
 James, who had been sent in deputation from the
 states to invite her over, seconded this intention;
 and she applied to Elizabeth, by D'Oisel, for liber-
 ty to pass thro' England*. But she received for an-
 swer, that till she had given satisfaction, by ratifying
 the treaty of Edinburgh, she could expect no favour
 from a person whom she had so much injured. This
 denial excited her resentment; and she made no
 scruple of expressing her sentiments to Throcmorton,
 when he reiterated his applications to gratify his mis-
 tress in a demand, which he represented as so reason-
 able. Having cleared the room of all her atten-
 dants, she said to him, "How weak I may prove,
 " or how far a woman's frailty may transport me,
 " I cannot tell: However, I have no mind to have
 " so many witnesses of my infirmity as your mis-

* Goodall, vol. I. p. 175.

“ tress had at her audience of my ambassador D’Oifel. There is nothing disturbs me so much, as
 “ the having asked, with so much importunity, a
 “ favour which it was of no consequence for me to
 “ obtain. I can, with God’s leave, return to my
 “ own country without her leave; as I came to
 “ France, in spite of all the opposition of her brother, King Edward: Neither do I want friends,
 “ both able and willing to conduct me home, as
 “ they have brought me hither; tho’ I was desirous
 “ rather to make an experiment of her friendship
 “ than of the assistance of any other person. I
 “ have often heard you say, that a good correspondence between her and myself would conduce
 “ much to the security and happiness of both our
 “ kingdoms: But were she well convinced of this
 “ truth, she had hardly denied me so small a request. But, perhaps, she bears a better inclination to my rebellious subjects than to me, their
 “ sovereign, her equal in royal dignity, her near
 “ relation, and the undoubted heir of her kingdoms. Besides her friendship, I ask nothing at
 “ her hands: I neither trouble her, nor concern
 “ myself in the affairs of her State: Not that I am
 “ ignorant, that there are now in England a great
 “ many malecontents, who are no friends to the
 “ present establishment. She is pleased to upbraid
 “ me as a person little experienced in the world: I
 “ freely own it; but age will cure that defect.
 “ However, I am old enough to acquit myself honestly and courteously to my friends and relations,
 “ and to encourage no reports of her, which would
 “ misbecome a Queen and her kinswoman. I would
 “ also say, by her leave, that I am a Queen as
 “ well as she, and not altogether friendless: And,
 “ perhaps, I have as great a soul too; so that
 “ methinks we should be upon a level in our
 “ treatment of each other. As soon as I have
 “ consulted

CHAP. " consulted the states of my kingdom, I shall be
 XXXIX. " ready to give a reasonable answer; and I am the
 1561. " more intent on my journey, in order to make the
 " quicker dispatch in this affair. But she, it seems,
 " intends to stop my journey; so that either she will
 " not let me give her satisfaction, or is resolved not
 " to be satisfied; perhaps, on purpose to keep up the
 " disagreement betwixt us. She has often reproach-
 " ed me with my being young; and I must be very
 " young, indeed, and as ill advised, to treat of mat-
 " ters of such great concern and importance, with-
 " out the advice of my Parliament. I have not been
 " wanting in any friendly offices to her; but she dis-
 " believes or overlooks them. I could heartily wish,
 " that I was as near allied to her in affection as in
 " blood: For that, indeed, would be a most valua-
 " ble alliance *."

SUCH a spirited reply, notwithstanding the obli-
 ging terms interspersed in it, was but ill fitted to
 conciliate friendship between these rival princesses, or
 cure those mutual jealousies which had already taken
 place. Elizabeth equipped a fleet, on pretence of
 pursuing pyrates, but probably with an intention of
 intercepting the Queen of Scots in her return home-
 wards. Mary embarked at Calais; and passing the
 19th of English fleet in a fog, arrived safely at Leith, attend-
 August. ed by her three uncles, the duke of Aumale, the
 Arrival of grand prior, and the marquess of Elbeuf, together
 Mary in Scotland. with the marquess of Damville, and other French
 courtiers. This change of abode and situation was
 very little agreeable to that princess. Besides the nat-
 ural prepossessions in favour of a country in which
 she had been educated from her earliest infancy, and
 where she had born so high a rank, she could not
 forbear regretting her departure from among that peo-
 ple, so celebrated for their humane and sociable dis-

* Caballa, p. 374. Spotswood, p. 177.

position,

position, and their respectful attachment to their sovereign, and reflecting on the disparity of the scene which lay before her. It is said, that after she was embarked at Calais, she kept her eyes fixed on the coast of France, and never turned them from that beloved object, till darkness fell, and intercepted it from her view. She then ordered a couch to be spread for her under the open air; and charged the pilot, that, if in the morning the land was still in sight, he should awake her, and afford her one parting view of that country in which all her affections were centered. The weather proved very calm, so that the ship made little way in the night-time: And Mary had once more an opportunity of seeing the French coast. She sat up on her couch, and still looking towards the land, often repeated these words: "Farewell, France, farewell; I shall never see thee more." The first aspect, however, of things in Scotland, was more favourable, if not to her pleasure and happiness, at least to her repose and security, than she had reason to apprehend. No sooner did the French gallies appear off Leith, than people of all ranks, who had long expected their arrival, flocked towards the shore, with an earnest impatience to behold and receive their young sovereign. Some were led by duty, some by interest, some by curiosity; and all combined to express their attachment to her, and to insinuate themselves into her confidence, on the commencement of her administration. She had now reached the nineteenth year of her age; and the bloom of her youth, and amiable beauty of her person, were farther recommended by the affability of her address, the politeness of her manners, and the elegance of her genius. Well accomplished in all the superficial, but engaging graces of a court, she afforded, when better known, still more

C H A P.

XXXIX.

1561.

CHAP. promising indications of her character; and men
 XXXIX. prognosticated both humanity from her soft and ob-
 1561. liging deportment, and penetration from her taste in
 all the refined arts of music, eloquence, and poetry.^z And as the Scots had long been deprived of
 the presence of their sovereign, whom they once des-
 paired ever more to behold among them, her arrival
 seemed to give universal satisfaction; and nothing
 appeared about the court, but symptoms of affecti-
 on, joy, and festivity.

THE first measures which Mary embraced, confirm-
 ed all the prepossessions which had been entertained
 in her favour. She followed the advice which she had
 received in France from D' Oisel and the bishop of
 Amiens, as well as her uncles; and gave her confi-
 dence entirely to the leaders of the reformed party,
 who had greatest influence on the people, and who,
 she found, were alone able to support her govern-
 ment. Her brother, lord James, whom she soon af-
 ter created earl of Murray, obtained the chief au-
 thority; and after him, Lidington, secretary of state,
 a man of great sagacity, had a principal share in her
 confidence. By the vigour of these mens measures
 she endeavoured to restore order and police in the
 country, divided by public factions and private feuds;
 and that fierce and intractable people, unacquainted
 with laws and obedience, seemed, for a time, to
 submit peaceably to her gentle and prudent admini-
 stration.

Bigotry of
 the Scots
 reformers.

BUT there was one circumstance which blasted all
 these promising appearances, and bereaved Mary of
 that general favour which her agreeable manners and
 prudent deportment gave her just reason to expect. She
 was still a papist; and tho' she published, soon after her
 arrival, a proclamation, requiring every one to submit

^z Buchan, lib. xvii. c. 9. Spotswood, p. 178, 179. Keith, p.
 180. Thuan. lib. xxix. c. 2.

to submit to the established religion, the preachers, and their adherents, could neither be reconciled to a person polluted with so great an abomination, nor lay aside their jealousies of her future conduct. It was with great difficulty she could obtain permission for mass in her own chappel; and had not the people apprehended, that if she had here met with a refusal, she would instantly have returned to France, the zealots never would have granted her even that small indulgence. The cry was, "Shall that idol be suffered again to be erected within the realm?" It was asserted in the pulpit, that one mass was more terrible than ten thousand armed men landed to invade the kingdom^a: Lord Lindesey, and the gentlemen of Fife, exclaimed, "That the idolater should die the death;" such was their expression. One that carried tapers for the ceremony of that worship, was attacked and insulted in the court of the palace. And if the lord James, and some popular leaders, had not interposed, the most dangerous uproar was justly apprehended, from the ungoverned fury of the multitude^b. The usual prayers in the churches were to this purpose: That God would turn her heart, which was obstinate against him and his truth; or if his holy will be otherwise, that he would strengthen the hearts and *hands* of the elect, stoutly to oppose the rage of all tyrants^c. Nay, it was openly called in question, whether that princess, being an idolatress, was entitled to any authority, even in civil matters^d.

THE helpless Queen was every moment exposed to contumely, which she bore with benignity and patience. Soon after her arrival she dined in the castle of Edinburgh; and it was there contrived, that a boy, six years of age should be let down from the roof, and should present her with a bible, a psalter, and the keys

CHAP.
XXXIX.

1561.

^a Knox, p. 287.
wood, p. 179.

^b Ibid. p. 284, 285, 287. Spots-
^c Keith, p. 179.

^d Ibid. p. 202.

CHAP.
XXXIX.
1561.

of the castle. Lest she should be at a loss to understand this insult on her as a papist, all the decorations expressed the burning of Corah, Dathan, and Abiram, and other punishments inflicted by God against idolatry^e. The town council of Edinburgh had the assurance, from their own authority, to issue a Proclamation banishing from their district, "all the wicked rabble of antichrist the pope, such as priests, monks, friars, together with adulterers and fornicators^f." And because the privy-council suspended the magistrates for their insolence, the passionate historians^g of that age have inferred, that the Queen was engaged, by a sympathy of manners, to take adulterers and fornicators under her protection. It appears probable, that the magistrates were afterwards reinstated in their office, and that their proclamation was confirmed^h.

BUT all the insolence of the people was nothing in comparison of that which was exercised by the clergy and the preachers; and they took a pride in vilifying, even to her face, this amiable princess. The assembly of the church framed an address, in which, after telling her, that her mass was a bastard service of God, the fountain of all impiety, and the source of every evil which abounded in the realm; they discovered their expectations, that she would, ere this time, have preferred truth to her own pre-conceived opinion, and have renounced her religion, which, they assured her, was nothing but abomination and vanity. They said, that the present abuses of government were so enormous, that if a speedy remedy was not provided, God would not fail in his anger to strike the head and the tail, the disobedient prince and sinful people. They required, that severe punishment should be inflicted on adulterers and for-

^e Keith, p. 189. ^f Ibid. p. 192. ^g Knox, p. 292. Buchan. lib. xvii. c. 20. Haynes, vol. I. p. 372.
^h Keith, p. 202.

nicators; and they concluded with demanding for themselves, some addition both of power and property¹.

CHAP.
XXXIX.

1561.

THE ringleader in all these insults on majesty was John Knox, who possessed an uncontrouled authority in the church, and even in the civil affairs of the nation, and who triumphed in the contumelious usage of his sovereign. His usual appellation for the Queen was Jezabel; and tho' she endeavoured, by the most gracious condescension, to win his favour, all her insinuations could gain nothing on his obdurate heart. She promised him access to her whenever he demanded it; and she even desired him, if he found her blameable in any thing, to reprehend her freely in private, rather than vilify her in the pulpit before all the people; but he plainly told her, that he had a publick ministry entrusted to him, that if she would come to church, she should there hear the gospel of truth, and that it was not his business to apply to every individual, nor had he leisure for that occupation². The political principles of the man, which he communicated to his brethren, were as full of sedition as his theological were of rage and bigotry. Tho' he once condescended so far as to tell the Queen, that he would submit to her, in the same manner that Paul did to Nero³; he remained not long in this dutiful strain. He said to her, that "Samuel feared not to slay Agag, the fat and delicate King of Amalek, whom King Saul had saved: Neither spared Elias Jezabel's false prophets, and Baal's priests, tho' King Ahab was present. Phineas," added he, "was no magistrate; and yet feared he not to strike Cosbie and Zimri in the very act of filthy fornication. And so, madam, your grace may see, that others than chief magistrates may lawfully inflict punishment on such crimes as are con-

¹ Knox, p. 311, 312.

² Ibid, p. 310.

³ Ibid. p. 288.

CHAR: "demned by the law of God^m." Knox had formerly, during the reign of Mary of England, wrote a book against female succession to the crown: The title of it is, *The first blast of the trumpet against the monstrous regimen of women*. He was too proud either to recant the tenets of this book, or even to apologize for them; and his conduct shewed, that he thought no more civility than loyalty was due to any of the female sex.

THE whole life of Mary, from the demeanour of these men, was filled with bitterness and sorrow. This rustic apostle scruples not, in his history, to inform us, that he once treated her with such severity, that she lost all command of her temper, and dissolved into tears before him: Yet so far from being moved with youth, and beauty, and royal dignity reduced to that condition, he persevered in his insolent reproofs; and when he relates this incident, he even discovers a visible pride and satisfaction in his own conductⁿ. The pulpits had become nothing but scenes of railing against the vices of the court; among which were always noted as the principal, feasting, finery, dancing, balls, and whoredom, their necessary attendant^o. Some ornaments, which the ladies at that time wore upon their petticoats, excited mightily the indignation of the preachers, and they affirmed, that such vanity would provoke God's vengeance, not only against these foolish women, but against the whole realm^p.

MARY, whose age, condition, and education, invited her to liberty and cheerfulness, was curbed in every amusement, by the absurd severity of these reformers; and she found each moment reason to regret her leaving that country from whose manners she had in her early youth received the first impressions^q. Her

^m Knox, p. 326.
p. 322.

ⁿ Ibid. p. 332, 333.

^p Ibid. p. 330.

^o Ibid.

^q Ibid. p. 294.

two uncles, the duke of Aumale, and the grand prior, with the other French nobility, soon took their leave of her: The marquis of Elbeuf remained some time longer; but after his departure, she was left alone to the society of her own subjects; men at that time unacquainted with the pleasures of conversation, ignorant of arts and civility, and corrupted beyond their usual rusticity by a dismal fanaticism, which rendered them incapable of all humanity or improvement. Tho' she had made no attempt to restore the antient religion, her popery was a sufficient crime: Tho' her behaviour was hitherto irreproachable, and her manners sweet and engaging, her gaiety and ease were interpreted as signs of dissolute vanity. And to the harsh and preposterous usage which this princess met with, may, in part, be ascribed those errors of her subsequent conduct, which seemed to be so little of a piece with the general tenor of her character.

CHAP.

XXXIX.

1561.

THERE happened to the marquis of Elbeuf, before his departure, an adventure which, tho' frivolous, might enable him to give Mary's friends in France, a very melancholy idea of her situation. This nobleman, with the earl of Bothwel, and some other young courtiers, had been engaged, after a debauch to pay a visit to a woman called Alison Craig, who was known to be liberal of her favours; and because they were denied entrance, they broke the windows, thrust open the door, and committed some disorders, in searching for the damsel. It happened that the assembly of the church was sitting at that time, and they immediately took the matter under their cognizance. In conjunction with several of the nobility, they presented an address to the Queen, which was introduced with this awful prelude. "To the Queen's majesty, and to her secret and great council, her grace's faithful and obedient subjects, the professors of Christ Jesus's holy evangel,

CHAP. "with the spirit of righteous judgment." The te-
 XXXIX. nor of the petition was, that the fear of God, the
 1561. duty which they owed her grace, and the terrible
 threatnings denounced by God against every city or
 country where horrible crimes are openly committed,
 compelled them to demand the severe punishment of
 such as had done what in them lay to kindle the wrath
 of God against the whole realm: That the iniquity
 of which they complained, was so heinous, and so
 horrible, that they should esteem themselves accom-
 plices in it, if they had been engaged by worldly
 fear, or servile complaisance, to pass it over in silence,
 or bury it in oblivion: That as they owed her grace
 obedience in the administration of justice, so were
 they entitled to require of her, in return, the sharp
 and condign punishment of this enormity, which,
 they repeated, might draw down the vengeance of
 God on the whole kingdom: And that they insisted
 on it to be her duty to lay aside all private affections
 towards the actors in this heinous crime and enor-
 mous villainy, and without delay bring them to a
 trial, and inflict the severest penalties upon them.
 The Queen gave a gracious reception to this peremp-
 tory address; but because she probably thought,
 that breaking the windows of a brothel merited not
 such severe reprehension, she only replied, that
 her uncle was a stranger, and that he was attended
 with a young company: But she would put such
 order to him and to all others, that her subjects should
 henceforth have no reason to complain. Her pas-
 sing over this incident so slightly, was the source of
 great discontent, and was regarded as a proof of
 the most profligate manners^r. It is not to be omit-
 ted, that Alison Craig, the cause of all the uproar,
 was known to entertain a commerce with the earl
 of Arran, who, on account of his great zeal

^r Knox, p. 302, 303, 304. Keith, p. 509.

for the reformation, was, without scruple, indulged in that enormity *.

CHAP.
XXXIX.

1561.

SOME of the populace of Edinburgh broke into the Queen's chappel during her absence, and committed some outrages ; for which two of them were indicted, and it was intended to bring them to a trial. Knox wrote circular letters to the most considerable zealots of the party, and charged them to appear in town, and protect their brethren. The holy sacraments, he there said, are abused by prophane papists ; the mass has been said ; and in worshipping that idol, the priests have omitted no ceremony, not even the conjuring of their accursed water, that had ever been practised in the time of the greatest blindness. These violent measures for opposing justice differed little from rebellion ; and Knox was summoned before the council to answer for his offence. The courage of this man was equal to his insolence. He scrupled not to tell the Queen, that the pestilent papists, who had enflamed her against these holy men, were the sons of the devil ; and must therefore obey the directions of their father, who had been a liar and a manslayer from the beginning. The matter ended with the full acquittal of Knox †. Randolph, the English ambassador in Scotland at this time, had reason to write to Cecil, speaking of the Scots nation : “ I think marvelously of the wisdom of God, that gave this unruly, “ inconstant, and cumbersome people no more “ power nor substance : For they would otherwise “ run wild .”

WE have related these circumstances at greater length, than the necessity of our subject may seem to require : But even trivial incidents, which show the manners of the age, are often more instructive, as well as entertaining, than the great transactions of wars and

* Knox. Ibid.

† Ibid, p. 336, 342.

‡ Keith, p. 202.
negotiations,

CHAP. negotiations, which are nearly similar in all periods
XXXIX. and in all countries of the world.

1561.

THE reformed clergy in Scotland had, at that time, a very natural reason for their ill humour, viz. the poverty or rather beggary to which they were reduced: The nobility and gentry had at first laid their hands on all the property of the regular clergy, without making any provision for the friars and nuns, whom they turned out of all their possessions. The secular clergy of the catholic communion, tho' they lost all ecclesiastical jurisdiction, still held some of the temporalities of their benefices; and either became laymen themselves, and converted them into perpetual property, or made conveyance of them at low prices to the nobility, who thus enriched themselves by the plunder of the church. The new teachers had hitherto subsisted chiefly by the voluntary oblations of the faithful; and in a poor country, divided in religious sentiments, this establishment was regarded as very scanty and very precarious. Repeated applications were made for a legal settlement to the preachers; and tho' almost every thing in the kingdom was governed by their zeal and caprice, it was with difficulty that their request was at last complied with. The fanatical spirit which they indulged, and their industry in decrying the principles and practices of the romish communion, which placed such a merit in enriching the clergy, proved now a very sensible obstacle to their acquisitions. The boundaries of the royal power were, during that age, more uncertain in Scotland than even in England; and the privy council alone thought themselves intitled, without a Parliament, to regulate this important matter. They passed a vote*, by which they divided all the ecclesiastical benefices into twenty one parts: They assigned fourteen to the antient possessors: Of the remaining seven, they

* Xnox, p. 296, Keith, p. 210.

granted,

granted three to the crown ; and if that was found CHAP.
to answer the public expences, they bestowed the XXXIX.
overplus on the reformed ministers. The Queen was
empowered to levy all the seven ; and it was or-
dained, that she should afterwards pay to the clergy
what should be judged to suffice for their mainte-
nance. The necessities of the crown, the rapacity
of the courtiers, and the small affection which Mary
bore to the protestant ecclesiastics, rendered their re-
venues very contemptible as well as uncertain ; and
the preachers, finding that they could not rival the
gentry, nor even the middling rank of men in opu-
lence and plenty, were necessitated to betake them-
selves to other expedients for supporting their autho-
rity. They affected a furious zeal for religion, mo-
rose manners, a vulgar and familiar, and yet myste-
rious, cant ; and tho' the liberality of subsequent
princes put them afterwards on a better footing
with regard to revenue and thereby corrected in some
degree these vicious habits ; it must be confessed
that, while many other advantages attend presbyte-
rian government, these inconveniencies are not ea-
sily separated from the genius of that ecclesiasti-
cal polity.

THE Queen of Scots, destitute of all force, pos-
sessing a narrow revenue, surrounded with a factious
turbulent nobility, a bigoted people, and insolent ec-
clesiastics, soon found, that her only expedient for
maintaining tranquillity was to preserve a good cor-
respondence with ^r Elizabeth, who by former engage-
ments and services, had acquired such authority over
all these ranks of men. Soon after her arrival in Scot-
land, secretary Lidington was sent to London, in or-
der to pay her compliments to the Queen, and express
her desire of friendship and a good correspondence ;
and he received a commission from her, as well as
from the Scots nobility, to demand, as a means of co-

^r Jebb, vol. II. p. 456.

CHAP. negotiations, which are nearly similar in all periods
XXXIX. and in all countries of the world.

1561.

THE reformed clergy in Scotland had, at that time, a very natural reason for their ill humour, viz. the poverty or rather beggary to which they were reduced: The nobility and gentry had at first laid their hands on all the property of the regular clergy, without making any provision for the friars and nuns, whom they turned out of all their possessions. The secular clergy of the catholic communion, tho' they lost all ecclesiastical jurisdiction, still held some of the temporalities of their benefices; and either became laymen themselves, and converted them into perpetual property, or made conveyance of them at low prices to the nobility, who thus enriched themselves by the plunder of the church. The new teachers had hitherto subsisted chiefly by the voluntary oblations of the faithful; and in a poor country, divided in religious sentiments, this establishment was regarded as very scanty and very precarious. Repeated applications were made for a legal settlement to the preachers; and tho' almost every thing in the kingdom was governed by their zeal and caprice, it was with difficulty that their request was at last complied with. The fanatical spirit which they indulged, and their industry in decrying the principles and practices of the romish communion, which placed such a merit in enriching the clergy, proved now a very sensible obstacle to their acquisitions. The boundaries of the royal power were, during that age, more uncertain in Scotland than even in England; and the privy council alone thought themselves intitled, without a Parliament, to regulate this important matter. They passed a vote*, by which they divided all the ecclesiastical benefices into twenty one parts: They assigned fourteen to the antient possessors: Of the remaining seven, they

* Xnox, p. 296, Keith, p. 210.

granted,

granted three to the crown ; and if that was found to answer the public expences, they bestowed the overplus on the reformed ministers. The Queen was empowered to levy all the seven ; and it was ordained, that she should afterwards pay to the clergy what should be judged to suffice for their maintenance. The necessities of the crown, the rapacity of the courtiers, and the small affection which Mary bore to the protestant ecclesiastics, rendered their revenues very contemptible as well as uncertain ; and the preachers, finding that they could not rival the gentry, nor even the middling rank of men in opulence and plenty, were necessitated to betake themselves to other expedients for supporting their authority. They affected a furious zeal for religion, morose manners, a vulgar and familiar, and yet mysterious, cant ; and tho' the liberality of subsequent princes put them afterwards on a better footing with regard to revenue and thereby corrected in some degree these vicious habits ; it must be confessed that, while many other advantages attend presbyterian government, these inconveniencies are not easily separated from the genius of that ecclesiastical polity.

THE Queen of Scots, destitute of all force, possessing a narrow revenue, surrounded with a factious turbulent nobility, a bigoted people, and insolent ecclesiastics, soon found, that her only expedient for maintaining tranquillity was to preserve a good correspondence with ^r Elizabeth, who by former engagements and services, had acquired such authority over all these ranks of men. Soon after her arrival in Scotland, secretary Lidington was sent to London, in order to pay her compliments to the Queen, and express her desire of friendship and a good correspondence ; and he received a commission from her, as well as from the Scots nobility, to demand, as a means of co-

CHAP.

XXXIX.

1561.

CHAP. XXXIX. mentioning this friendship, that Mary should, by act of Parliament or by Proclamation (for the difference between these securities was not then deemed very considerable) be declared successor to the crown. No request could be more unreasonable, nor made at a more improper juncture. The Queen replied, that Mary had once discovered her intention not to wait for the succession, but had openly, without ceremony or reserve, assumed the title of Queen of England, and had pretended superior right to her throne and kingdom: That tho' her ambassadors, and those of her husband, the French King, had signed a treaty, in which they renounced that claim, and promised satisfaction for so great an indignity, she was so intoxicated with this imaginary right, that she had rejected the most earnest solicitations, and even, as some endeavoured to persuade her, incurred some danger in crossing the seas rather than ratify that equitable treaty: That her partizans every where had still the assurance to insist on her title, and had presumed to talk of her own birth as spurious and illegitimate: That while affairs were on this footing; while a claim thus openly made, so far from being openly renounced, was only suspended till a more convenient opportunity; it would in her be the most egregious imprudence to fortify the hands of a pretender to her crown, by declaring her the successor: That no expedient could be worse imagined for cementing friendship than such a declaration, and Kings were often found to bear no good will to their successors, even tho' their own children; much more when the connexion was so much less intimate, and when such cause of disgust and jealousy had been already given, and indeed was still continued, on the part of Mary: That tho' she was willing, from the amity which she bore her kinswoman, to ascribe her former pretensions to the advice of others, by whose direction

1561.

direction she was then governed; her refusal to relinquish them could proceed only from her own prepossessions, and were a proof that she still retained some dangerous project against her: That it was the nature of all men to be disgusted with the present, to entertain flattering views of futurity, to think their services ill rewarded, to expect a better recompence from the successor; and she should esteem herself scarce half a sovereign over the English, if they saw her declare her heir, and arm her rival with authority against her own repose and safety: That she knew the inconstant nature of the people; she was acquainted with the present divisions in religion; she was not ignorant, that the same party, which expected greatest favour during the reign of Mary, did also imagine, that the title of that princess was superior to her own: That for her part, whatever claims were advanced, she was determined to live and die Queen of England; and after her death, it was the business of others to examine who had the best pretensions, either by the laws or by right of blood, to the succession: That she hoped the Queen of Scots's claim would then be found preferable; and considering the injury, which she herself had received, it was sufficient indulgence, if she promised, in the mean time, to do nothing which might, in any respect, weaken or invalidate that claim: And that Mary, if her title was really superior, a point, which, for her own part, she had never inquired into, possessed all advantages above her rivals; who, destitute both of present power, and of all support by friends, would only expose themselves to inevitable ruin, by advancing any weak, or even doubtful pretensions^z.

THESE views of the Queen were so prudent and judicious, that there was no likelihood of her ever de-

^z Buchanan, lib. xvii. c. 14—17. Camden, p. 385. Spottwood, p. 180. 181.

CHAP. XXXIX. parting from them : But that she might put the matter to a fuller proof, she offered to explain the words of the treaty of Edinburgh, so as to leave no suspicion of their excluding Mary's right of succession^a ; and in this form, she again required her to ratify that treaty. Matters at last came to this issue, that Mary agreed to the proposal, and offered to renounce all present pretensions to the crown of England, provided Elizabeth would agree to declare her the successor^b. But such was the jealous character of this latter princess, that she never would consent to strengthen the interest and authority of any claimant, by fixing the succession ; much less would she make this concession in favour of a rival Queen, who possessed such plausible pretensions for the present, and who, tho' she might verbally resign them, could easily resume her title on the first opportunity. Mary's proposal, however, bore so specious an appearance of equity and justice, that Elizabeth, sensible that reason would be deemed to lie entirely on that side, made no more mention of the matter ; and tho' no farther concessions were made by either Princess, they put on all the appearances of a cordial reconciliation and friendship with each other. The Queen observed, that, even without her interposition, Mary was sufficiently depressed by the mutinous disposition of her own subjects ; and instead of giving Scotland, for the present, any inquietude or disturbance, she employed herself, much more usefully and laudably, in regulating the affairs of her own kingdom, and promoting the happiness of her people. She made some progress in paying those great debts which lay upon the crown ; she regulated the coin, which had been extremely debased by her predecessors ; she furnished her arsenals with great quantities of arms from Germany and other places ;

Wife government
of Elizabeth.

^a Spotswood, p. 181.

^b Haynes, vol. I. p. 377.

1561.

engaged her nobility and gentry to imitate her example in this particular; introduced into the kingdom the art of making gun-powder and brass cannon; fortified her frontiers on the side of Scotland; made frequent reviews of the militia; encouraged agriculture by allowing a free exportation of corn; promoted trade and navigation; and so much increased the shipping of her kingdom, both by building vessels of Force herself, and suggesting like undertakings to the merchants, that she was justly stiled the restorer of naval glory, and the Queen of the northern seas^c. The natural frugality of her temper, so far from disqualifying her for these great enterprizes, only enabled her to execute them with greater certainty and success; and all the world saw in her conduct the happy effects of a vigorous perseverance in judicious and well conducted projects.

It is easy to imagine, that so great a princess, who enjoyed such felicity and renown; would receive proposals of marriage from every one, who had any likelihood of succeeding; and tho' she had made some public declarations in favour of a single life, few believed, that she would persevere for ever in that resolution. The archduke Charles, second son to the emperor^d, as well as Casimir, son to the elector palatine, made applications to her; and as this latter prince made profession of the reformed religion, he thought himself, on this account, better entitled to succeed in his addresses. Eric, King of Sweden, and Adolph, duke of Holstein, were encouraged by the same views to become suitors; and the earl of Arran, heir to the crown of Scotland, was, by the states of that kingdom, recommended to her as a suitable marriage. Even some of her own subjects, tho' they did not openly declare their pretensions, en-

^c Camden, p. 388. Strype, vol. I. p. 230, 336, 337.

^d Haynes, vol. I. p. 233.

CHAP. XXXIX. ^{1561.} pertained hopes of success. The earl of Arundel, a person declining in years, but descended from a very antient and noble family, as well as possessed of great riches, flattered himself with this prospect; as did also Sir William Pickering, a man much esteemed for his personal merit. But the person most likely to succeed, was a younger son of the late duke of Northumberland, the lord Robert Dudley, who, by means of his exterior qualities, joined to address and flattery, had become, in a manner, her declared favourite, and had great influence in all her councils. The less worthy he appeared of this distinction, the more was his great favour ascribed to some violent affection, which could thus seduce the judgment of this penetrating princess; and men long expected, that he would obtain the preference above so many princes and monarchs. But the Queen gave all these suitors a gentle refusal, which still encouraged their pursuit; and she thought, that she should the better attach them to her interests, if they were still allowed to entertain hopes of succeeding in their pretensions. It is also probable, that this policy was not entirely free from a mixture of female coquetry; and that, tho' she was determined in her own mind never to share her power with any man, she was not displeased with the courtship, solicitation, and professions of love, which the desire of acquiring so valuable a prize, procured her from all quarters.

WHAT is most singular in the conduct and character of Elizabeth, is, that, tho' she determined never to have any heir of her own body, she was not only extremely averse to fix any successor to the crown; but seems also to have resolved, as far as lay in her power, that no one, who had pretensions to the succession, should ever have any heirs or successors. After the exclusion given by the will of Henry VIII. to the posterity of Margaret, Queen of Scotland, the right to the crown devolved

devolved on the house of Suffolk; and the lady Catherine Gray, younger sister to the lady Jane, was now the heir of that family. This lady had been married to the lord Herbert, son to the earl of Pembroke; but having been divorced from that nobleman, she had made a private marriage with the earl of Hertford, son to the protector; and her husband, soon after consummation, travelled into France. In a little time she appeared to be pregnant, which so enraged Elizabeth, that she threw her into the Tower, and summoned him to appear, in order to answer for his misdemeanor. He made no scruple to acknowledge the marriage, which, tho' concluded without the Queen's consent, was intirely suitable to both parties; and for this offence he was also committed to the Tower. Elizabeth's severity stopped not here: She issued a commission to enquire into the matter; and as Hertford could not, within the time limited, prove the nuptials by witnesses, their commerce was declared unlawful, and their posterity illegitimate. They were still continued in custody; but by bribing their keepers, they found means to have farther intercourse; and another child appeared to be the fruit of their commerce. This was a fresh source of vexation to the Queen; who made a fine of fifteen thousand pounds be set on Hertford by the Star-Chamber, and ordered his confinement to be thenceforth still more rigid and severe. He lay in this condition for nine years, till the death of his wife, by freeing Elizabeth from all fears, procured him his liberty*. This extreme severity must be accounted for, either by the unrelenting jealousy of the Queen, who was afraid that any pretender to the succession would acquire credit by having issue; or by her malignity, which, with all her great qualities, made one ingredient in her character,

CHAP.
XXXIX.

1561.

* Haynes, vol. I. p. 369, 378, 396. Camden, p. 389. Heylin, p. 154.

and

CHAP. and which led her to envy in others those natural
 XXXIX. pleasures of love and posterity, of which her own
 ambition and desire of dominion made her re-
 1561. nounce all prospect for herself.

THERE happened, about this time, some other events in the royal family, where the Queen's conduct was more laudable. Arthur Pole, and his brother, nephews to the late cardinal, and descended from the duke of Clarence, brother to Edward the fourth, together with Anthony Fortescue, who had married a sister of these gentlemen, and some other persons, were brought to their trial for conspiring to withdraw into France, with a view of receiving succours from the duke of Guise, of returning thence into Wales, and of proclaiming Mary Queen of England, and Arthur Pole duke of Clarence. They confessed the indictment, but asserted, that they never intended to execute these projects during the Queen's life-time: They had only deemed such precautions requisite in case of her death, which, some pretenders to judicial astrology had assured them, they might with certainty look for before the year expired. They were condemned by the jury; but received their pardon from the Queen's clemency ^f.

^f Strype, vol. i. p. 333. Heylin, p. 154.

CHAP. XL.

State of Europe.—Civil wars of France.—Havre de Grace put in possession of the English.—A Parliament.—Havre lost.—Scotch affairs.—The Queen of Scots marries the earl of Darnley.—Confederacy against the Protestants.—Murder of Rizzio.—A Parliament.—Murder of Darnley.—Queen of Scots marries Bothwell.—Insurrections in Scotland.—Imprisonment of Mary.—Mary flies into England.—Conferences at York and Hampton-Court.

AFTER the commencement of the religious wars in France, which rendered that flourish-^{1562.} State of ing kingdom, during the course of near forty years, Europe. a scene of horror and devastation, the great rival powers in Europe were Spain and England; and it was not long before, an animosity, first political, then personal, broke out between the sovereigns of these countries.

PHILIP the second of Spain, tho' he reached not any enlarged views of policy, was endowed with great industry and sagacity, a remarkable caution in his enterprizes, an unusual foresight in all his measures; and as he was ever cool and seemingly unmoved by passion, and possessed neither talents nor inclination for war, both his subjects and his neighbours had reason to expect great justice, happiness and tranquillity, from his administration. But prejudices had on him a more pernicious effect than ever passions had on any other monarch; and the spirit of bigotry and tyranny, by which he was actuated, with the fraudulent maxims which governed his councils, excited the most violent agitation

CHAP. among his own people, engaged him in acts of the
 XL. most enormous cruelty, and threw all Europe into
 1562. combustion.

AFTER Philip had concluded peace at Cambray, and had remained some time in the Netherlands, in order to settle the affairs of that country, he embarked for Spain; and as the gravity of that nation, with their respectful obedience to their prince, had appeared much more agreeable to his humour, than the homely familiar manners, and the pertinacious liberty of the Flemings, it was expected, that he would for the future reside altogether at Madrid, and would govern all his extensive dominions by Spanish ministers and Spanish councils. Having met with a violent tempest on his voyage, he no sooner arrived in harbour, than he fell on his knees, and after giving thanks for this deliverance, he vowed, that his life, which was thus providentially saved, should be thenceforth entirely devoted to the extirpation of heresy. His subsequent conduct corresponded to these professions. Finding that the new doctrines had penetrated into Spain, he let loose the rage of persecution against all who professed them, or were suspected of adhering to them; and by his violence he gave new edge, even to the unrelenting cruelty of priests and inquisitors. He committed to custody Constantine Ponce, who had been confessor to his father, the emperor Charles; who had attended him during his retreat; and in whose arms that great monarch had terminated his life: And after this ecclesiastic died in prison, he still ordered him to be tried and condemned for heresy, and his statue to be committed to the flames. He even deliberated, whether he should not exercise like severity against the memory of his father, who was suspected, during his latter years, to have indulged a propensity towards the Lutheran principles: In his

z Thuanus, lib. xxiii. cap. 14.

furious zeal for orthodoxy, he spared neither age, CHAP. XL.
 sex, nor condition: He was present, with an inflexi-
 ble countenance, at the most barbarous executions: 1562.
 He issued rigorous orders for the prosecution of here-
 tics, in Spain, Italy, the Indies, and the Low Coun-
 tries: And having founded his determined tyranny
 on maxims of civil policy, as well as on principles
 of religion, all his subjects saw, that there was no
 method, except the most entire compliance, or most
 obstinate resistance, to escape or elude the severity of
 his vengeance.

DURING that extreme animosity which prevailed between the adherents of the opposite religions, the civil magistrate, who found it difficult, if not impossible, for the same laws to govern such enraged adversaries, was naturally led by specious rules of prudence, in embracing one party, to declare war against the other, and to exterminate, by fire and sword, those bigots, who, from abhorrence of his religion, had proceeded to an opposition of his power, and to a hatred of his person. If any prince possessed such enlarged views as to foresee, that a mutual toleration would in time abate the fury of religious prejudices, he yet met with difficulties in reducing this principle to practice; and might deem the malady too violent to await a remedy, which, tho' certain, must necessarily be slow in its operations. But Philip, tho' a profound hypocrite, and extremely governed by self-interest, seems also to have been himself actuated by an imperious bigotry; and as he employed great reflection in all his conduct, he could easily palliate the gratification of his natural temper under the colour of wisdom, and find in this system no less advantage to his foreign than his domestic politics. By placing himself at the head of the catholic party, he converted the zealots of 'the antient faith into partizans of the Spanish greatness; and by employing the pow-

K 2

erful

CHAP. XL. ^{1562.} erful allurement of religion, he seduced every where the subjects from that allegiance which they owed their native sovereign.

THE course of events, guiding and concurring with choice, had placed Elizabeth in a situation diametrically opposite; and had raised her to be the glory, the bulwark, and the support of the numerous, tho' still persecuted protestants, throughout all Europe. More moderate in her temper than Philip, she found, with pleasure, that the principles of her sect required not such extreme severity in her domestic government, as was exercised by that monarch; and having no object but self-preservation, she united her interests in all foreign negotiations with those who were every where struggling under oppression, and guarding themselves against ruin and extermination. The more virtuous sovereign was thus happily thrown into the more favourable cause; and fortune, in this instance, concurred with policy and nature.

DURING the life-time of Henry the second and his successor, the force of these principles was somewhat restrained, tho' not altogether overcome, by the motives of a superior interest; and the dread of uniting England with the French monarchy, engaged Philip to maintain a good correspondence with Elizabeth. Yet even during this period he rejected the garter which she sent him; he refused to ratify the antient league between the house of Burgundy and England^b; he furnished ships to transport the French forces into Scotland; he endeavoured to intercept the earl of Arran, who was hastening to join the malecontents in that country; and the Queen's wisest ministers still regarded his friendship as hollow and precarious^c. But no sooner did the death of Francis the second put an end to Phi-

^b Digge's Compleat ambassador, p. 369. Haynes, p. 585. Strype, vol. IV. No 246.

^c Haynes, vol. I. p. 280, 281, 283, 284. lip's

lip's apprehensions with regard to Mary's succession, than his animosity against Elizabeth began more openly to appear, and the interests of Spain and England were found opposite in every negotiation and transaction.

CHAP.

XL.

1562.

THE two great monarchies of the continent. France and Spain, being possessed of nearly equal force, were naturally antagonists; and England, from its power and situation, was intitled to support its own dignity, as well as tranquillity, by holding the ballance between them. Whatever incident, therefore, tended too much to depress any one of these rival powers, as it left the other without controul, might be deemed contrary to the interests of England: Yet so much were these great maxims of policy over-ruled, during that age, by the disputes of theology, that Philip found an advantage in supporting the established government and religion of France; and Elizabeth in protecting faction and innovation.

THE Queen-regent of France, when re-instated in authority by the death of her son, Francis, had formed a plan of administration more subtle than judicious; and ballancing the Catholics with the hugonots, the duke of Guise with the prince of Condé, she endeavoured to render herself necessary to both, and to establish her own dominion on their constrained obedience *. But the equal counterpoise of power, which, among foreign nations, is the source of tranquillity, proves always the ground of quarrel between domestic factions; and if the animosity of religion concur with the frequent occasions which present themselves of mutual injury, it is impossible, during any time, to preserve a firm concord in so delicate a situation. The constable, Montmorency, moved by zeal for the ancient faith, joined himself to the duke of Guise: The King of Navarre,

* Davila, lib. ii.

CHAP.

XL.

1562.

from his inconstant temper, and his jealousy of the superior genius of his brother, embraced the same party: And Catherine, finding herself depressed by this combination, had recourse to Condé and the hugonots, who gladly embraced the opportunity of fortifying themselves by her countenance and protection¹. An edict had been published, granting a toleration to the protestants; but the interested violence of the duke of Guise, covered with the pretence of religious zeal, broke thro' this agreement; and the two parties, after the fallacious tranquillity of a moment, renewed their mutual insults and injuries. Condé, Coligni, Andelot, assembled their friends, and flew to arms: Guise and Montmorency got possession of the King's person, and constrained the Queen-regent to embrace their party: Fourteen armies were levied and put in motion in different places of France^m: Each province, each city, each family, was agitated with intestine rage and animosity. The father was divided against the son; the brother against the brother; and women themselves, sacrificing their humanity as well as their timidity to the religious fury, distinguished themselves by acts of ferocity and valourⁿ. Wherever the hugonots prevailed, the images were broke, the altars pillaged, the churches demolished, the monasteries consumed with fire: Where success attended the catholics, they burned the bibles, re-baptized the infants, constrained married persons to pass anew thro' the ceremony: And plunder, desolation, and bloodshed attended equally the triumph of both parties. The Parliament of Paris itself, the seat of law and justice, instead of employing its authority to compose these fatal quarrels, published an edict, by which it put the sword into the hands of the enraged multitude, and empowered the catholics every where to massacre the hugo-

¹ Ibid. lib. iii.^m Father Paul, lib. vii.ⁿ Ibid.

nots :

nots °: And it was during this period, when men be-
gan to be somewhat enlightened, and in this nation,
renowned for polished manners, that the theological
rage, which had long been boiling in mens veins,
seems to have attained its last stage of virulence and
ferocity.

CHAP.

XL.

1562.

PHILIP, who was jealous of the progress which the hugonots made in France, and who dreaded that the contagion would spread into the Low-Country Provinces, had formed a secret alliance with the princes of Guise, and had entered into a mutual concert for the protection of the antient faith, and the suppression of heresy. He now sent six thousand men, with some supply of money, to reinforce the catholic party; and the prince of Condé, finding himself unequal to so great a combination, countenanced by the regal authority, was obliged to dispatch the Vidame of Chartres and Briguemaut to London, in order to crave the assistance and protection of Elizabeth. Most of the province of Normandy was possessed by the hugonots; and Condé offered to put Havre de Grace into the hands of the English; on condition, that, together with three thousand men for the garrison of that place, the Queen should likewise send over three thousand to defend Dieppe and Rouen, and should furnish the prince with a supply of a hundred thousand crowns °.

Havre de Grace put in possession of the English.

ELIZABETH, besides the general and essential interest of supporting the protestants, and opposing the rapid progress of her enemy, the duke of Guise, had other motives which engaged her to accept this proposal. When she concluded the peace at Chateau Cambresis, she had good reason to foresee, that France never would voluntarily fulfil the article with regard to the restitution of Calais; and many subsequent incidents

20th September.

° Father Paul, lib. vii. Haynes, p. 391.
ii. p. 48.

p Forbes, vol.

CHAP.

XL.

1562.

had tended to confirm this suspicion. Considerable sums of money had been laid out on the fortifications; long leases had been granted of the lands; and many inhabitants had been encouraged to build and settle there, by assurances that Calais should never be restored to the English¹. The Queen, therefore, very wisely concluded, that could she get possession of Havre, a place which commanded the mouth of the Seine, and was of much greater importance than Calais, she should easily constrain the French to execute the treaty, and should have the glory of restoring to the crown that antient possession, which was so much the favourite of the nation.

No measure could be more generally odious in France, than the conclusion of this treaty with Elizabeth. Men were naturally led to compare the conduct of Guise, who had finally chased the English from France, and had debarred these dangerous and destructive enemies from all access into it, with the treasonable politics of Condé, who had again granted them an entry into the heart of the kingdom. The prince had the more reason to repent of this measure, as he reaped not from it all the advantage which he expected. Three thousand English immediately took possession of Havre and Dieppe, under the command of Sir Edward Poinings; but the latter place was found so little capable of being defended, that it was immediately abandoned². The siege of Rouen was already formed by the catholics, under the command of the King of Navarre and the constable Montmorency; and it was with difficulty that Poinings could throw a small reinforcement into the place. Tho' these English troops behaved with great gallantry³, and the King of Navarre was mortally wounded during the siege; the catholics

¹ Forbes, p. 54, 257.² Ibid, vol. II. p. 199.³ Ibid p. 161.

still continued the attack of the place, and carrying it at last by assault, put the whole garrison to the sword. The earl of Warwic, eldest son to the late duke of Northumberland, arrived soon after at Havre, with another body of three thousand English, and took on him the command of the place. CHAP.
XL.
1562.

It was expected, that the French catholics, flushed with their success at Rouen, would immediately have formed the siege of Havre, which was not as yet in any condition of defence; but the intestine disorders of the kingdoms soon diverted their attention to another enterprize. Andelot, seconded by the negotiations of Elizabeth, had levied a considerable body of protestants in Germany; and having arrived at Orleans, the seat of the hugonot's power, he enabled the prince of Condé, and the admiral to take the field, and oppose the progress of their enemies. After threatening Paris during some time, they took their march towards Normandy, with a view of engaging the English to act in conjunction with them, and of fortifying themselves with the farther assistance which they expected from the zeal and vigour of Elizabeth^t. The catholics, commanded by the constable, and under him by the duke of Guise, followed on their rear; and overtaking them at Dreux, obliged them to give battle. The field was fought with great obstinacy on both sides: and the action was distinguished by this signal event, that Condé and Montmorency, the commanders of the opposite armies, remained both of them prisoners in the hands of their enemies. The appearances of victory remained with Guise; but the admiral, whose fate it ever was to be defeated, and still to rise more terrible after his misfortunes, collected the remains of the army, and inspiring his own unconquerable courage and constancy in-

^t Forbes, p. 230. Davila, lib. iii.

CHAP.
XL.

1563.

1563.
12 Janua-
ry.
A Parlia-
ment.

to every breast, kept them in a body, and subdued some of the most considerable places in Normandy. Elizabeth, the better to support his cause, sent him a new supply of an hundred thousand crowns; and offered, if he could find merchants to lend him the money, to give her bond for another hundred thousand^u.

THE expences incurred by assisting the French hugenots had emptied the Queen's exchequer, notwithstanding her extreme frugality; and in order to obtain a supply, she found herself under a necessity of summoning a Parliament: An expedient to which she never voluntarily had recourse. A little before the meeting of this assembly, she had fallen into a dangerous illness, the small pox; and as her life, during some time, was despaired of, the people became the more sensible of the perilous condition in which they stood, on account of the uncertainty which, in case of her decease, attended the succession of the crown. The partizans of the Queen of Scots, and those of the house of Suffolk, already divided the nation into factions; and every one foresaw, that, tho' it might be possible at present to determine the controversy by law, yet, if the throne was vacant, nothing but the sword would be able to fix a successor. The commons, therefore, on the very opening of the session, voted an address to the Queen; in which, after enumerating the dangers attending a broken and doubtful succession, and mentioning the evils which their fathers had experienced from the contending titles of York and Lancaster, they entreated the Queen to put an end to their apprehensions, by choosing some husband, whom, they promised, whoever he was, gratefully to receive, and faithfully to serve, honour, and obey: Or if she had entertained any reluctance to the married state, they desired, that the lawful successor might be named, or

^u Forbes, vol. II. p. 322, 347.

at least appointed by act of parliament. They re-CHAP.
marked, that during all the reigns which had passed XL.
since the conquest, the nation had never before been
so unhappy, as not to know the person who, in case
of the sovereigns death, was legally entitled to the
succession. And they observed, that the certain and
fixed order which took place in the inheritance of
the French monarchy, was one chief source of
the usual tranquility, as well as of the happiness of
that kingdom *.

1563.

THIS subject, tho' extremely interesting to the nation, was very little agreeable to the Queen; and she was sensible, that great difficulties would attend every decision. A declaration in favour of the Queen of Scots, would form a settlement perfectly legal; because that princess was commonly allowed to possess the right of blood, and the exclusion given by Henry's will, deriving its weight chiefly from an act of parliament, would lose all authority whenever the Queen and Parliament had made a new settlement, and restored the Scottish line to their place in the succession. But she dreaded the giving encouragement to the catholics her secret enemies, by this declaration. She was sensible, that every heir was, in some degree, a rival; much more one who possessed a claim for the present possession of the crown, and who had already advanced, in a very open manner, these dangerous pretensions. The great power of Mary, both from the favour of the catholic princes, and her connections with the house of Guise, not to mention the force and situation of Scotland, was well known to her; and she saw no security that that princess, if fortified by a sure prospect of succession, would not again revive claims which she could never yet be prevailed on formally to relin-

* Sir Simon Dewes's Journ. p. 81.

CHAP. XL. 1563. quish. On the other hand, the title of the house of Suffolk was supported only by the more zealous protestants; and it was very doubtful, whether even a parliamentary declaration in its favour would bestow on it such validity as to give satisfaction to the people. The republican part of the constitution had not as yet acquired such an ascendant as to controul, in any degree, the ideas of hereditary right; and as the legality of Henry's will was still disputed, tho' founded on the utmost authority which a Parliament could bestow; who could be assured, that a more recent act would be acknowledged to have any greater force or validity? In the frequent revolutions which had of late taken place, the right of blood had still prevailed over religious prejudices; and the nation had ever shewed itself disposed rather to change its faith than the order of succession. Even many Protestants declared themselves in favour of Mary's claim of inheritance; and nothing would endanger more general disgust, than to see the Queen openly, and without reserve, take party against it. That princess also, finding herself injured in so sensible a point, would thenceforth act as a declared enemy; and uniting together her foreign and domestic friends, the partizans of her present title and of her eventual succession, would soon bring matters to extremity against the public establishment. The Queen, weighing all these inconveniencies, which were great and urgent, was determined to keep both parties in awe, by maintaining still an ambiguous conduct; and she chose rather that the people should run the hazard of contingent events, than that herself should visibly endanger her throne, by employing expedients, which, at best, did not give entire security to the nation. She made, therefore, an evasive answer to the applications of the commons; and when the house, at the end of the sessi-

ons, desired, by the mouth of their speaker, farther satisfaction on that head, she could not be prevailed on to make her reply more explicate. She only told them, contrary to her declarations in the beginning of her reign, that she had fixed no absolute resolution against marriage; and she added, that the difficulties with which the question of the succession was attended, were so great, that she would be contented, for their sake, to remain some time longer in this vale of misery; and never should depart this life with satisfaction, till she had laid some solid foundation for their future security *.

THE most remarkable law passed this session was that which bore the title of *Assurance of the Queen's royal power over all states and subjects within her dominions* *. By this act, the asserting twice by writing, word, or deed, the pope's authority, was subjected to the penalties of treason. All persons in holy orders were bound to take the oath of supremacy; as also, all who were advanced to any degrees, either in the universities or in common law; all schoolmasters, officers in court, or members of Parliament: And the penalty of their second refusal was treason. The first offence in both cases, was punished by banishment and forfeiture. This rigorous statute, which involved a real, tho' not general, persecution, and of the worst kind too, as it made a scrutiny into mens secret sentiments, was not extended to any of the degree of a baron; because it was not supposed, that the Queen could entertain any doubt with regard to the fidelity of persons possessed of such high dignity. The lord Montacute made vigorous opposition to this bill; and asserted, in favour of the catholics, that they disputed not, they preached not, they disobeyed not the Queen, they caused no trouble

* Sir Simon D'Ewes's Journal, p. 75.

* 5 Eliz. c. 1.

CHAP. no tumults among the people ^b. It is, however,
 XL. probable, that some suspicions of their secret con-
 spiracies had made the Queen and Parliament increase
 1563. their rigour against them; tho' it is also more than
 probable, that they were mistaken in the nature of
 the remedy.

THERE was likewise another point in which the Parliament, this session, shewed more the goodness of their intention than the soundness of their judgment. They passed a law against fond and fantastical prophecies, which had been observed to seduce the people into rebellion and disorder ^c: But at the same time they enacted a statute which was most likely to increase these and such like superstitions: It was levelled against conjurations, enchantments, and witchcrafts ^d. Witchcraft and heresy are two crimes which commonly increase by punishment, and never are so effectually suppressed as by being totally neglected. After the Parliament had granted the Queen a supply of one subsidy and two fifteenths, it was finished by a prorogation. The convocation likewise voted the Queen a subsidy of six shillings in the pound, payable in three years.

WHILE the English parties exerted these calm efforts against each other, in parliamentary votes and debates, the French factions, enflamed to the highest degree of animosity, continued that cruel war which their intemperate zeal, actuated by the ambition of their leaders, had kindled in the kingdom. The admiral was successful in reducing the towns of Normandy which held for the King; but he frequently complained, that the numerous garrison of Havre remained totally unactive, and was not employed in any military operations against the common enemy. The Queen, in taking possession of that place, had published a ma-

^b Strype vol. I. p. 260.

^c 5 Eliz. c. 15.

^d Ibid. c. 16.

1563.

nifesto*, in which she pretended, that her concern for the French King's interest had engaged her in that measure, and that her sole intention was to oppose her enemies of the house of Guise, who held their prince in captivity, and employed his power to the destruction of his best and most faithful subjects. It was chiefly her desire to preserve appearances, joined to the great frugality of her temper, which made her, at this critical juncture, keep her soldiers in garrison, and restrain them from committing farther hostilities upon the enemy†. The duke of Guise, meanwhile, was aiming a mortal blow at the power of the hugonots; and had commenced the siege of Orleans, which was commanded by Andelot, and where the constable was detained prisoner. He had the prospect of speedy success in this undertaking; when he was assassinated by Poltrot, a young gentleman, whose zeal, instigated (as it is pretended, tho' without any certain foundation) by the admiral and Beza, a famous preacher, led him to attempt that criminal enterprise. The death of this gallant prince was a very sensible loss to the catholic party; and tho' the cardinal of Lorraine, his brother, still supported the interests of the family, the danger of their progress appeared much less imminent, both to Queen Elizabeth and to the French protestants. The union, therefore, between these allies, which had been cemented by their common fears, began thenceforth to be less intimate; and the leaders of the hugonots were persuaded to hearken to terms of accommodation. Condé and Montmorency held conferences for settling the peace; and as they were both of them impatient to relieve themselves from captivity, they soon came to an agreement with regard to the conditions. The character of the Queen-regent, whose ends were always violent, but who endeavoured, by subtilty and

* Forbes, vol. II.

† Ibid, p. 276, 277.

policy,

CHAP. policy, rather than force, to attain them, led her
 XL. to embrace any plausible terms; and in spite of the
 1563. admiral's protestations, whose sagacity could easily discover the treachery of the court, the articles of agreement were finally settled between the parties. A toleration, under some restrictions, was anew granted to the protestants; a general amnesty was published; Condé was reinstated in his offices and governments; and after money was advanced for the payment of arrears due to the German troops, they were dismissed the kingdom.

By the agreement between Elizabeth and the prince of Condé, it had been stipulated^a, that neither party should conclude peace without the consent of the other; but this article was at present but little regarded by the leaders of the French protestants. They only comprehended her so far in the treaty, as to obtain a promise, that, on her relinquishing Havre, her charges and the money which she had advanced them, should be repaid her by the King of France, and that Calais, on the expiration of the term, should be restored to her. But she disdained to accept of these terms; and thinking the possession of Havre a much better pledge for the obtaining her purpose, she sent Warwic orders to prepare himself against an attack from the now united power of the French monarchy.

THE earl of Warwic, who commanded a garrison of six thousand men, beside seven hundred pioniers, had no sooner got possession of Havre, than he employed every means for putting it in a posture of defence^b; and after expelling the French from the town, he encouraged his soldiers to make the most desperate defence against the enemy. The constable commanded the French army; the Queen-regent herself, and the

^a Forbes, vol. II. p. 79.

^b Ibid. p. 158.

King, were present in the camp; even the prince of Condé joined the King's forces, and gave countenance to this enterprize; the admiral and Andelot alone, who still desired to preserve Elizabeth's friendship, kept at a distance, and prudently refused to join their antient enemies in an attack upon their allies.

CHAP.
XL.
1563.

By the force, and dispositions, and situation of both sides, it was expected, that the siege would be attended with some very memorable event; yet did France make a much easier acquisition of this important place, than was at first apprehended. The plague crept in among the English soldiers; and being encreased by their fatigue and bad diet (for they were but ill supplied with provisions¹) it committed such ravages, that sometimes a hundred men a day died of it, and there remained not at last fifteen hundred in a condition to do duty². The French, meeting with such feeble resistance, carried on their attacks successfully; and having made two breaches, each of them sixty feet wide, they prepared for a general assault, which must have terminated in the slaughter of the whole garrison³. Warwic, who had frequently warned the English council of the danger, and who had loudly demanded a supply of men and provisions, found himself obliged to capitulate, and to content himself with the liberty of withdrawing his garrison. The articles were no sooner signed, than lord Clinton, the admiral, who had been detained by contrary winds, appeared off the harbour with a reinforcement of three thousand men; and found the place surrendered to the enemy. To encrease the misfortune, the infected army brought the plague with them into England, where it swept off great multitudes, particularly in the city of Lon-

Havre lost
28th July.

¹ Forbes, p. 377, 498.

² Ibid. vol. II. p. 498.

³ Ibid. p. 450, 458.

CHAP. don. Above twenty thousand persons there died of
 XL. it in one year ^m.

1564. ELIZABETH, whose usual vigour and foresight had not appeared in these transactions, was now glad to compound matters; and as the Queen-regent desir'd to obtain leizure, in order to prepare measures for the extermination of the hugonots, she readily hearkened to any reasonable terms of accommodation with England ⁿ. It was agreed, that the hostages, which the French had given for the restitution of Calais, should be restored for 220,000 crowns; and that both sides should retain all their claims and pretensions.

2d. April.

Scots affairs.

THE peace still continued with Scotland; and even a cordial friendship seemed to have been cemented between Elizabeth and Mary. These princesses made profession of the most entire affection; wrote amicable letters every week to each other; and had adopted, in all appearance, the sentiments as well as style, of sisters. Elizabeth punished one Hales, who had composed a book against Mary's title ^o; and as the lord keeper, Bacon, was thought to have encouraged Hales in this undertaking, he fell under her displeasure, and it was with some difficulty that he was able to give her satisfaction, and recover her good opinion ^p. The two

^m This year the council of Trent was dissolved, which had sat from 1545. The publication of its decrees excited anew the general ferment in Europe; while the catholics endeavoured to enforce the acceptance of them, and the protestants rejected them. The religious controversies were too far advanced to expect any conviction would result from the decrees of this council. It is the only general council which has been held in an age truly learned and inquisitive; and as the history of it has been wrote with great penetration and judgment, it has tended very much to expose clerical usurpations and intrigues, and may serve us as a specimen of more antient councils. No one expects to see another general council, till the decay of learning and the progress of ignorance shall again fit mankind for these great impostures.

ⁿ Davila, lib. 3.

^o Keith, p. 252.

^p Ibid, p. 253.

Queens

Queens had agreed in the foregoing summer CHAP. to an interview at York^a; in order to remove all XL. difficulties with regard to Mary's ratification of the treaty of Edinburgh, and to consider of the proper method for settling the succession of England: But as Elizabeth carefully avoided touching on this delicate subject, she employed a pretence of the wars in France, which, she said, would detain her in London; and she delayed till next year the intended interview. It is also probable, that, being well acquainted with the beauty and address and accomplishments of Mary, she did not choose to stand the comparison with regard to those exterior qualities, in which she was eclipsed by her rival; and was unwilling, that a princess who had already made great progress in the esteem and affections of the English, should have a farther opportunity of encreasing the number of her partizans. 1564.

MARY's close connexions with the house of Guise, and her devoted attachment to her uncles, by whom she had been educated and protected, was the ground of just and unsurmountable jealousy to Elizabeth, who regarded them as her mortal and declared enemies, and was well acquainted with their dangerous character and ambitious projects. They had made offer of their niece to Don Carlos, Philip's son; to the King of Sweden, the King of Navarre, the archduke Charles, the duke of Ferrara, the cardinal of Bourbon, who had only taken deacons orders, from which he might easily be absolved; and they were ready to marry her to any one, who could strengthen their interests, or give inquietude and disturbance to Elizabeth^r. Elizabeth on her part was equally vigilant to prevent the execution of their schemes, and was particularly anxious, lest Mary should form any powerful foreign alliance,

^a Haynes, p. 388.
I. p. 400.

^r Forbes, vol. II. p. 287. Strype, vol.

CHAP. XL. alliance, which might tempt her to revive her pretensions to the crown, and to invade the kingdom on the side where it was weakest and lay most exposed *. As she believed, that the marriage with the archduke Charles was the one most likely to have place, she used every expedient to prevent it; and besides remonstrating against it to Mary herself, she endeavoured to draw off the archduke from that pursuit, by giving him some reason to hope for success in his pretensions to herself, and by inviting him to a renewal of the former treaty of marriage[†]. She always told the Queen of Scots, that nothing would satisfy her but her espousing some English nobleman, who would remove all grounds of jealousy, and cement the union between the two kingdoms; and she offered on this condition to have her title examined, and to declare her the successor to the crown[‡]. After keeping the matter in these general terms during a twelvemonth, she at last named the lord Robert Dudley, now created earl of Leicester, as the person on whom she desired that Mary's choice should fall.

THE earl of Leicester, the great and powerful favourite of Elizabeth, possessed all those exterior qualities, which are naturally alluring to the fair sex; a handsome person, a polite address, an insinuating behaviour; and by means of these accomplishments, he had been able to blind even the penetration of Elizabeth, and conceal from her the great defects, or rather odious vices, which attended his character. He was proud, insolent, interested, ambitious; without honour, without generosity, without humanity; and atoned not for these bad qualities, by any such abilities or courage, as could fit him for that high trust and confidence with which she always honoured him. Her con-

* Keith, p. 247, 284.
p. 243, 249, 259, 265.

† Melvil, p. 41.

‡ Keith

stant and declared attachment to him had very naturally emboldened him to aspire to her bed; and in order to make way for these nuptials, he was universally believed to have murdered, in a barbarous manner, his wife, the heiress of one Robesart. The proposal of espousing Mary was by no means agreeable to him; and he always ascribed it to the contrivance of Cecil, his enemy; who intended by that artifice to make him lose the friendship of Mary from the temerity of his pretensions, and that of Elizabeth from jealousy of his attachments to another woman*. The Queen herself had not any serious intention of effecting this marriage; but, as she was desirous, that the Queen of Scots should never take any husband, she named a man, who she believed, was not likely to be accepted of; and she hoped, by that means, to gain time, and elude the project of any other alliance. The earl of Leicester was too great a favourite to be parted with; and when Mary, allured by the prospect of being declared successor to the crown, seemed at last to hearken to Elizabeth's proposal, this princess receded from her former offers, and withdrew the bait, which she had formerly thrown out to her rival†. This duplicity of conduct, joined to some appearance of an imperious superiority, assumed by her, had drawn a peevish letter from Mary; and the seemingly amicable correspondence of the two Queens was, during some time, interrupted. In order to make up this breach, the Queen of Scots dispatched Sir James Melvil to London; who has given us a very particular account of his negociation.

MELVIL was an agreeable courtier, a man of address and conversation; and it was recommended to him by his mistress, that, besides grave reasonings

* Camden, p. 396.

† Keith, p. 269, 270. Appendix, p. 158. Strype, vol. I. p. 414.

CHAP. XL. concerning politics and state-affairs, he should introduce more entertaining topics of conversation, suitable to the sprightly character of Elizabeth; and should endeavour by that means to insinuate himself into her confidence. He succeeded so well, that he threw that artful princess entirely off her guard^z, and brought her to discover the bottom of her heart, full of all those levities and follies and ideas of rivalship, which possess the youngest and most frivolous of her sex. He talked to her of his travels, and forgot not to mention the different dresses of the ladies in different countries, and the particular advantages of each, in setting off the beauties of the shape and person. The Queen said that she had dresses of all countries, and she took care thenceforth to meet the ambassador every day apparelled in a different habit: Sometimes she was dressed in the English garb, sometimes in the French, sometimes in the Italian; and she asked him, which of them became her most. He answered, the Italian; a reply, that he knew would be agreeable to her, because that mode showed her flowing locks, which, he remarked, tho' they were more red than yellow, she fancied to be the finest in the world. She desired to know of him what was reputed the best colour of hair: She asked whether his Queen's hair or hers was best: She even enquired which of them he esteemed the fairest person: A very delicate question, and which he prudently eluded, by saying that her majesty was the fairest person in England, and his mistress in Scotland. She next demanded which of them was tallest: He replied, his queen: Then, said Elizabeth, she is too tall: For I myself am of a just stature. Having learned from him, that his mistress sometimes recreated herself by playing on the harpsicord, an instrument on which she herself

^z Haynes, p. 447.

excelled,

excelled, she gave orders to lord Hunsdon, that he should lead him as it were casually, into an apartment, where he might hear her perform; and when Melvil, as if ravished with the harmony, broke into the Queen's apartment, she pretended to be displeased at his intrusion; but still took care to ask him whether he thought Mary or her the best performer on that instrument*. From the whole of her behaviour, Melvil thought he might, on his return, assure his mistress that she had no reason ever to expect any cordial friendship from Elizabeth, and that all her professions of amity were full of falshood and dissimulation.

CHAP.
XL.
1564.

AFTER two years had been spent in evasions and artifices^b, Mary's subjects and counsellors, and probably herself, began to think it full time that some alliance were concluded; and the lord Darnley, son to the earl of Lenox, was the person, in whom most mens opinions and wishes centered. He was Mary's cousin-german, by the lady Margaret Douglas, niece to Harry the eighth, and daughter to the earl of Angus, by Margaret, Queen of Scotland. He had been born and educated in England, where the earl of Lenox had constantly resided, ever since he had been banished by the prevailing power of the house of Hamilton; and as Darnley was now in his twentieth year, and was a very comely person, tall and delicately shaped, it was hoped, that he might soon render himself agreeable to the Queen of Scots. He was also by his father a branch of the same family with herself; and would, in espousing her, preserve the royal dignity in the house of Stuart: He was, after her, next heir to the crown of England; and those who pretended to exclude her on account of her being a foreigner, had endeavoured to recommend his title, and

* Melvil. p. 49, 50.

^b Keith, p. 264.

CHAP. give it the preference. It seemed no inconsiderable
 XL. advantage, that she could, by marrying him, unite
 1564. both their claims; and as he was by birth an Englishman, and could not by his power or alliances give any ground of suspicion to Elizabeth, it was hoped that the proposal of this marriage would not be unacceptable to that jealous princess.

ELIZABETH was well informed of these intentions of the court of Edinburgh^c; and was secretly not displeased with the projected marriage between Darnley and the Queen of Scots^d. She would rather have wished, that Mary had continued for ever in a single life; but finding little probability of rendering this scheme effectual, she was satisfied with a choice, which freed her at once from the dread of a foreign alliance, and from the necessity of parting with Leicester, her favourite. In order to pave the way to Darnley's marriage, she secretly desired Mary to invite Lenox into Scotland, to reverse his attainder, and to restore him to his honours and fortune^e. And when her request was complied with, she took care, in order to preserve the friendship of the Hamiltons and her other partizans in Scotland, to blame openly this conduct of Mary^f. Hearing that the negotiation for Darnley's marriage proceeded apace, she gave that nobleman permission, on his first application, to follow his father into Scotland: But no sooner did she learn, that the Queen of Scots was taken with his figure and person, and that all measures were fixed for espousing him, than she exclaimed against the marriage; sent Throcmorton to order Darnley immediately upon his allegiance, to return into England; threw the countess of Lenox and her second son into the Tower, where they suffered a very rigorous confinement; seized

^c Keith, p. 261.
 II. p. 46.

^d Keith, p. 280, 282. Jebb, vol.
^e Keith, p. 255, 259, 272.

^f Melvil, p. 42.

all Lenox's English estate; and, tho' it was impossible CHAP. XL.
 for her to assign one single reason of her displeasure, she menaced, and protested, and complained, 1565.
 as if she had suffered the most grievous injury in the 28th July.
 world.

The politics of Elizabeth, tho' judicious, were usually full of duplicity and artifice; but never more so than in her transactions with the Queen of Scots, where there entered so many little passions and narrow jealousies, that she durst not avow to the world the reasons of her conduct, scarcely to her ministers, and scarcely even to herself. But besides a womanish rivalry and envy against the marriage of this princess, she had some motives of interest for feigning a displeasure on the present occasion. It served her as a pretence for refusing to acknowledge Mary's title to the succession of England; a point to which she was determined never to consent. And it was useful to her for a purpose, still more unfriendly and dangerous, for encouraging the contents and rebellion of the Scottish nobility and ecclesiastics ^a.

Nothing can be more unhappy for a people than to be governed by a sovereign, who is attached to a religion different from that which is established; and it is scarce possible, that a mutual confidence can ever, in such a situation, have place between the prince and his subjects. Mary's conduct had been hitherto, in every respect, unexceptionable, and even laudable; yet had she not made such progress in acquiring popularity, as might have been expected from her gracious deportment and agreeable accomplishments. Suspicions every moment prevailed on account of her attachment to the catholic faith, and especially to her uncles, the open and avowed promoters of the scheme for exterminating the professors of

^a Keith, p. 274, 275.

^b Keith, p. 290.

CHAP. the reformed religion throughout all Europe. She
 XL. still refused to ratify the acts of Parliament, which
 1565. had established the reformation; she made attempts
 for restoring to the catholic bishops some part of
 their civil jurisdiction¹; and she wrote a letter to
 the council of Trent, in which, besides professing
 her attachment to the catholic faith, she took no-
 tice of her title to succeed to the crown of Eng-
 land, and expressed her hopes of being able, in
 some period, to bring back all her dominions to
 the bosom of the church². The zealots among the
 protestants were not wanting, in their turn, to prac-
 tise insults upon her, which tended still more to
 alienate her from their faith. A law was enacted,
 making it capital, even on the first offence, to say
 mass any where, except in the Queen's chappel³;
 and it was with great difficulty that even this small
 indulgence was granted her: The general assem-
 bly importuned her anew to change her religion, to
 renounce the blasphemous idolatry of the mass, with
 the tyranny of the Roman Antichrist, and to em-
 brace the true religion of Christ Jesus⁴. As she
 answered with temper, that she was not yet con-
 vinced of the falshood of her religion or the im-
 piety of the mass; and that her apostacy would
 lose her the friendship of her allies on the conti-
 nent; they replied, by assuring her, that their re-
 ligion was undoubtedly the same which had been
 revealed by Jesus Christ, which had been preached
 by the apostles, and which had been embraced by
 the faithful in the primitive ages; that neither the
 religion of Turks, Jews, nor Papists was built on
 so solid a foundation as theirs; that they alone, of
 all the various species of religionists spread over the
 face of the earth, were so happy as to be posses-
 sed of the truth; that those who hear, or rather

¹ Spotswood, p. 198.² Keith, p. 268.³ Father Paul, lib. vii.⁴ Keith, p. 545. Knox, p. 374.

who gaze on the mass, allow sacrilege, pronounce CHAP. blasphemy, and commit most abominable idolatry; XL.
and that the friendship of the King of kings was preferable to all the confederacies and alliances in the world ^{1565.}

THE marriage of the Queen of Scots had kindled The afresh the zeal of the reformers, because the family Queen of of Lenox was believed to adhere to the catholic Scotsmar- faith; and tho' Darnley, who now bore the name ries the earl of of King Henry, went often to the established church, Darnley. he could not, by this exterior compliance, gain the confidence and regard of the ecclesiastics. They rather laid hold of this opportunity to insult him to his face; and Knox scrupled not to tell him from the pulpit, that God, for punishment of the offences and ingratitude of the people, was wont to commit the rule over them to boys and women^o. The populace of Edinburgh, instigated by such doctrine, began to meet and to associate themselves against the government^p. But what threatned with more immediate danger Mary's authority, were the discontents which prevailed among some of the principal nobility.

THE duke of Chatelrault was displeased with the restoration, and still more with the aggrandizement, of the family of Lenox, his hereditary enemies; and entertained fears lest his eventual succession to the crown of Scotland should be excluded by his rival, who had formerly advanced some pretensions to it. The earl of Murray found his credit at court much diminished by the interest of Lenox, and his son; and began to apprehend the revocation of some considerable grants which he had obtained from Mary's liberality. The earls of Argyle, Rothes, and Glencairne, the lords Boyde and Ochiltry, Kirkaldy of

^a Keith, p. 550, 551.

^o Ibid. p. 546. Knox, p. 381.

^p Knox, p. 377.

CHAP. Grange, Pittarow, were instigated by like motives;
 XL. and as these were the persons who had most zealously
 1565. promoted the reformation, they were disgusted to
 find that the Queen's favour was entirely engrossed
 by a new cabal, the earls of Bothwel, Athole, Sutherland, and Huntley; men who were esteemed either luke-warm in religious controversy, or inclined to the catholic party. The same ground of discontent, which, in other courts, is the source of intrigue, faction, and opposition, commonly produced in Scotland, either projects of assassination, or of rebellion; and besides mutual accusations of the former kind, which it is difficult to clear up^a, the discontented lords, as soon as they saw the Queen's marriage entirely resolved on, entered into a confederacy for taking arms against their sovereign. They met at Stirling; pretended an anxious concern for the security of religion; framed engagements for mutual defence; and made applications to Elizabeth for assistance and protection^b. That princess, after publishing the expressions of her displeasure against the marriage, had secretly ordered her ambassadors Randolph and Throckmorton, to give in her name some promises of support to the malecontents; and had even sent them a supply of ten thousand pounds, to enable them to begin their insurrection^c.

MARY was no sooner informed of the meeting at Stirling, and the movements of the lords, than she

^a It appears, however, from Randolph's Letters, Keith, p. 290. that some offers had been made to that minister, of seizing Lennox and Darnley, and delivering them into Queen Elizabeth's hands. Melvil confirms the same story, and says, that the design was acknowledged by the conspirators. P. 56. This serves to justify the account given by the Queen's party of the Raid of Baith, as it is called. See farther Goodall, vol. II. p. 358. The other conspiracy, of which Murray complained, is much more uncertain, and is founded on very doubtful evidence.

^b Keith, p. 293, 294, 300, 301.

^c Knox, p. 380.

Keith, Appen. p. 164. Anderson, vol. III. p. 194.

summoned

summoned them to appear at court, in order to answer for their conduct; and having levied some forces to execute the laws, she obliged the malecontents to leave the low country, and take shelter in Argyleshire. That she might more effectually cut off all their resources, she proceeded with the king to Glasgow, and forced them from their retreat. They appeared at Paisly in the neighbourhood with about a thousand horse; and passing the Queen's army, proceeded to Hamilton, and thence to Edinburgh, which they entered without resistance. They expected great reinforcements in this place, from the efforts of Knox and the seditious preachers; and they beat their drums, desiring all men to enlist, and receive wages for the defence of God's glory^t. But the nation was in no disposition for rebellion: Mary was esteemed and beloved: Her marriage was not generally disagreeable to the people: And the interested views of the malecontent lords were so well known, that their pretence of zeal for religion had little influence even on the ignorant populace^u. The King and Queen advanced to Edinburgh at the head of their army: The rebels were obliged to retire into the south; and being pursued by a force which now amounted to eighteen thousand men^{*}, they found themselves under a necessity of abandoning their country, and of taking shelter in England.

ELIZABETH, when she found the event so much to disappoint her expectations, thought proper to disown all connections with the Scottish malecontents, and to declare every where, that she had never given them any encouragement, or any promise of countenance or assistance. She even carried farther her dissimulation and hypocrisy. Murray had come to London, with the abbot of Kilwinning, agent for Chatel-

^t Knox. p. 381.^u Ibid, 380, 385.^{*} Ibid. 388.
rault;

CHAP.

XL.

1565.

rault; and she seduced them, by secret assurances of protection, to declare, before the ambassadors of France and Spain, that she had no-wise contributed to their insurrection. No sooner had she extorted this confession from them, than she chased them from her presence, called them unworthy traytors, declared that their detestable rebellion was of bad example to all princes, and assured them, that as she had hitherto given them no encouragement, so they should never thenceforth receive from her any assistance or protection ^y. Throcmorton alone, whose honour was equal to his abilities, could not be prevailed on to conceal the part which he had acted in the enterprise of the Scots rebels; and being well apprized of the usual character and conduct of Elizabeth, he had had the precaution to obtain an order of council to authorize the engagements which he had been obliged to take with them ^z.

THE banished lords, finding themselves so ill used by Elizabeth, had recourse to the clemency of their sovereign; and after some sollicitation, and some professions of sincere repentance, the duke of Chatelrault obtained his pardon, on condition that he should retire into France. Mary was more implacable against the ungrateful earl of Murray, and the other confederates, on whom she threw the chief blame of the enterprise; but as she was continually plied with applications from their friends, and as some of her most judicious partizans in England thought, that nothing would more promote her interests in that kingdom, than the gentle treatment of men so celebrated for their zeal against the catholic religion; she agreed to give way to her natural temper, which inclined not to severity, and she seemed determined to restore them to her favour ^a. In this interval, Rambouillet arrived as ambassador

^y Melvil, p. 57. Knox, p. 388. Keith, p. 319. Crawford, p. 62, 63. ^z Melvil, p. 60. ^a Ibid, p. 59, 60, 61, 62, 63. Keith, p. 322.
from

from France, and brought her advice from her uncle, the cardinal of Lorraine, to whose opinion she always paid an extreme deference, by no means to pardon these protestant leaders, who had been engaged in a rebellion against her ^b.

CHAP.

XL.

1565.

THE two religions, in France, as well as in other parts of Europe, were rather irritated than satiated with their mutual violences; and the peace granted to the hugonots, as had been foreseen by the admiral, was intended only to lull them asleep, and prepare the way for their final and absolute destruction. The Queen-regent made a pretence of travelling thro' the kingdom, in order to visit the provinces, and correct all the abuses arising from the late war; and after having held some conferences on the frontiers with the duke of Lorraine, and the duke of Savoy, she came to Bayonne, where she was met by her daughter, the Queen of Spain, and the duke of Alva. Nothing appeared in the congress of these two splendid courts, but gaiety, festivity, love, and joy; but amidst these smiling appearances were secretly fabricated schemes the most bloody, and the most destructive to the repose of mankind, which had ever been thought of in any age or nation. No less than a total and universal extermination of the protestants by fire and sword, was concerted by Philip and Catherine of Medicis; and Alva, agreeable to his fierce and sanguinary disposition, advised the Queen-regent to commence the execution of this project, by the immediate massacre of all the leaders of the hugonots ^c. But that princess, tho' equally hardened against every humane sentiment, would not forego this opportunity of displaying her wit and refined politics; and she proposed, rather by treachery and dissimulation, which she called address, to lead the Protestants into the snare, and never to

^b Keith, p. 325. Melvil, p. 63.

^c Davila, lib. iii.

CHAP. draw the sword till they were totally disabled from
 XL. resistance. The cardinal of Lorraine, whose cha-
 1565. racter bore a greater affinity to that of Alva, was a
 Confede- chief author of this barbarous association against the
 racy a- reformers; and having connected his hopes of suc-
 gainst the cess with the aggrandizement of his niece, the
 protes- Queen of Scots, he took care that her measures
 tants. should agree with those violent councils, which were
 embraced by the other catholic princes. In conse-
 1566. quence of this scheme, he turned her from the road
 of clemency, which she intended to have followed,
 and made her resolve on the total ruin of the banish-
 ed lords^d. A Parliament was summoned to meet at
 Edinburgh for their forfeiture and attainder; and
 as the crime of which they had been guilty, was
 palpable and avowed, no doubt could be entertain-
 ed but sentence would be pronounced against them.
 It was by a sudden and violent accident, which,
 in the issue, brought on the ruin of Mary,
 that they were saved from the rigour of the
 law.

THE marriage of the Queen of Scots with lord
 Darnley was so natural, and so inviting in all its
 circumstances, that it had been precipitantly a-
 greed to by that princess and her council; and
 while she was allured by his youth, and beauty,
 and exterior accomplishments, she had at first o-
 verlooked the qualities of his mind, which no wise
 corresponded with the excellence of his outward fi-
 gure. Violent, yet variable in his enterprizes; in-
 solent, yet credulous and easily governed by flatter-
 ers; he was devoid of all gratitude, because he
 thought no favours equal to his merit; and being
 addicted to low pleasures, he was equally incapable
 of all true sentiments of love and tenderness^e. The
 Queen of Scots, in the first effusions of her fondness,

^d Melvil, p. 63. Keith's Append. p. 176.

^e Keith, p. 287, 329. Appen. p. 163.

had taken a pleasure in exalting him beyond measure: She had granted him the title of King; she had joined his name with her own in all public acts; she intended to have procured him from the states a matrimonial crown; but having leisure afterwards to remark his weakness and vices, she began to see the danger of her profuse liberality, and was resolved thenceforth to proceed with more reserve in the trust which she should confer upon him. His resentment against this prudent conduct, served but the more to encrease her disgust; and the young prince, enraged at her imagined neglects, pointed his vengeance against every one whom he esteemed the cause of this change in her measures and behaviour.

CHAP.
XL.
1566.

THERE was in the court, one David Rizzio who had of late obtained a very extraordinary degree of confidence and favour with the Queen of Scots. He was a Piedmontese, of mean birth, son to a teacher of music, himself a musician; and finding it difficult to subsist by his art in his own country, he had followed into Scotland an ambassador whom the duke of Savoy sent thither to pay his compliments to Mary, some time after her first arrival. He possessed a good ear, and a tolerable voice; and as that princess found him useful to compleat her band of music, she retained him in her service after the departure of his master. Her secretary for French dispatches having, some time after, fallen under her displeasure, she promoted Rizzio to that office, which gave him frequent opportunities of approaching her person, and insinuating himself into her favour. He was shrewd and sensible, as well as aspiring, much beyond his rank and education; and made so good use of the access which fortune had procured him, that he was soon regarded as the chief confidant and even minister of the Queen.

CHAP.

XL.

1566.

He was consulted on all occasions; no favours could be obtained but by his intercession; all suitors were obliged to gain him by presents and flattery; and the man, insolent from his new exaltation, as well as rapacious in his acquisitions, soon drew on himself the hatred of the nobility, and of the whole kingdom^f. He had at first employed his credit to promote Darnley's marriage; and a firm friendship seemed to be established between them: But on the subsequent change of the Queen's sentiments, it was easy for Henry's friends to persuade him, that Rizzio was the real author of her indifference, and even to rouse in his mind jealousies of a more dangerous nature. The favourite was of a disagreeable figure, but was not past his youth^g; and tho' the opinion of his criminal correspondence with Mary might seem of itself unreasonable, if not absurd, a suspicious husband could find no other means of accounting for that lavish and imprudent kindness, with which she honoured him. The rigid austerity of the ecclesiastics, who could admit of no freedoms, contributed to spread this opinion among the people; and as Rizzio was universally believed to be a pensionary of the pope, and to be deeply engaged in all schemes against the protestants, any story to his and Mary's disadvantage, received an easy credit among the zealots of that communion.

Rizzio, who had connected his interest with the Roman catholics, was the declared enemy of the banished lords; and by promoting the violent prosecu-

^f Keith, p. 282. 302. Crawford's Memoirs, p. 5. Spottiswood, p. 193.

^g Buchanan confesses he was ugly; but it may be inferred, from the narration of that author, that he was young. He says, that on the return of the duke of Savoy to Turin, Rizzio was *in adolescentiæ vigore*; in the vigour of youth. Now that event happened only a few years before. Lib. xvii. cap. 44.

tion against them, had exposed himself to the animosity of their numerous friends and retainers. A scheme was also thought to be formed for revoking some exorbitant grants made during the Queen's minority; and even the nobility, who had seized the ecclesiastical benefices, began to think themselves less secure in the possession of them ^h. The earl of Morton, chancellor, was affected by all these considerations, and still more by a rumour spread abroad, that Mary intended to appoint Rizzio chancellor in his place, and to bestow that dignity on a mean and upstart foreigner, who was ignorant of the laws and language of the country ⁱ. So indiscreet had this princess been in her kindness to Rizzio, that even that strange report met with credit, and proved a great means of accelerating the ruin of the favourite. Morton, insinuating himself into Henry's confidence, employed all his art to enflame the discontent and jealousy of that prince; and he persuaded him, that the only means of freeing himself from the indignities under which he laboured, was to bring the base stranger to that fate which he had so well merited, and which was so passionately desired by the whole nation. George Douglas, natural brother to the countess of Lenox, concurred in the same advice; and the lords Ruthven and Lindesey, being consulted, offered their concurrence in the enterprise; nor was even the earl of Lenox, the King's father, averse to the design ^k. But as these conspirators were well acquainted with Henry's levity, they engaged him to sign a paper, in which he avowed the undertaking, and promised to

CHAP.
XL.
1566.

^h Keith, p. 326. Melvil, p. 64. ⁱ Buchanan. lib. xvii. c. 60. Crawford, p. 6. Spotswood, p. 194. Knox, p. 393. Jebb, vol. I. p. 456. ^k Crawford, p. 7.

CHAP. XL. protect them against every consequence which might ensue upon the assassination of Rizzio¹. All these measures being fully concerted, a messenger was dispatched to the banished lords, who were hovering near the borders; and they were invited by the King to return to their native country.

1566.
9th March THIS design, so atrocious in itself, was rendered still more so by the circumstances which attended its execution. Mary, who was in the sixth month of her pregnancy, was supping in private, and had at table the countess of Argyle, her natural sister, with Rizzio, and others of her servants. The King entered the room by a private passage, and stood at the back of Mary's chair: The lord Ruthven, George Douglas, and other conspirators, being all armed, rushed in after him; and the Queen of Scots, terrified with the appearance, demanded of them the reason of this rude intrusion. They told her, that they intended no violence against her person; but meant only to bring that villain, pointing at Rizzio, to his deserved punishment. Rizzio, aware of the danger, ran behind his mistress, and seizing her by the waist, called aloud to her for protection; while she interposed in his behalf, with cries, and menaces, and entreaties. The impatient assassins, regardless of her efforts, rushed upon their prey, and by overturning every thing which stood in their way, increased the horror and confusion of the scene. Douglas, seizing Henry's dagger, stuck it in the body of Rizzio, who, screaming with fear and agony, was torn from Mary by the other conspirators, and pushed into the antichamber, where he was dispatched with fifty-six wounds^m. The unhappy princess, informed of his fate, immediately

¹ Goodall, vol. I. p. 266. Crawford, p. 7.

^m Melvil, p. 64. Keith, p. 330, 331. Crawford, p. 9.

dried



dried her tears, and said, she would weep no more; she would now think of revenge. The insult, indeed, upon her person; the stain attempted to be fixed on her honour; the danger to which her life was exposed, on account of her pregnancy; were injuries so atrocious, and so complicated, that they scarce left room for pardon, even from the greatest lenity and mercy.

CHAP.
XL.
1566.

THE assassins, apprehensive of Mary's resentment, detained her a prisoner in the palace; and the King dismissed all those who seemed willing to attempt her rescue, by telling them, that nothing was done without his orders, and that he would be careful of the Queen's safety. Murray, and the banished lords, appeared two days after; and Mary, whose anger was now engrossed by injuries more recent and violent, was willingly reconciled to them; and she even received her brother with tenderness and affection. They obtained an acquittal from the Parliament, and were re-instated in their honours and fortunes. The accomplices also in Rizzio's murder applied to her for a pardon; but she artfully delayed compliance, and persuaded them, that so long as she was detained in custody, and was surrounded by guards, any deed which she should sign, would have no force nor validity. Meanwhile she had gained the confidence of her husband, by her persuasion and caresses; and no sooner were the guards withdrawn, than she engaged him to escape with her in the night time, and take shelter in Dunbar. Many of her subjects here offered her their assistance; and Mary, having collected an army, which the conspirators had no power to resist, advanced to Edinburgh, and obliged them to fly into England, where they lived in great poverty and distress. They made applications, however, to the earl of Bothwell, a new favourite of Mary's; and that nobleman, desirous

to

CHAP. to strengthen his party by the accession of their in-
 XL. terest, was able to pacify her resentment, and he
 1566. soon after procured them liberty to return into their
 own countryⁿ.

THE vengeance of the Queen of Scots was implacable against her husband alone, whose person was before disagreeable to her, and who, by his violation of every tie of gratitude and duty, had now drawn on him her highest resentment. She engaged him to disown all connections with the assassins, to deny any concurrence in their crime, even to publish a proclamation containing a falsehood so notorious to the whole world^o; and having thus made him expose himself to universal contempt, and rendered it impracticable for him ever to acquire the confidence of any party, she threw him off with disdain and indignation^p. As if she had been making an escape from him, she suddenly withdrew to Alloa, a seat of the earl of Mar; and when Henry followed her thither, she returned suddenly to Edinburgh; and gave him every where the strongest proofs of displeasure, and even of antipathy. She encouraged her courtiers in their neglect of him; and she was pleased, that his mean equipage, and small train of attendants, should draw on him the contempt of the very populace. He was permitted, however, to have apartments in the castle of Edinburgh, which Mary had chosen for the place of her delivery. She there brought forth a son; and as this was very important news to England, as well
 19th June. as to Scotland, she immediately dispatched Sir James Melvil to carry intelligence of the happy event to Elizabeth. Melvil tells us, that that princess, the evening of his arrival in London, had given a ball to her

ⁿ Melvil, p. 75, 76. Keith, p. 334. Knox, p. 398.

^o Goodall, vol. I. p. 280 Keith Appen. p. 167.

^p Melvil, p. 66, 67.

court at Greenwich, and was displaying all that spirit and alacrity which usually attended her on these occasions: But when the prince of Scotland's birth was notified to her, all her joy was damped: She sunk into melancholy; she reclined her head upon her arm; and complained to some of her attendants, that the Queen of Scots was mother of a fair son, while she was but a barren stock. Next day, however, on the reception of the Scots ambassador, she resumed her former dissimulation, put on a joyful countenance, gave Melvil thanks for the haste he had made in conveying to her the agreeable intelligence, and expressed the utmost cordiality and friendship to her sister^a. Some time after she dispatched the earl of Bedford, with her kinsman George Cary, son to the lord Hunston, in order to officiate at the baptism of the young prince; and she sent by them some magnificent presents to the Queen of Scots.

CHAP.
XL.

1566.

THE birth of a son gave additional zeal to Mary's partizans in England^r; and even men of all parties began to cry aloud for some settlement of the succession. These humours broke out with great vehemence in a new session of Parliament, which was held after six prorogations. The house of peers, which had hitherto forbore to touch on the delicate point of the succession, here took the lead; and the house of commons soon after imitated the zeal of the lords. Molineux opened the matter in the lower house, and proposed that the question of the succession and that of supply should go hand in hand; as if it were intended to constrain the Queen to a compliance with the request of her Parliament^s. The courtiers endeavoured to elude the debate: Sir Ralph Sadler told the house, that he had heard the

30th September.

A Parliament.

^a Melvil, p. 69, 70.

^r Camden, p. 397.

^s D'Ewes, p. 129.

CHAP.

XL.

1566.

Queen positively affirm, that, for the good of her people, she was determined to marry. Secretary Cecil and Sir Francis Knollys gave their testimony to the same purpose; as did also Sir Ambrose Cave, chancellor of the dutchy, and Sir Edward Rogers, comptroller of the household^t. Elizabeth's ambitious and masculine character was so well known, that few members gave any credit to this intelligence; and it was considered merely as an artifice, by which she endeavoured to retract that positive affirmation, which she had made in the beginning of her reign, that she meant to live and die a virgin. The ministers therefore gained nothing farther by this piece of policy, but only to engage the house, for the sake of decency, to join the question of the Queen's marriage with that of a settlement of the crown; and the commons were proceeding with great earnestness in the debate, and had even appointed a committee to confer with the lords, when express orders were brought them from Elizabeth not to proceed farther in that matter. Cecil told them, that she had pledged to the house the word of a Queen for her sincerity in her intentions to marry; that the appointment of a successor would be attended with great danger to her person; that she herself had had experience, during the reign of her sister, how much court was paid to the next heir, and what dangerous sacrifices men were commonly disposed to make of their present duty to their future prospects; and that she was therefore determined to delay, till a more proper opportunity, the decision of that important question^u. The house were not satisfied with these reasons, and still less with the command, prohibiting them all debate on that subject. Paul Wentworth, a spirited member, went so far as to question whether such a prohibition were not an infringement of the liberties and privileges of the house^x. Some even ventured to

^t D'Ewes, p. 124.^u Ibid. p. 127, 128.^x Ibid. p. 128.
violate

1566.

violate that profound respect which they had hitherto preserved to the Queen; and affirmed that she was bound in duty, not only to provide for the happiness of her subjects during her own life, but also to pay regard to their future security, by fixing a successor; that by a contrary conduct, she showed herself the stepmother, not the natural parent, of her people, and would seem desirous, that England should no longer subsist than she should enjoy the glory and satisfaction of governing it; that none but timorous princes, or tyrants, or faint hearted women, ever stood in fear of their successors; and that the affections of the people were a firm and impregnable rampart to every sovereign, who, laying aside all artifice or by-ends, had courage and magnanimity to put his sole trust in that honourable and sure defence *v*. The Queen, hearing of these debates, sent for the speaker, and after reiterating her former prohibition, she bid him inform the house, that, if any member remained still unsatisfied, he might appear before the privy council, and there give his reasons *z*. As the members showed a disposition, notwithstanding these peremptory orders, still to proceed upon the question, Elizabeth thought proper, by a message, to revoke them, and to allow the house liberty, of debate *a*. They were so mollified by this gracious condescension, that they thenceforth conducted the matter with more calmness and temper; and they even voted her a supply, to be levied at three payments, of a subsidy and a fifteenth, without annexing any condition to it. The Queen soon after dissolved the Parliament, *1567*. and told them with some sharpness in the conclusion, that their proceedings had contained much dissimulation and artifice; that under the plausible pretences of marriage and succession, many of them covered very malevolent intentions towards her; but

v Camden, p. 400.*z* D'Ewes. p. 128.*a* Ibid, p. 130.

CHAP. that, however, she reaped this advantage from their
 XL. attempts that she could now distinguish her friends
 1567. from her enemies. "But do you think," added she,
 "that I am unmindful of your future security, or
 "will be negligent in settling the succession? That
 "is the chief object of my concern; as I know my-
 "self to be liable to mortality. Or do you appre-
 "hend, that I meant to incroach on your liberties?
 "No: It was never my meaning; I only intended
 "to stop you before you approached the precipice.
 "All things have their time; and tho' you may be
 "blessed with a sovereign more wise or more learn-
 "ed than I, yet I assure you, that no one will ever
 "rule over you, who shall be more careful of your
 "safety. And therefore, henceforward, whether I
 "live to see the like assembly or no, or whoever
 "holds the reins of government, let me warn you
 "to beware of provoking your sovereign's patience,
 "so far as you have done mine. But I shall now
 "conclude, notwithstanding the disgusts I have re-
 "ceived (for I mean not to part with you in anger)
 "that the greatest part of you may assure themselves
 "that they go home in their prince's good gra-
 "ces ^b."

ELIZABETH carried farther her dignity on this oc-
 casion. She had received the subsidy without any
 condition; but as it was believed, that the com-
 mons had given her that gratuity with a view of en-
 gaging her to yield to their requests, she thought
 proper, on her refusal, to remit voluntarily the third
 payment; and she said, that money in her subjects
 purses was as good as in her own exchequer ^c.

BUT tho' the Queen was able to elude, for the pre-
 sent, the applications of Parliament, the friends of the
 Queen of Scots multiplied every day in England; and

^b D'Ewes. p. 116, 117.

^c Camden, p. 400.

besides the catholics, many of whom kept treasonable correspondence with her, and were ready to rise at her command^d, the court itself of Elizabeth was full of her avowed partizans. The duke of Norfolk, the earls of Leicester, Pembroke, Bedford, Northumberland, Sir Nicholas Throcmorton, and most of the considerable men in England, except Cecil, seemed convinced of the necessity of declaring her the successor. None but the more zealous protestants adhered either to the countess of Hertford, or to her aunt, Eleanor, Countess of Cumberland; and as the marriage of the former seemed liable to some objections, and had been declared invalid, men were alarmed, even on that side, with the prospect of new disputes concerning the succession. Mary's behaviour also, so moderate towards the protestants, and so gracious towards all men, had procured her universal respect^e; and the public was willing to ascribe any imprudences, into which she had fallen, to her youth and inexperience. But all these flattering prospects were blasted by the subsequent incidents, where her engreivous indiscretions, shall I say, or atrocious crimes, threw her from the height of her prosperity, and involved her in infamy and ruin.

THE earl of Bothwel was of a considerable family and power in Scotland; and tho' not distinguished by any talents either of a civil or military nature, he had made a figure in that party, which opposed the greatness of the earl of Murray, and the more rigid reformers. He was a man of profligate manners; had involved his opulent fortune in great debts, and even reduced himself to beggary, by his profuse expences^f; and seemed to have no resource but in desperate councils and enterprizes. He had been accused more than once of an attempt to assassinate Murray; and notwithstanding that the frequency of these accusations

Murder of
Darnley.

^d Haynes, p. 446, 448.

^e Melvil. p. 53, 61, 74.

^f Keith, p. 240.

CHAP.

XL.

1567.

ons all sides diminish somewhat the credit due to any particular imputation, they proved sufficiently the prevalence of that detestable practice in Scotland, and may in that view serve to render such rumours the more likely and credible. This man had of late acquired the favour and entire confidence of Mary; and all her measures were directed by his advice and authority. Reports were spread of more particular intimacies and familiarities between them; and these reports gained ground from the continuance or rather encrease of her hatred towards her husband ^z. That young prince was reduced to such a state of desperation, by the neglects which he underwent from his Queen and the courtiers, that he had once resolved to fly secretly into France or Spain, and had even provided a vessel for that purpose ^h. Some of the most considerable nobility, on the other hand, observing her fixed aversion to him, had proposed some expedients for a divorce; and tho' Mary is said to have spoken honourably on that occasion, and to have embraced the proposal no farther than it should be found consistent with her own honour and her son's legitimacy ⁱ, men were inclined to believe, that the difficulty of finding proper means for effectuating that purpose, was the real cause of laying aside all farther thoughts of it. So far were the suspicions against her carried, that, when Henry, discouraged with the continual proofs of her hatred, left the court and retired to Glasgow, an illness of an extraordinary nature, with which he was seized immediately on his arrival in that place, was universally ascribed by her enemies to a dose of poison, which, it was pretended, she had administered to him.

^z Melvil, p. 66. 77.^h Keith, p. 345—348.ⁱ Camden, p. 404. Goodall's Queen Mary, vol. II. p. 317.

1567.

WHILE affairs were on this footing, all those who wished well to her character or the repose of their country, were extremely pleased, and somewhat surprized, to hear, that a friendship was again conciliated between them, that she had taken a journey to Glasgow on purpose to visit him during his sickness, that she behaved towards him with great tenderness, that she had brought him along with her, and that she appeared thenceforth determined to live with him on a footing more suitable to the connections between them. Henry, naturally uxorious, and not mistrusting this sudden reconciliation, put himself implicitly into her hands, and attended her to Edinburgh. She lived in the palace of Holyrood-house; but as the situation of that place was low, and the concourse of persons about the court was necessarily attended with noise, which might disturb him in his present infirm state of health, these reasons were assigned for fitting up an apartment for him in a solitary house, at some distance, called the Kirk of Field. Mary here gave him marks of kindness and attachment; she conversed cordially with him; and she lay some nights in a room below his; but on the ninth of February, she told him, that she would pass that night in the palace, because the marriage of one of her servants was there to be celebrated in her presence. About two o'clock in the morning the whole town was much alarmed at hearing a great noise; and were still more astonished, when it was discovered, that the noise came from the King's house, which was blown up by gun-powder; that his dead body was found at some distance in a neighbouring field; and that no marks either of fire, contusion or violence appeared upon it^k.

^k It was imagined, that Henry had been strangled before the house was blown up: But this supposition is contradicted by the confession of the criminals; and there is no necessity to admit it

CHAP.

XL.

1567.

No doubt could be entertained but Henry was murdered; and the general conjecture soon pointed towards the earl of Bothwel as the author of that crime¹. But as his favour with Mary was open and visible, and his power great, no one ventured to declare openly his sentiments, and all men remained in silence and mute astonishment. Voices, however, were heard in the streets, during the darkness of the night, proclaiming Bothwel, and even Mary herself, to be the murderers of the King; placards were secretly affixed on the walls to the same purpose; offers were made, that, upon giving proper securities, his guilt should be openly proved: But after one proclamation from the court, offering a reward and indemnity to any one that would discover the author of that villainy, greater vigilance was employed in searching out the spreaders of the libels and reports against Bothwel, and the Queen, than in tracing the causes of the King's murder, or detecting the regicides^m.

THE earl of Lenox, who lived at a distance from the court, in poverty and contempt, was roused by the report of his son's murder, and wrote to the Queen, imploring speedy justice against the assassins; among whom he named the earl of Bothwel, Sir James Balfour, and Gilbert Balfour his brother, David Chalmers, and four others of the Queen's household; all of them persons who had been mentioned in the placards affixed on the walls at Edinburghⁿ. Mary took his demand of speedy justice in a very literal sense: and allowing only fifteen days for the examination of this important affair, she sent a citation to Lenox, requiring him to appear in court, and prove his charge

in order to account for the condition of his body. There are many instances that men's lives have been saved who have been blown up in ships. Had Henry fallen on water he had not probably been killed.

¹ Melvil, p. 78. Cabbala, p. 136. ^m Anderson's Collections vol. II. p. 38. vol. IV. p. 167, 168. Spotswood, p. 200. Keith, p. 374. ⁿ Keith, p. 372. Anderson, vol. II. p. 3.

against

against Bothwel°. This nobleman, meanwhile, and all the other persons, accused by Lenox, enjoyed their full liberty[°]; Bothwel himself was continually surrounded with armed men[°]; took his place in council[°]; lived during some time in the house with Mary[°]; and seemed to possess all his wonted confidence and familiarity with her. Even the castle of Edinburgh, a place of great consequence, in this critical time, was entrusted to his creature, Sir James Balfour, who had himself been publicly charged as an accomplice in the King's murder[°]. Lenox, who had come as far as Stirling, with a view of appearing at the trial, was informed of all these circumstances; and reflecting on the small train which attended him, he began to entertain very just apprehensions from the power, insolence, and temerity of his enemy. He wrote to Mary, desiring that the day of trial might be prorogued; and conjured her by all the regard which she bore to her own honour, to employ more leisure and deliberation in determining a question of such extreme moment[°]. No regard was paid to his application: The jury was enclosed, of which the earl of Caithness was chancellor; and tho' Lenox, foreseeing this precipitation, had ordered Cuninghame, one of his retinue, to appear in court, and protest in his name, against the acquittal of the criminal, the jury, proceeded to a verdict[°]. The verdict was such as it behoved them to give, where neither accuser nor witness appeared; and Bothwel was absolved from the King's murder. The jury, however apprehensive that their verdict would give great scandal, and perhaps expose them afterwards to some dan-

CHAP.
XL.
1567.

12th April

° Keith, p. 373. ° Ibid. p. 374. 375. ° Ibid. p. 405.

° Anderson, vol. I. p. 38, 40, 50, 52. ° Ibid. vol. II. p. 274.

° Spotswood, p. 201. ° Keith p. 375. Anderson, vol. I. p. 52.

° Keith, p. 376. Anderson, vol. II. p. 106. Spotswood, p. 201.

ger,

CHAP.

XL.

1567.

ger, entered a protest, in which they represented the necessity of their proceedings^y. It is remarkable, that the indictment was laid against Bothwel for committing the crime on the ninth of February, not the tenth, the real day on which Henry was assassinated^z. The interpretation generally put upon this error, too gross, it was thought, to have proceeded from mistake, was, that the secret council by whom Mary was governed, not trusting entirely to precipitation, violence, and authority, had provided this plea, by which they ensured, at all adventures, a plausible pretence for acquitting Bothwel.

Two days after this extraordinary transaction, a Parliament was held; and tho' the sentence in favour of Bothwel was attended with such circumstances as strongly confirmed, rather than diminished, the general opinion of his guilt, he was the person chosen to carry the royal sceptre on the first meeting of that national assembly^a. In this Parliament, a rigorous act was made against those who set up defamatory placards; but no notice was taken of the King's murder^b. The favour which Mary openly bore to Bothwel, kept every one in awe; and the effects of this terror appeared more plainly in another transaction, which ensued immediately upon the dissolution of the Parliament. A bond or association was framed; in which the subscribers, after relating the acquittal of Bothwel by a legal trial, and a farther offer, which he had made, to prove his innocence by single combat, oblige themselves, in case any person should afterwards impute to him the King's murder, to support him with their whole pow-

^y Spotswood, p. 201. Anderson, vol. I. p. 113.

^z Keith, p. 375. Anderson, vol. II. p. 93. Spotswood, p. 201.

^a Keith, p. 78. Crawford, p. 14. ^b Keith, p. 380. The Queen, in order to gain the people, agreed to an act of Parliament, which established the protestant religion; a concession which she could never before be brought to make.

er against such calumniators. After this promise, which implied no great assurance in Bothwel of his own innocence, the subscribers mentioned the necessity of their Queen's marriage, in order to support the government; and they recommended Bothwel to her as a husband^c. This paper was subscribed by all the considerable nobility there present. In a country, divided by violent factions, such a concurrence in favour of one nobleman, no wise distinguished above the rest, except by his flagitious conduct, could never have been obtained, had not every one been certain, at least firmly persuaded, that Mary was fully determined on this measure^d. Nor would such a motive have sufficed to influence men, commonly so stubborn and intractable, had they not been taken by surprize, been ignorant of each others sentiments, and overawed by the present power of the court, and by the apprehensions of farther violence, from persons so little governed by any rules of honour and humanity. Even with all these circumstances, the subscription to this paper may justly be regarded as a reproach to the nation.

CHAP.

XL.

1567.

24th Apr.

THE subsequent measures of Bothwel were equally precipitate and audacious. Mary having gone to Stirling to pay a visit to her son, he assembled a body of eight hundred horse, on pretence of pursuing some robbers on the borders, and having way-laid her on her return, he seized her person near Edinburgh,

^c Keith, p. 381.

^d Mary herself confessed, in her instructions to the ambassadors, which she sent to France, that Bothwel persuaded all the noblemen, that their application in favour of his marriage was agreeable to her. Keith, p. 389. Anderson, vol. I. p. 94. Murray afterwards produced to Queen Elizabeth's commissioners a paper signed by Mary, by which she permitted them to make this application to her. This permission was a sufficient declaration of her intentions, and was esteemed equivalent to a command. Anderson, vol. IV. p. 59. They even asserted, that the house, in which they met, was surrounded with armed men. Goodal, vol. II. p. 141.

CHAP.
XL.

1567.

April.

and carried her to Dunbar, with an avowed design of forcing her to yield to his purpose. Sir James Melvil, who was in her retinue, was carried along with her; and says not, that he saw any signs of reluctance or constraint: He was even informed, as he tells us by Bothwel's officers, that the whole transaction was managed in concert with her^e. A woman, indeed, of that spirit and resolution, which is acknowledged to belong to Mary, does not usually, on these occasions, give such marks of opposition to *real* violence, as can appear anywise doubtful or ambiguous. Some of the nobility, however, in order to put matters to farther trial, sent her a private message; in which they told her, that, if in reality she lay under force, they would use all their efforts to relieve her. Her answer was, that she had indeed been carried to Dunbar by violence, but since her arrival had been so well treated there, that she willingly remained with Bothwel^f. No one gave themselves thenceforth any solicitude to relieve her from a captivity, which they believed to have proceeded entirely from her own approbation and connivance.

THIS unusual conduct was first ascribed to Mary's sense of the infamy, attending her purposed marriage; and her desire of finding some colour to gloss over the irregularity of her conduct. But a pardon given to Bothwel a few days afterwards, made the public carry somewhat farther their conjectures. In this deed, Bothwel received a pardon for the violence committed on the Queen's person; and for *all other crimes*: A clause, by which the murder of the king was indirectly pardoned. The rape was then conjectured to have been only a contrivance of these politicians, in order to afford a pretence for indirectly pardoning a

^e Melvil, p. 80

^f Spotswood, p. 202.

crime, of which they durst not openly make any mention^s. CHAP. XL.

THESE events passed with such rapidity, that men had no leisure to admire sufficiently one incident, when they were surprized with a new one, equally rare and uncommon. There still, however, remained one difficulty, which, it was not easy to foresee, how the Queen and Bothwel, determined as they were to execute their shameful purpose, could find expedients to overcome. The man, who had procured the subscription of the nobility, recommending him as a husband to the Queen, and who had acted this seeming violence on her person, in order to force her consent, had been married six months before to another woman; to a woman of merit, of a very noble family, sister to the earl of Huntley. But persons blinded with passion, and infatuated with crimes, soon shake off all appearance of decency. A suit was commenced for a divorce between Bothwel and his wife; and this suit was opened at the same instant in two different, or rather opposite courts; in the court of the archbishop of St. Andrews, which was popish, and governed itself by the canon law; and in the new consistorial or commissariot court, which was protestant, and was regulated by the principles of the reformed teachers. The plea advanced in each court, was so calculated as to suit the principles which there prevailed: In the archbishop's court, the pretence of consanguinity was employed, because Bothwel was related to his wife in the fourth degree; in the commissariot court, the accusation of adultery was made use of against him. The parties too who applied for the divorce, were different in the different courts: Bothwel was the person who sued in the former; his wife in the latter. And the suit in both courts was opened, pleaded, examined,

1567.

^s Anderfon, vol. IV. part 2. p 61.

and

CHAP. and decided with the utmost precipitation, and a sentence of divorce was pronounced in four days^b.

XL.

1567.

THE divorce being thus obtained, it was thought proper that Mary should be conducted to Edinburgh, and should there appear before the courts of judicature, and should acknowledge herself to be restored to entire freedom. This was understood to be contrived with a view of obviating all doubts with regard to the validity of her marriage. Orders were then given to publish the banns in the church, between the Queen and the duke of Orkney; for that was the title which he now bore; and Craig, a minister of Edinburgh, was applied to for that purpose. This clergyman, not content with having, for some time, refused compliance, publicly in his sermons condemned the marriage; and exhorted all those who had access to the Queen, to give her their advice against so scandalous an alliance. Being called before the council, to answer for this liberty, he showed a courage which might cover all the nobles with shame, on account of their tameness and servility. He said, that, by the rules of the church, the earl of Bothwell, being convicted of adultery, could not be permitted to marry; that the divorce between him and his former wife, was plainly procured by collusion, as appeared by the precipitation of that sentence, and the sudden conclusion of his marriage with the Queen; and that all the suspicions which prevailed, with regard to the King's murder, and the Queen's concurrence in the former rape, would thence receive undoubted confirmation. He therefore exhorted Bothwell, who was present, no longer to persevere in his present criminal enterprizes; and turning his discourse to the other counsellors, he charged them to employ all their influence with the Queen, in order to divert her from a

^b Anderson, vol. II. p. 280.

measure which would cover her with infamy and dishonour. Not satisfied even with this admonition, he took the first opportunity of informing the public, from the pulpit, of this whole transaction, and expressed to them his fears, that, notwithstanding all remonstrances, their sovereign was still obstinately bent on her fatal purpose. "For himself," he said, "he had already discharged his conscience, and yet again would take heaven and earth to witness, that he abhorred and detested that marriage, as scandalous and hateful in the sight of mankind: But since the Great, as he perceived, either by their flattery or silence, gave countenance to the measure, he besought the Faithful to pray fervently to the Almighty, that a resolution, which was taken contrary to all law, reason, and good conscience, might, by the divine blessing, be turned to the comfort and benefit of the church and kingdom." These speeches offended the court extremely; and Craig was anew summoned before the council, to answer for his temerity in thus passing the bounds of his commission. But he told them, that the bounds of his commission were the word of God, good laws, and natural reason; and were the Queen's marriage tried by any of these three standards, it would appear infamous and dishonourable, and would be so esteemed by the whole world. The council were so over-awed by this heroic behaviour in a private clergyman, that they dismissed him without farther censure or punishment¹.

BUT tho' this transaction might have recalled Bothwell and the Queen of Scots, from their insatiation, and might have instructed them in the dispositions of the people, as well as in their own inability to oppose them; they were still resolute to rush forward to their own manifest destruction. The marriage was ^{15 May.}

¹ Spotswood, p 203. Anderson, vol. II. p. 280.

solemnized

CHAP. XL.
 1567. solemnized by the bishop of Orkney, a protestant, who was afterwards deposed by the church for this scandalous compliance. Few of the nobility appeared at the ceremony; they had most of them, either from shame or fear, retired to their own houses. The French ambassador, Le Croc, an aged gentleman of honour and character, could not be prevailed on, tho' a dependant of the house of Guise, to countenance the marriage by his presence^k. Elizabeth remonstrated, by very friendly letters and messages, against the marriage^l: The court of France made like opposition; but Mary, tho' on all other occasions she was extremely obsequious to the advice of her relations in that country, was here determined to pay no regard to their opinion.

15 May.
 Queen of
 Scots mar-
 ries Both-
 wel.

THE news of these transactions, being carried to foreign countries, filled all Europe with amazement, and threw infamy not only on the principal actors in them, but also on the whole nation, who seemed, by their submission and silence, and even by their declared approbation, to give their sanction to these scandalous practices^m. The Scots, who resided abroad, met with such reproaches, that they durst no where appear in public; and they earnestly exhorted their countrymen at home, to free them from the public odium, by bringing to condign punishment the authors of such atrocious crimes. This intelligence, with a little more leisure for reflection, roused men at last from their lethargy; and the rumours, which, from the very beginningⁿ, had been spread against Mary as if she had concurred in the King's murder, seemed now, by the subsequent transactions, to have received a strong confirmation and authority. It was every where said, that, even tho' no particular and direct

^k Spotswood, p. 203. Melvil, p. 82.

^l Keith, p. 392.

Digges, p. 14.

^m Melvil, p. 82.

Keith, p. 402. Anderson,

vol. I. p. 128, 134.

ⁿ Crawford, p. 11.

Keith, Pref. p. 9.

proofs had as yet been produced of the Queen's guilt, the whole tenor of her late conduct was sufficient, not only to beget suspicion, but to produce entire conviction against her: That her sudden resolution of being reconciled to her husband, whom before she had long and justly hated; her bringing him to court, from which she had banished him by neglects and rigours; her fitting up separate apartments for him; were all of them circumstances, which, tho' trivial in themselves, yet, being compared with the following events, bore a very unfavourable aspect for her: That the least which, after the King's murder, might have been expected in her situation, was a more than usual caution in her measures, and an extreme anxiety to punish the real assassins, in order to free herself from all reproach and suspicion: That no woman, who had any regard to her character, would allow a man, publicly accused of her husband's murder, so much as to approach her presence, far less give him a share in her councils, and endow him with favour and authority: That an acquittal merely in the absence of accusers was very ill fitted to satisfy the public; especially if that absence proceeded from a designed precipitation of the sentence, and from the terror which her known friendship for the criminal had infused into every one: That the very mention of her marriage to such a person, in such circumstances, was horrible; and the contrivances of extorting a consent of the nobility, and of concerting a rape, were gross artifices, more proper to discover her guilt than prove her innocence: That where a woman thus shews a consciousness of merited reproach, and, instead of correcting, provides only thin glosses to cover her exceptionable conduct, she betrays a neglect of fame, which must either be the effect or the cause of the most shameful enormities: That to espouse a man, who had a few days before been so scandalously divorced from his wife; who, to say the least, was believed to have, a few months before, assassinated her husband, was so
contrary

1567.

CHAP. contrary to the plainest rules of behaviour, that no
 XL. pretence of indiscretion or imprudence could ac-
 1567. count for such a conduct: That a woman, who, so
 soon after her husband's death, tho' not attended
 with any extraordinary circumstances, contracts a
 marriage which might, in itself, be the most blame-
 less; cannot escape severe censure; but one who o-
 verlooks, for her pleasure, so many other weighty
 considerations, was equally capable, in gratifying
 her appetites, to neglect every regard to honour, and
 to humanity: That Mary was not ignorant of the
 prevailing opinion of the public, with regard to her
 own guilt, and of the inferences which would every
 where be drawn from her conduct; and therefore,
 if she still continued to pursue measures which gave
 such just offence, she ratified, by her actions, as
 much as by the most formal confession, all the sur-
 mizes and imputations of her enemies: That the
 only circumstance which opposed all these presump-
 tions, was, the benignity and goodness of her pre-
 ceding behaviour, which seemed to remove her from
 all suspicion of such atrocious inhumanity; but that
 the characters of men were extremely variable,
 and the persons who were guilty of the worst ac-
 tions, were not always naturally of the worst and
 most criminal dispositions: That a woman, who,
 in a critical and dangerous moment, had sacrificed
 her honour to a man of abandoned principles, might
 thenceforth be led blindfold by him to the commis-
 sion of the most enormous crimes, and was in rea-
 lity no longer at her own disposal: And that tho'
 one supposition was still left to alleviate her blame,
 viz. that Bothwel, presuming on her affection to-
 wards him, had of himself committed the crime,
 and had never communicated it to her, yet such
 a sudden and passionate love to a man whom she
 had long known, could not easily be accounted
 for, without supposing some degree of preceding
 guilt; and as it appeared that she was not after-
 wards

wards restrained, either by shame or prudence, from CHAP. XL.
incurring the highest reproach and danger, it was
not likely, that a sense of duty or humanity would
have a more powerful influence over her. 1367.

THESE were the sentiments which prevailed throughout Scotland; and as the protestant teachers, who had great authority, had long borne a great animosity towards Mary, the opinion of her guilt was, by that means, the more widely diffused, and made the deeper impression on every one. Some attempts made by Bothwel, and, as it is pretended, with her consent, to get the young prince into his power, excited the most serious attention; and the principal nobility, even many of those who had formerly been constrained to sign the application in favour of Bothwel's marriage, met at Stirling, and formed an association for protecting the prince, and punishing the King murderers*. The earl of Athole himself, a known catholic, was the first author of this confederacy: The earls of Argyle, Morton, Mar, Glen-carne, the lords Boyd, Lindesey, Hume, Semple, Kirkaldy of Grange, Tullibardine, and secretary Lidington, entered zealously into it. The earl of Murray, foreseeing such turbulent times, and being desirous to keep free of these dangerous factions, had, some time before, desired and obtained Mary's permission to retire into France.

LORD Hume was first in arms; and leading a body of eight hundred horse, suddenly invironed the Queen of Scots and Bothwel, in the castle of Borthwic. They found means to make their escape to Dunbar; while the confederate lords were assembling their troops at Edinburgh, and taking measures to effectuate their purpose. Had Bothwel been so prudent as to keep within the fortress of Dunbar, his enemies must have been dissipated for want of pay and subsistence; but hearing that the lords were fallen into distress, he was

* Keith, p. 394.

CHAP. XL. ^{1567.} so rash as to take the field, and advance towards them. The armies met at Carberry Hill, about six miles from Edinburgh; and Mary became soon sensible, that her own troops disapproved of her cause, and were averse to spend their blood in the quarrel^p. After some bravadoes of Bothwel, where he discovered very little courage, she saw no resource but that of holding a conference with Kirkaldy of Grange, and of putting herself, upon some general promises, into the hands of the confederates. She was conducted to Edinburgh, amidst the insults of the populace, who reproached her with her crimes, and even held before her eyes, which ever way she turned, a banner, on which was painted the murder of her husband, and the distress of her infant son^q. Mary, overwhelmed with her calamities, had recourse to tears and lamentations. Mean while Bothwel, during her conference with Grange, fled unattended to Dunbar; and fitting out a few small ships set sail for the Orkneys, where he subsisted during some time by piracy. He was pursued thither by Grange, and his ship was taken, with several of his servants, who afterwards discovered all the circumstances of the King's murder, and were punished for the crime^r. Bothwel himself escaped in a boat, and found means to get a passage to Denmark, where he was thrown into prison, lost his senses, and died miserably about ten years afterwards: An end worthy of his flagitious conduct and behaviour.

Imprisonment of Mary.

THE Queen of Scots, now in the hands of an enraged faction, met with such treatment as a sovereign may naturally expect from subjects who have their future fears to provide against, as well as their present animosity to gratify. It is pretended, that she behaved with a spirit very little suitable to her condition, avowed her inviolable attachment to Bothwel^s, and even wrote him a letter, which the lords intercepted, where she declared, that she would endure any extre-

^p Keith, p. 402. Spotswood, p. 207.

^q Anderson, vol. II. p. 165, 166, &c.

^r Melvil, p. 83, 84.

^s Keith, p. 419.

mity, nay, resign her dignity and power, rather than CHAP. relinquish his affections^t. The malecontents finding XL.
the danger to which they were exposed, in case Mary should finally prevail, thought themselves obliged to proceed with rigour against her; and they sent her next day under a guard to the castle of Lochleven, situated in a lake of that name. The mistress of the house was mother to the earl of Murray; and as she pretended to have been lawfully married to the late King of Scots, she naturally bore an animosity to Mary, and treated her with the utmost harshness and severity. 1567.

ELIZABETH, who was exactly informed of all those events, seemed touched with compassion towards the unfortunate Queen; and all her fears and jealousies being now laid asleep, by the consideration of that ruin and infamy in which Mary's conduct had involved her, she began to reflect on the instability of human affairs, the precarious state of royal grandeur, the danger of encouraging rebellious subjects; and she resolved to employ her authority for alleviating the calamities of her unhappy sister. She sent Sir Nicholas Throckmorton ambassador to Scotland, in order to remonstrate both with Mary and the associated lords: and she gave him instructions which, tho' mixt with some lofty pretensions, were full of that good sense which was so natural to her, and of that generosity which the present interesting situation had called forth. She empowered him to declare in her name to Mary, that the late conduct of that princess, so enormous, and in every respect so unjustifiable, had given her the highest offence; and tho' she felt the movements of pity towards her, she had once determined never to interpose in her affairs, either by advice or assistance, but to

^t Melvil, p. 84. The reality of this letter appears somewhat disputable; chiefly because Murray and his associates never mentioned it in their accusation of her before Queen's Elizabeth's commissioners.

CHAP. abandon her entirely, as a person whose condition was
 XL. totally desperate, and honour irretrievable: That
 1567. she was well assured, that other foreign princes,
 Mary's near relations, had embraced the same resolution; but, for her part, the late events had touched her heart with more tender sympathy, and had made her adopt measures more favourable to the liberty and interests of the unhappy Queen: That she was determined not to see her oppressed by her rebellious subjects, but would employ all her good offices, and even her power, to redeem her from captivity, and place her in such a condition as would at once be compatible with her dignity, and the safety of her subjects: That she entreated her to lay aside all thoughts of revenge, except against the murderers of her husband; and as she herself was his near relation, she was better entitled than the subjects of Mary to interpose her authority on that head, and she therefore besought that princess, if she had any regard to her own honour and safety, not to oppose so just and reasonable a demand: That after those two points were provided for, her own liberty, and the punishment of her husband's assassins, the safety of her infant son was next to be considered; and there seemed no expedient more proper for that purpose, than the sending him to be educated in England: And that, besides the security which would attend his removal from all factions and convulsions, there were many other beneficial consequences, which it was easy to foresee as the result of his education in that country.

THE remonstrances which Throcmorton was instructed to make to the associated lords, were entirely conformable to these sentiments which Elizabeth entertained in Mary's favour. She empowered him to tell them, that whatever blame she might throw on Mary's conduct, any opposition to their sovereign was

▪ Keith, p. 411, 412, &c.

totally unjustifiable, and incompatible with all order and good government: That it belonged not to them to reform, much less to punish, the mal-administration of their prince; and the only arms which subjects could in any case lawfully employ against the supreme authority, were entreaties, counsels, and representations: That if these expedients failed, they were next to appeal by their prayers to Heaven; and to wait with patience till the Almighty, in whose hands are the hearts of princes, should be pleased to turn them to justice and to mercy. That she inculcated not this doctrine because she herself was interested in its observance; but because it was universally received in all well governed states, and was essential to the preservation of civil society: That she required them to restore their Queen to liberty; and promised, in that case, to concur with them in all proper expedients for regulating the government, for punishing the King's murderers, and for guarding the life and liberty of the infant prince: And that if the services which she had lately conferred on the Scottish nation, in protecting them from foreign usurpation, were duly considered by them, they would repose confidence in her good offices, and would esteem themselves blame-worthy, in never having as yet made any application to her*.

ELIZABETH, besides these remonstrances, sent, by Throcmorton some articles of accommodation, which he was to propose to both parties, as expedients for the settlement of public affairs; and tho' these articles included some considerable restraints on the sovereign power, they were in the main calculated for Mary's advantage, and were sufficiently indulgent to her†. The associated lords, who were determined to proceed with greater severity, were apprehensive of Elizabeth's partiality; and being sensible, that Mary would take courage from the protection of that

* Keith, p. 414, 415, 429.

† Ibid. p. 416.

powerful

CHAP. powerful princess^a, they thought proper, after several affected delays, to refuse the English ambassador all access to her person. There were four different schemes proposed in Scotland, for the treatment of the captive Queen: One, that she should be restored to her authority under very strict limitations: The second, that she should be obliged to resign her crown to the prince, be banished the kingdom, and be confined either to France or England; with assurance from the sovereign in whose dominions she should reside, that she should make no attempts to the disturbance of the established government: The third, that she should be publicly tried for her crimes, of which her enemies pretended to have undoubted proofs, and be condemned to perpetual imprisonment: The fourth was still more severe, and required that, after her condemnation, capital punishment should be inflicted upon her. Throcmorton supported the mildest proposal; but tho' he promised his mistress's guarantee for the performance of articles, threatened them with immediate vengeance in case of refusal, and warned them not to draw on themselves, by their violence, the public reproach, which now lay upon the Queen; he found, that excepting secretary Lidington, he had not the good fortune to convince any of the leaders. All councils seemed to tend towards the more severe expedients; and the preachers, in particular, drawing their examples from the rigorous maxims of the Old Testament, which can only be warranted by particular revelations, inflamed the minds of the people against their unhappy sovereign^c.

THERE were several pretenders to the regency of the young prince, after the intended deposition of Mary. The earl of Lenox claimed that authority as

^a Keith, p. 427.
p. 428.

^a Ibid. p. 420.

^b Ibid.

^c Ibid. p. 422, 425.

grandfather to the prince : The duke of Chatelrault, CHAP. XL.
 who was absent in France, had pretensions as next heir to the crown : But the greatest number of the associated lords inclined to the earl of Murray, in whose capacity they had the greatest trust, and who possessed the entire confidence of the preachers and more zealous reformers. All measures being therefore concerted, three instruments were sent to Mary, by the hands of Lord Lindesey and Sir Robert Melvil ; by one of which she was to resign the crown in favour of her son, by another to appoint Murray regent, by the third to name a Council, which should administer the government till his arrival in Scotland. The Queen of Scots, seeing no prospect of relief, lying justly under apprehensions of her life, and believing, that no deed, which she executed during her captivity, could be valid, was prevailed on, after a plentiful effusion of tears, to sign these three instruments ; and she took not the trouble of inspecting any one of them ^d. In consequence of this forced resignation, the young prince was proclaimed King, under the name of James the sixth. He was soon after crowned at Stirling, and the earl of Morton took in his name the coronation-oath ; in which a promise to extirpate heresy was not forgot. Some republican pretensions in favour of the people's power were countenanced in this ceremony ^e ; and a coin was soon struck, on which the famous saying of Trajan was inscribed, *Pro me ; si merear, in me* : For me ; if I deserve it, against me ^f. Throckmorton had orders from his mistress not to assist at the coronation of the King of Scots ^g.

THE council of regency had not long occasion to exercise their authority. The earl of Murray arrived

^d Melvil, p. 85. Spotswood, p. 211. Anderson, vol. III. p. 19.
^e Keith, p. 439, 440. ^f Ibid, p. 440.
 Appen. p. 150. ^g Ibid. p. 430.

CHAP. from France, and took possession of his high office.

XL.

1567.

15th Dec.

He paid a visit to the captive Queen; and spoke to her in a manner which better suited her past conduct than her present condition. This harsh treatment quite extinguished in her breast any remains of affection towards him^a. Murray proceeded afterwards to break, in a more public manner, all terms of decency with her. He summoned a Parliament, and that assembly, after voting that she was undoubtedly an accomplice in her husband's murder, condemned her to imprisonment, ratified her dismissal of the crown, and acknowledged her son for King, and Murray for regent¹. The regent, who was a man of vigour and abilities, employed himself successfully in reducing the kingdom. He bribed Sir James Balfour to surrender the castle of Edinburgh: He constrained the garrison of Dunbar to open their gates: And he demolished that fortress.

BUT tho' every thing thus bore a favourable aspect to the new government, and all men seemed to submit to Murray's authority; a violent revolution, however necessary, can never be effected without great discontents; and it was not likely that in a country, where the government, in its most settled state, possessed a very disjointed authority, a new establishment should meet with no interruption or disturbance. Few considerable men of the nation seemed willing to support Mary, so long as Bothwel was present; but the removal of that obnoxious nobleman had altered the sentiments of many. The duke of Chatelraut, being disappointed of the regency, bore no good will to Murray and his counsellors; and the same sentiments were embraced by all his numerous retainers: Several of the nobility, finding that others had taken the lead among the associators, formed a

^a Melvil. p. 87. Keith, p. 445.
206, & seq.

¹ Anderson, vol. II. p.

1567.

faction apart, and opposed the prevailing power: And besides some remains of duty and affection towards Mary, the malecontent lords, finding every thing carried to extremity against her, were naturally led to embrace her cause, and shelter themselves under her authority. All those, who retained any propensity to the catholic religion, were inclined to join this party; and even the people in general, tho' they had formerly either detested Mary's crimes, or blamed her imprudence, were now moved by her misfortunes to compassionate her present situation, and lamented, that a person, possessed of so many amiable accomplishments, joined to such high dignity, should be treated with such extreme rigour and severity*. Animated by all these motives, many of the principal nobility, now adherents to the Queen of Scots, met at Hamilton, and concerted measures for supporting the cause of that princess.

1568:

WHILE these humours were in fermentation, Mary was employed in contrivances for effecting her escape; and she engaged, by her charms and caresses, a young gentleman, George Douglas, brother to the laird of Lochlevin, to assist her in that enterprize. She even went so far as to give him hopes of espousing her, after her marriage with Bothwel should be dissolved on the plea of force; and she proposed this expedient to the regent, who rejected it. Douglas, however, persevered in his endeavours to free her from captivity; and having all opportunities of access to the house, he was at last successful in the undertaking. He conveyed her in disguise into a small boat, and himself rowed her ashore. She hastened to Hamilton; and the news of her arrival in that place being immediately spread abroad, many of the nobility flocked to her with their forces. A bond of association for her defence was signed by the earls of Ar-

2d May.

* Buchan. lib. xviii. c. 53.

CHAP.
XL.

1568.

gyle, Huntley, Eglington, Crawford, Cassiles, Rothies, Montrose, Southerland, Errol, nine bishops, and nine barons, besides many of the most considerable gentry¹. And in a few days an army, to the number of six thousand men, was assembled under her standard.

ELIZABETH was no sooner informed of Mary's escape, than she discovered her resolution of persevering in the same generous and friendly measures, which she had hitherto pursued. If she had not employed force against the regent, during the imprisonment of that princess, she had been chiefly withheld by the fear of pushing him to greater extremities against her^m; but she had proposed to the court of France an expedient, which, tho' less violent, would have been no less effectual for her service: She desired that France and England should by concert cut off all commerce with the Scots, till they should do justice to their injured sovereignⁿ. She now dispatched Leighton into Scotland to offer both her good offices, and the assistance of her force to Mary; but as she was apprehensive of the entrance of French troops into the kingdom, she desired that the controversy between the Queen of Scots, and her subjects might by that princess be referred entirely to her arbitration, and that no foreign succours should be introduced into Scotland^o.

BUT Elizabeth had not leisure to exert fully her efforts in favour of Mary. The regent made haste to assemble forces; and notwithstanding that his army was inferior in number to that of the Queen of Scots, he took the field against her. A battle was fought at Langside near Glasgow, which was entirely decisive in favour of the associated lords; and tho' the regent,

¹ Keith, p. 475ⁿ Keith, p. 462.

Anderson, vol. IV. p. 26.

^m Ibid. p. 463. Cabbala, p. 141.^o Ibid. p. 473. in the notes. An-

after

after his victory, stopt the bloodshed, yet was the action followed by a total dispersion of the queen's party. That unhappy princess fled southwards from the field of battle with great precipitation, and came, with a few attendants, to the borders of England. She here deliberated concerning her next measures, which would probably prove so important to her future happiness or misery. She found it impossible to remain in her own kingdom: She had an aversion, in her present wretched condition, to return into France, where she had formerly appeared with so much splendor; and was not, besides, provided of a vessel, which could safely convey her thither: The late generous behaviour of Elizabeth made her hope for defence, and even assistance, from that quarter^p; and as the present fears of her domestic enemies were the most urgent, she overlooked all other considerations, and embraced the resolution of taking shelter in England. She embarked on board a fishing-boat in Galloway, and landed the same day at Wirkington in Cumberland, about thirty miles distant from Carlisle; whence she immediately dispatched a messenger to London; notifying her arrival, desiring liberty to visit Elizabeth, and craving her protection, in consequence of former professions of friendship, made her by that princess.

ELIZABETH now found herself in a situation, when it was become necessary to take some decisive resolution with regard to her treatment of the Queen of Scots; and as she had hitherto, contrary to the opinion of Cecil, attended more to the motives of generosity than of policy^q, she was engaged by that prudent minister to weigh anew all the considerations, which occurred in this critical conjuncture. He represented, that the party, which had dethroned Mary, and had at

^p Jebb's Collection, vol. I p. 420.

^q Cabala, p. 140.

CHAP.

XL.

1568.

present assumed the government of Scotland, were always the partizans of the English alliance, and were engaged, by all the motives of religion and of interest, to persevere in their connexions with Elizabeth: That tho' Murray and his friends might complain of some unkind usage during their banishment in England, they would easily forget these grounds of quarrel, when they considered, that Elizabeth was the only ally, on whom they could safely rely, and that their own Queen, by her attachment to the catholic faith, and by her other connexions, excluded them entirely from the friendship of France, and even from that of Spain: That Mary, on the other hand, even before her violent breach with her protestant subjects, was in secret entirely governed by the counsels of the house of Guise; much more, would she implicitly comply with their views, when by her own misconduct the power of that family and of the zealous catholics was become her sole resource and security: That her pretensions to the English crown would render her a very dangerous instrument in their hands; and, were she once able to suppress the protestants in her own kingdom, she would unite the Scots and English catholics, with those of all foreign states, in one confederacy against the religion and government of England: That it behoved Elizabeth therefore to proceed with caution in the design of restoring her rival to the throne; and to take care, both that that enterprize, if undertaken, should be effected by English forces alone, and that full securities should beforehand be provided for the reformers and the reformation in Scotland: That above all, it was requisite to guard carefully the person of that princess; lest, finding this unexpected reserve in the English friendship, she should suddenly take the resolution of flying into France, and should attempt by foreign force to recover possession

possession of her authority: That her desperate fortunes and broken reputation fitted her for any attempt; and her resentment, when she should find herself thus deserted by the Queen, would concur with her ambition and her bigotry, and render her an unrelenting, as well as powerful, enemy to the English government: That if she was once abroad, in the hands of enterprizing catholics, the attack of England would appear to her as easy as that of Scotland; and the only method, she must imagine, of recovering her native kingdom, would be to acquire that crown, to which she would esteem herself equally intitled: That a neutrality in such interesting situations, tho' it might be pretended, could never, without the most extreme danger, be upheld by the Queen; and the detention of Mary was equally requisite, whether the power of England were to be employed in her favour, or against her: That nothing indeed was more becoming a great prince than generosity; yet the suggestions of this noble principle could never, without the utmost imprudence, be consulted in such delicate circumstances as those in which the Queen was at present placed; where her own safety and the interests of her people were intimately concerned in every resolution which she embraced: That tho' the example of successful rebellion, especially in a neighbouring country, could be no wise agreeable to any sovereign, yet Mary's imprudence had been so great, perhaps her crimes so enormous, that the insurrection of subjects, after such provocation, could no longer be regarded as a precedent against other princes: That it was first necessary for Elizabeth to ascertain, in a regular and satisfactory manner, the extent of Mary's guilt, and thence to determine the degree of protection which she ought to afford her, against her discontented subjects: That as no glory could surpass that of defending oppressed innocence, it was equally infamous to patronize vice
and

CHAP.
XL.

1568.

and murder on the throne; and the contagion of such dishonour, would extend itself to all who countenanced or supported it: And that if the crimes of the Scottish princess should, on enquiry, appear as great and certain as was affirmed and believed, every measure against her, which policy should dictate, would thence be justified; or if she should be found innocent, every enterprize, which friendship should inspire, would be acknowledged laudable and glorious.

AGREEABLE to these views, Elizabeth resolved to proceed in a seemingly friendly, but really cautious manner with the Queen of Scots; and she immediately sent orders to Lady Scrope, sister to the duke of Norfolk, a lady who lived in the neighbourhood, to attend on that princess. Soon after she dispatched to her the lord Scrope himself, warden of the marches, and Sir Francis Knolles, vice chamberlain. They found Mary already lodged in the castle of Carlisle; and after expressing the Queen's sympathy with her in her late misfortunes, they told her, that her request of being allowed to visit their sovereign, and of being admitted to her presence, could not at present be complied with: Till she had cleared herself of her husband's murder, of which she was so strongly accused. Elizabeth could not without dishonour show her any countenance, or appear indifferent to the assassination of so near a kinsman^r. So unexpected a check threw Mary into tears; and the necessity of her situation extorted from her a declaration, that she would willingly justify herself to her sister from all imputations, and would submit her cause to the arbitration of so good a friend^s. Two days after, she sent lord Herreis to London with a letter to the same purpose.

^r Anderson, vol. IV. p. 54, 66, 82, 83, 86.

^s Ibid, p, 10, 55, 87.

THIS concession which Mary could scarce avoid, without an acknowledgement of guilt, was the point expected and desired by Elizabeth: She immediately dispatched Midlemore to the regent of Scotland; requiring him both to desist from the farther prosecution of his Queen's party, and to send some persons to London to justify his conduct with regard to her. Murray might justly be startled at receiving a message, which must have appeared somewhat imperious; but as his domestic enemies were numerous and powerful, and England was the sole ally, which he could expect among foreign nations, he was resolved rather to digest the affront than provoke Elizabeth by a refusal. He also considered, that tho' that Queen had hitherto appeared partial to Mary, her interest evidently engaged her to support the King's cause in Scotland: and it was not to be doubted but that penetrating princess would in the end discover this advantage, and would at least afford him a patient and equitable hearing. He therefore replied, that he would himself take a journey into England, attended with other commissioners, and would willingly submit the determination of his cause to Elizabeth^t.

LORD Herreis now perceived, that his mistress had advanced too far in her concessions: He endeavoured to maintain, that Mary could not, without diminution of her royal dignity, submit to a contest with her rebellious subjects before a foreign prince; and he required either present aid from England, or liberty for his Queen to pass over into France. Being pressed, however, with the former agreement before the English council, he again renewed his consent; but in a few days he began anew to recoil, and it was with some difficulty that he was brought to acquiesce in

^t Anderson, vol. IV. p. 13---16.

XL. the first determination^u. These fluctuations, which were incessantly renewed, showed his visible reluctance to the measures pursued by the court of England.

1568.

THE Queen of Scots discovered no less aversion to the trial proposed; and it required all the artifice and prudence of Elizabeth to make her persevere in the agreement to which she had at first consented. This latter princess still said to her, that she desired not, without Mary's consent and approbation, to enter into this question, and pretended only as a friend to hear her justification: That she was confident there would be found no difficulty in refuting all the calumnies of her enemies; and even if her apology should fall short of full conviction, Elizabeth was determined to support her cause, and procure her some reasonable terms of accommodation: And that it was never meant, that she should be cited to a trial on the accusation of her rebellious subjects, but on the contrary, that they should be summoned to appear and justify themselves for their conduct towards her^{*}. Allured by these plausible professions, the Queen of Scots agreed to justify herself by her own commissioners before commissioners which should be appointed by Elizabeth.

DURING these transactions, the lord Scrope and Sir Francis Knolles, who resided with Mary at Carlisle, had leisure to study her character, and to make report of it to Elizabeth. Unbroken by her misfortunes, resolute in her purpose, active in her enterprizes, she aspired to nothing but victory, and was determined to endure any extremity, to undergo any difficulty, and to try every fortune, rather than abandon her cause, or yield the superiority to her enemies. Eloquent, insinuating, affable; she had already convinced all those who approached her, of the innocence of her past conduct; and as she declared her fixed purpose to require

^u Anderson, p. 16—20.

^{*} Ibid. p. 11, 12, 13, 109, 110.
aid

aid of her friends all over Europe, and even to have recourse to infidels and Barbarians, rather than fail of vengeance against her persecutors, it was easy to foresee the danger to which her charms, her spirit, her address, if allowed to operate with their full force, would expose them *v.* The court of England, therefore, who under pretence of guarding her, had already, in effect, detained her close prisoner, were determined to watch her with still greater vigilance. As Carlisle, by its situation on the borders, afforded her great opportunities for contriving her escape, they removed her to Bolton, a seat of lord Scrope's in Yorkshire: And the issue of the controversy between her and the Scots nation was regarded as a subject more momentous to Elizabeth's security and interests, than it had ever hitherto been apprehended.

THE persons, appointed by the English court for the examination of this great cause, were the duke of Norfolk, the earl of Suffex, and Sir Ralph Sadler; and York was named as the place of conference. Lesley, bishop of Ross, the lords Herreis, Levingstone and Boyde, with five persons more, appeared as commissioners from the Queen of Scots. The earl of Murray, regent, the earl of Morton, the bishop of Orkney, lord Lindesey, and the abbot of Dunfermling were appointed commissioners, from the King and kingdom of Scotland. Secretary Ledington, George Buchanan, the famous poet and historian, with some others, were named as their assistants,

It was a great circumstance of Elizabeth's glory, that she was thus chosen umpire between the factions of a neighbouring kingdom, which had, during many centuries, entertained the most violent jealousy and animosity against England; and her felicity was equally rare, in having the fortune and fame of so dangerous a rival, who had long given her the greatest

v Anderson, vol. IV. p. 54, 71, 72, 74, 78, 92.

CHAP.

XL.

1568.

inquietude, now entirely at her disposal. Some circumstances of her late conduct had discovered a bias towards the side of Mary: Her prevailing interests led her to favour the enemies of that princess: The professions of impartiality, which she had made, were open and frequent; and she had so far succeeded, that each side accused her commissioners of partiality towards their adversaries*. She herself appears, by the instructions given them, to have fixed no plan for the decision; but she knew, that the advantages, which she should reap, must be great, whatever issue the cause should take. If Mary's crimes could be ascertained by undoubted proof, she could for ever blast the reputation of that princess, and might justifiably detain her for ever a close prisoner in England: if the evidence fell short of conviction, it was proposed to restore her to her throne, but with such strict limitations, as would leave Elizabeth perpetual arbiter of all differences between the parties in Scotland, and render her in effect absolute mistress of that Kingdom*.

MARY's commissioners, before they gave in their complaints against her enemies in Scotland, entered a protest, that their appearance in the cause should no wise affect the independance of her crown, or be construed as a mark of subordination to England: The English commissioners received this protest, but with a reserve to the claim of England. The complaint of that princess was next read, and contained a detail of all the injuries, which she had suffered, since her marriage with Bothwel: That her subjects had taken arms against her, on pretence of freeing her from captivity; that when she put herself into their hands, they had committed her to close custody in Lochleven; had crowned her son, an infant, in her place; had again taken arms against her after her delivery from

* Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 40.
&c. Goodall, vol. II. p. 110.

* Ibid. 14, 15,

prison; had rejected all her proposals for accommodation; had given battle to her troops; and had obliged her, for the safety of her person, to take shelter in England^b. The earl of Murray, in answer to this complaint, gave a summary and imperfect account of the late transactions: That the earl of Bothwel, the known murderer of the late King, had, a little time after the commission of that crime, seized the person of the Queen and led her to Dunbar; that he acquired such influence over her as to gain her consent to marry him, and he had accordingly procured a divorce from his former wife, and had pretended to celebrate his marriage with the Queen; that the scandal of this transaction, the dishonour which it brought on the whole nation, the danger to which the infant prince was exposed from the attempts of that audacious man, had obliged the nobility to take arms, and oppose his criminal designs and enterprizes; that after the Queen, in order to save him, had thrown herself into their hands, she still discovered such a violent attachment to him, that they found it necessary, for their own and the public safety, to confine her person, during a season, till Bothwel and the other murderers of her husband could be tried and punished for their crimes; and that during this confinement, she had voluntarily, without compulsion or violence, merely from disgust at the inquietude and vexations attending power, resigned her crown to her only son, and had appointed the earl of Murray regent during the minority^c. The Queen's answer to this apology was obvious: That she did not know and never could suspect, that Bothwel, who had been acquitted by a jury, and recommended to her by all the nobility for her husband, was the murderer of the King; that she ever was, and still continues de-

^d Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 52. Goodall, vol. II. p. 128. Haynes, p. 478. ^c Anderson, vol. IV. part. 2. p. 64 & seq. Goodall, vol. II. p. 144.

CHAP.

XL.

1568.

firous, that, if he be guilty, he may be brought to condign punishment; that her resignation of the crown was extorted from her by the well-grounded fears of her life, and even by the direct menaces of violence; and that Throcmorton, the English ambassador, as well as others of her friends, had advised her to sign that paper as the only means of saving herself from the last extremity, and had assured her that, a consent, given under these circumstances, could never have any force or validity ^d.

So far the Queen of Scots seemed plainly to have the advantage in the contest; and the English commissioners might have been surprized, that Murray had made so weak a defence, and had suppressed all the material imputations against that princess, on which his party had ever so strenuously insisted, had not some private conferences previously informed them of the secret. Mary's commissioners had boasted, that Elizabeth, from regard to her kinswoman, and from her desire of maintaining the rights of sovereigns, was determined, however criminal the conduct of that princess might appear, to restore her to the throne ^e; and Murray, reflecting on some past measures of the English court, began to apprehend that there were but too just grounds for their expectations. He believed, that Mary if he would agree to conceal the most violent part, of the accusation against her, would submit to any reasonable terms of accommodation; but if he once proceeded so far as to charge her with the whole of her guilt, no composition could afterwards take place; and should she ever be restored, either by the power of Elizabeth, or the assistance of her other friends, he and his party must be exposed to her most severe and implacable vengeance ^f. He resolved therefore not to venture rashly on a measure, which it would be im-

^d Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 60. & seq. Goodall, vol. II. p. 162.

^e Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 45. Goodall, vol. II. p. 127.

^f Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 47, 48. Goodall, vol. II. p. 159.

possible

possible for him ever to recal; and he paid privately a visit to Norfolk and the other English commissioners, confessed his scruples, laid before them the evidences of the Queen's guilt, and desired to have some security for Elizabeth's protection, in case these evidences should, upon examination, appear entirely satisfactory. Norfolk was not secretly displeased with these Scruples of the regent². He had ever been a partizan of the Queen of Scots: Secretary Ledington, who began also to incline to that party, and was a man of singular address and capacity, had engaged him to embrace farther Views in her favour, and even to think of espousing her: And tho' that duke confessed³, that the proofs against Mary seemed to him unquestionable, he encouraged Murray in his present resolution not to produce them publickly in the conferences before the English commissioners.¹

NORFOLK, however, was obliged to transmit to court the queries proposed by the regent. These queries consisted of four particulars: Whether the English commissioners had authority from their sovereign to pronounce any sentence against Mary, in case her guilt should be fully proved before them? Whether they would promise to exercise that authority, and proceed to an actual sentence? Whether the Queen of Scots, if she was found guilty, should be delivered into the hands of the regent, or, at least, so secured in England, that she never should be able to disturb the tranquillity of Scotland? and, Whether Elizabeth would also, in that case, promise to acknowledge the young King, and protect the regent in his authority⁴?

ELIZABETH, when these queries, with the other transactions, were laid before her, began to think that

² Crawford, p. 92. Melvil, p. 94. 95. Haynes, p. 574.

³ Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 77.

¹ Ibid. p. 57, 77.

State Trials, vol. I. p. 76.

⁴ Anderson, vol. IV. part 2.

p. 55. Goodall, vol. II. p. 130.

they

CHAP. they pointed towards a conclusion more decisive and
 XL. more advantageous than she had hitherto expected.
 1568. She determined, therefore, to bring the matter into full light: and under pretext that the distance from her Person retarded the proceedings of her commissioners she ordered them to come to London, and there continue the conferences. On their appearance, she immediately joined in commission with them, some of the most considerable of her council; Sir Nicholas Bacon lord keeper, the earls of Arundel and Leicester, lord Clinton, admiral, and Sir William Cecil, secretary¹. The Queen of Scots, who knew nothing of these secret motives, and who expected, that fear or decency would still restrain Murray from proceeding to any violent accusation against her, expressed an entire satisfaction in this adjournment, and declared, that the affair, being under the immediate inspection of Elizabeth, was now in the hands where she most desired it^m. The conferences were accordingly continued at Hampton-Court; and Mary's commissioners, as before, made no scruple to be present at them.

THE Queen, meanwhile, gave a satisfactory answer to all Murray's demands; and having declared, that tho' she wished and hoped, from the present enquiry, to be entirely convinced of Mary's innocence, yet if the event should prove contrary, and if that princess should appear guilty of her husband's murder, she should, for her part, deem her ever after unworthy of a throneⁿ. The regent, encouraged by this declaration, opened more fully his charge against the Queen of Scots; and after expressing his reluctance to proceed to that extremity, and protesting, that nothing but the necessity of self-defence, which must not be abandoned for any delicacy, could have engaged him in such a measure, he proceeded to accuse her in plain

¹ Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 99. ^m Ibid. p. 95. Goodall, vol. II. p. 177, 179. ⁿ Goodall, vol. II. p. 199.

terms of participation and consent in the assassination of the King °. The earl of Lenox too appeared before the English commissioners; and imploring vengeance for the murder of his son, accused Mary as an accomplice with Bothwel in that enormity ^{P.}

CHAP.

XL.

1568.

WHEN this charge was so unexpectedly given in, and copies of it transmitted to the bishop of Ross, lord Herreis, and the rest of Mary's commissioners, they absolutely refused to return any answer; and they grounded their silence on very extraordinary reasons: They had orders, they said, from their mistress, if any thing was advanced that might touch her honour, not to make any defence, as she was a sovereign princess, and could not be subject to any tribunal; and they required, that she should previously be admitted to Elizabeth's presence, to whom, and to whom alone, she was determined to justify her innocence †. They forgot, that the conferences were at first begun, and were still continued, with no other view than to clear her from the accusations of her enemies; that Elizabeth had ever pretended to enter into them only as her friend, by her own consent and approbation, not as assuming any superior jurisdiction over her; that that princess had from the beginning refused to admit her to her presence, till she should clear herself of the crimes imputed to her; that she had therefore discovered no new signs of partiality by her perseverance in that resolution; and that tho' she had granted an audience to the earl of Murray and his colleagues, she had previously conferred the same honour on Mary's commissioners ‡; and her conduct was so far entirely equal to both parties §.

• Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 115, & seq. Goodall, vol. II. p. 206.

° Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 122. Goodall, vol. II. p. 208.

† Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 125, & seq. Goodal, vol. II. 184, 211, 217.

‡ Lesley's Negotiations in Anderson, vol. III. p. 25. Haynes, p. 487.

§ Mary's complaints of the Queen's partiality in admitting Murray to a conference was a mere pretext in order to break off the conference. She indeed employs that reason in her commissi-

CHAP.

XL.

1568.

As the Queen of Scots refused to give in any answer to Murray's charge, the necessary consequence seemed to be, that there could be no farther proceedings in the trial. But tho' this silence might be interpreted as a presumption against her, it did not fully answer the purpose of those English ministers, who were the enemies of that princess. They still desired to have in their hands the proofs of her guilt; and in order to draw them with decency from the regent, a judicious artifice was employed by Elizabeth. Murray was called before the English commissioners; and reproved by them, in the Queen's name, for the atrocious imputations which he had the temerity to throw upon his sovereign: But tho' the earl of Murray they added, and the other commissioners had so far forgot the duty of allegiance to their prince, the Queen never would overlook what she owed to her friend, her neighbour, and her kinswoman; and she therefore desired to know what they could say in their own justification. Murray, thus urged, made no difficulty of producing the proofs of his charge against the Queen of Scots; and among the rest, some love-letters and sonnets of her's to Bothwel, wrote all in her own hand, and two other papers, one wrote in her own hand, another signed by her, and wrote by the earl of Huntley; each of which contained a promise of marriage with Bothwel, made before the trial and acquittal of that nobleman.

ALL these important papers had been kept by Bothwel in a silver box or casket, which had been given him by Mary, and which had belonged to her first husband Francis; and tho' the princess had enjoined

on for that purpose (see Goodall, vol. II. p. 184) but in her private letter, they are directed to make use of that commission to prevent her honour from being attacked. Goodall, vol. II. p. 183. It was the accusation therefore she was only afraid of.

^t Anderson, vol. IV. part. 2. p. 147. Goodall, vol. II. p. 233.

him

him to burn the letters as soon as he had read them, he had thought proper to preserve them carefully, as pledges of her fidelity, and had committed them to the custody of Sir James Balfour, deputy-governor of the castle of Edinburgh. When that fortress was besieged by the associated lords, Bothwell sent a servant to receive the casket from the hands of the deputy-governor. Balfour delivered it to the messenger; but as he had at that time received some disgust from Bothwell, and was secretly negotiating an agreement with the ruling party, he took care, by conveying private intelligence to the earl of Morton, to make the papers be intercepted by him. They contained incontestible proofs of Mary's criminal correspondence with Bothwell, of her consent to the King's murder, and of her concurrence in that rape which Bothwell pretended to commit upon her^a. Murray fortified this evidence by some testimonies of correspondent facts^x; and he added, sometime after, the dying confession of one Hubert, or French Paris, as he was called, a servant of Bothwell's, who had been executed for the King's murder and who directly charged the Queen with her being accessory to that criminal enterprise^y.

MARY's commissioners had used every expedient to ward this blow, which they saw coming upon them, and against which, it appears, they were not provided of any proper defence. As soon as Murray opened his charge, they endeavoured to turn the conferences from an enquiry into a negotiation; and tho' informed by the English commissioners, that nothing could be more dishonourable for their mistress, than to enter into a treaty with such undutiful subjects, before she had justified herself from those enormous

^a Anderson, vol. II. p. 115. Goodall vol. II. p. 1.

^x Anderson, vol. II. part 2. p. 165, &c. Goodall, vol. II. p. 243.

^y Anderson, vol. II. p. 192. Goodall, vol. II. p. 76

CHAP.
XL.

1568.

imputations which had been thrown upon her, they still insisted, that Elizabeth should settle terms of accommodation between Mary and her enemies in Scotland². They maintained, that till their mistress had given in her answer to Murray's charge, his proofs could neither be called for nor produced^a; and finding, that the English commissioners were still determined to proceed in the Method which had been projected, they finally broke off the conferences, and never would make any reply. These papers have all of them been since published. The objections made to their authenticity, are in general of small force: But were they ever so specious, they cannot now be hearkened to; since Mary, at the time when the truth could have been fully cleared, did, in effect, ratify the evidence against her, by recoiling from the enquiry at the very critical moment, and refusing to give any answer to the accusation of her enemies^b.

² Anderson, vol. II. part 2. p. 135, 139. Goodall, vol. II. p. 224.

^a Anderson, vol. IV. part. 2. p. 139, 145. Goodall, vol. II. p. 228.

^b We shall not enter into a long discussion of the authenticity of these letters: We shall only remark in general, that the chief objections against them are, that they are supposed to have passed through the earl of Morton's hands, the least scrupulous of all Mary's enemies; and that they are, to the last degree, indecent, and even somewhat inelegant, such as it is not likely she would write. But to these presumptions we may oppose the following considerations. (1.) Though it be not difficult to counterfeit a subscription, it is very difficult, and almost impossible, to counterfeit several pages, so as to resemble exactly the hand writing of any person. These letters were examined and compared with Mary's hand writing, by the English privy council, and by a great many of the nobility, among whom were several partizans of that princess. They might have been examined by the Bishop of Ross, Herreis, and Mary's commissioners. The regent must have expected, that they would be very critically examined by them: and had they not been able to stand that test, he was only preparing a scene of confusion to himself. Bishop Lesly expressly declines the comparing the hands, which he calls no legal proof. Goodall, vol. II. p. 389. (2.) The letters are very long, much longer than they needed to have been, in order to serve the purposes of Mary's enemies; a circumstance, which increased the difficulty, and exposed any forgery the more to the risk of a detection. (3.) They are not so gross and palpable, as forgeries commonly are; for they left still a pretext for Mary's friends to assert, that their meaning was strained to make

BUT

But Elizabeth, though she had seen enough for CHAP.
XL.
her own satisfaction, was determined, that the most

1568.

them appear criminal; see Goodall, vol. II. p. 361. (4.) There is a long contract of marriage, said to be wrote by the earl of Huntley, and signed by the Queen, before Bothwell's acquital. Would Morton, without any necessity, have thus doubled the difficulties of the forgery, and the danger of detection? (5.) The letters are indiscreet, but such was apparently Mary's conduct at that time: They are inelegant; but they have a careless natural air, like letters hastily wrote between familiar friends. (6.) They contain such a variety of particular circumstances, as no body could have thought of inventing, especially as they must necessarily have afforded her many means of detection. (7.) We have not the originals of the letters, which were in French: We have only a Scots and Latin translation from the original, and a French translation professedly done from the Latin. Now it is remarkable, that the Scots translation is full of Gallicisms, and is clearly a translation from a French original. Such as *make fault, faire des fautes; make it seem that I believe, faire semblant de le croire; make brek, faire breche; this is my first journay, c'est ma premiere journée; have you not desire to laugh, n'avez vous pas envie de rire; the place will bald unto the death, la place tiendra jusqu'a la mort; he may not come forth of the house this long time, il ne peut pas sortir du logis de long tems; to make me advertisement, faire m'avertir; put order to it, mettre ordre a cela; discharge your heart; decharger votre cœur; make gud watch, faites bon garde, &c.* (8.) There is a conversation, which she mentions, between herself and the King one evening: but Murray produced before the English commissioners, the testimony of one Crawford, a gentleman of the earl of Lenox, who swore, that the King, on her departure from him, gave him an account of the same conversation. (9.) There seems very little reason why Murray and his associates should run the risk of such a dangerous forgery, which must have rendered them infamous, if detected; since their cause, from Mary's known conduct, even without these letters, was sufficiently good and justifiable. (10.) Murray exposed these letters to the examination of persons qualified to judge of them; the Scots council, the Scots Parliament, Queen Elizabeth and her council, who were possessed of a great number of Mary's genuine letters. (11.) He gave Mary herself an opportunity of refuting and exposing him, if she had chosen to lay hold of it. (12.) The letters tally so well with all the other parts of her conduct during that transaction, that these proofs throw the strongest light on each other. (13.) The duke of Norfolk, who had examined these papers, and who favoured so much Queen Mary, that he intended to marry her, and in the end lost his life in her cause, yet believed them authentic, and was fully convinced of her guilt. This appears not only from his letters above mentioned, to Queen Elizabeth and her ministers but by his secret acknowledgement to Banister, his most trusty confidant. See State Trials, vol. I. p. 81. In the conferences between the duke,

CHAP. XL. eminent persons of her court should also be acquainted with these transactions, and should be convinced

1568.

secretary Lidington, and the bishop of Ross, all of them zealous partizans of that princess, the same thing seems always to be taken for granted, *Ibid.* p. 74, 75. See farther MS. in the Advocate's library. A. 3. 28. p. 314. from Cott. lib. Calig. c. 9 (14.) I need not repeat the presumption drawn from Mary's refusal to answer. The only excuse for her silence, is, that she suspected Elizabeth to be a partial judge: It was not, indeed, the interest of that princess to acquit and justify her rival and competitor; and we accordingly find that Lidington, from the secret information of the duke of Norfolk, informed Mary, by the bishop of Ross, that the Queen of England never meant to come to a decision; but only to get into her hands the proofs of Mary's guilt, in order to blast her character. See *State Trials*, vol. I. p. 77. But this was a better reason for declining the trial altogether than for breaking it off, on frivolous pretences, the very moment the chief accusation was unexpectedly opened against her. Tho' she could not expect Elizabeth's final decision in her favour, it was of importance to give a satisfactory answer, if she had any, to the accusation of the Scots commissioners. That answer could have been dispiriting for the conviction of the public, of foreign nations, and of posterity. And surely after the accusation and proofs were in Queen Elizabeth's hands, it could do no hurt to give in the answers. Mary's information, that the Queen never intended to come to a decision, could be no obstacle to her justification. (15.) The very disappearance of these letters, is a presumption of their authenticity. That event can be accounted for no way but from the care of King James's friends who were desirous to destroy every proof of his mother's crimes. The disappearance of Morton's narrative, and of Crawford's evidence, from the Cotton library, Calig. c. 1. must have proceeded from a like cause. See MS. in the Advocate's library, A. 3. 29. p. 88.

I find an objection made to the authenticity of the letters, drawn from the vote of the Scots privy council, which affirms the letters to be wrote and subscribed by Queen Mary's own hand; whereas the copies given in to the Parliament a few days after, were only wrote, not subscribed. See *Goodall*, vol. II. p. 64, 67. But it is not considered, that this circumstance is of no manner of force: There were certainly letters, true or false, laid before the Council; and whether the letters were true or false, this mistake proceeds equally from the inaccuracy or blunder of the clerk. The mistake is easily accounted for: The letters were only wrote by her; the second contract with Bothwell was only subscribed. A proper accurate distinction was not made; and they are all said to be wrote and subscribed. A late writer, Mr. *Goodall*, has endeavoured to prove, that these letters clash with chronology, and that the Queen was not in the Places mentioned in the letters, on the days there assigned: To confirm this he, produces charters and other deeds signed by the Queen, where the
date

of the equity of her proceedings. She ordered her privy-council to be assembled; and that she might render the matter more solemn and authentic, she added to them the earls of Northumberland, Westmoreland, Shrewsbury, Worcester, Huntingdon, and Warwic. All the proceedings of the English commissioners were read to them: The evidences produced by Murray were perused: A great number of letters, wrote by Mary to Elizabeth, were laid before them, and the hand-writing compared with that of the letters delivered in by the regent: The refusal of the Queen of Scots commissioners to make any reply, was related:

C H A P.
XL.

1568.

date and place do not agree with the letters. But it is well known, that the date of charters, and such like grants, is no proof of the real day on which they were signed by the sovereign. Papers of that kind commonly pass through different offices: The date is affixed by the first office; and may precede very long the day of the signature.

The account given by Morton of the manner in which the papers came into his Hands, is very natural. When he gave it to the English commissioners, he had reason to think it would be canvassed with all the severity of able adversaries, interested in the highest degree to refute it. It is probable, that he could have confirmed it by many circumstances and testimonies; since they declined the contest.

The sonnets are inelegant; insomuch, that both Brantome and Ronfard, who knew Queen Mary's stile, were assured, when they saw them, that they could not be her composition. Jebb, vol. II. p. 478. But no person is equal in his productions, especially one whose style is so little formed as Mary's must be supposed to be. Not to mention, that such dangerous and criminal enterprizes leave little tranquillity of mind for elegant, poetical compositions.

In a word, Queen Mary might easily have conducted the whole conspiracy against her husband, without opening her mind to any one person except Bothwel, and without writing a scrap of paper about it; but it was very difficult to have conducted it, so as that her conduct should not betray her to men of discernment. In the present case, her conduct was so gross as to betray her to every body; and fortune threw into her enemies hands, papers by which they could convict her. The same infatuation and imprudence, which happily is the usual attendant of great crimes, will account for both. It is proper to observe, that there is not one circumstance of the foregoing narrative, contained in the history, that is taken from Knox, Buchanan, or even Thuanus, or, indeed, from any suspected authority.

And

CHAP.

XL.

1568.

And on the whole Elizabeth told them, that as she had, at first, thought it improper, that Mary, after such horrid crimes were imputed to her, should be admitted to her presence, before she had, in some measure, justified herself from the charge; so now, when her guilt was confirmed by so many plausible evidences, and all answer refused, she must, for her part, persevere more steadily in that resolution^c. Elizabeth next called in the Queen of Scots commissioners, and after observing, that she deemed it much more decent for their mistress to continue the conferences, than to require the liberty of justifying herself in person; she told them, that Mary might either send her reply by a person whom she trusted, or deliver it herself to some English noblemen, whom Elizabeth should appoint to wait upon her: But as to her resolution of making no reply at all, she must regard it as the strongest confession of guilt; nor could they ever be esteemed her friends, who advised her to that method of proceeding^d. These topics she enforced still more strongly in a letter which she wrote to Mary herself^e.

THE Queen of Scots had no other subterfuge from these pressing remonstrances than still to demand a personal conference with Elizabeth: A concession which, she was sensible, could never be granted^f; both because Elizabeth knew, that that expedient could decide nothing, and because it brought matters to extremity, which that princess desired to avoid. In order to keep herself better in countenance, Mary thought of another device. Even after all the conferences were broke off, she ordered her commissioners to accuse the earl of Murray and his associates as the

^c Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 170, &c. Goodall, vol. II. p. 254.

^d Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 179, &c. Goodall, vol. II. p. 268.

^e Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 183. Goodall, vol. II. p. 269.

^f Cabala, p. 157.

murderers of the King^s: But this accusation, coming CHAP.
XL.
1568.
so late, being extorted merely by a complaint of Murray's, and being unsupported by any proof, could only be regarded as an angry retaliation upon her enemy^h. She also desired to have copies of the papers

^s Goodall, vol. II. p. 280.

^h Unless we take this angry accusation, advanced by Queen Mary, to be an argument of Murray's guilt, there remains not the least presumption which should lead us to suspect him to have been any wise an accomplice in the King's murder. That Queen never pretended to give any proof of the charge; and her commissioners affirmed at the time, that they themselves knew of none, tho' they were ready to maintain its truth by their mistress's orders, and would produce such proof as she should send them. It is remarkable, that, at that time, it was impossible for either her or them to produce any proof; because the conferences before the English commissioners were previously broke off.

It is true, the bishop of Ross, in an angry pamphlet, wrote by him under a borrowed name, (where it is easy to say any thing) affirms, that lord Herreis, a few days after the King's death, charged Murray with the guilt, openly, to his face, at his own table. That nobleman, as Lesly relates the matter, affirmed, that Murray, riding in Fife with one of his servants, the evening before the commission of that crime, said to him among other talk, *This night 'ere morning the lord Darnley shall lose his Life.* See Anderson, vol. I. p. 75. But this is only hearsay of Lesly's, concerning a hearsay of Herreis's; and contains a very improbable fact. Would Murray, without any use or necessity, communicate to a servant, such a dangerous and important secret, merely by way of conversation? We may also observe, that lord Herreis himself was one of Queen Mary's commissioners who accused Murray. Had he ever heard this story, or given credit to it, was not that the time to have produced it; and not have affirmed, as he did, that he, for his part, knew nothing of Murray's guilt. See Goodall, vol. II. p. 307.

The earls of Huntley and Argyle accuse Murray of this crime; but the reason which they assign is most ridiculous. He had given his consent to Queen Mary's divorce from the King; therefore he was the King's murderer. See Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 192. It is a sure argument, that these earls knew no better proof against Murray, otherwise they would have produced it, and not have insisted on so absurd a presumption. Was not this also the time for Huntley to deny his writing Mary's contract with Bothwel, if that paper had been a forgery?

Murray could have no motive to commit that crime. The King, indeed, bore him some ill-will? but the King himself was become so despicable, both from his own ill-conduct and the Queen's aversion to him, that he could neither do good nor harm to any body. To judge by the event, in any case, is always absurd; but more
given

CHAP. given in by the regent ; but as she still persisted in her
 XL. resolution to make no reply, this demand was finally
 refused her ⁱ.

1568.

As Mary had thus put an end to the conference, the regent expressed great impatience to return into Scotland ; and he complained, that his enemies had taken advantage of his absence, and had thrown the whole government into confusion. Elizabeth, therefore, dismissed him ; and granted him a loan of five thousand pounds, to bear the charges of his journey ^k. During the conference at York, the duke of Chatelrault arrived at London, in passing from France ; and as the Queen knew, that he was engaged in Mary's party, and had very plausible pretensions to the regency of the King of Scots ; she thought proper to detain him till after Murray's departure. But notwithstanding these marks of favour, and some other assistance, which she secretly gave the regent ⁱ, she still declined acknowledging the young King, or treating with Murray as regent of Scotland.

ORDERS were given for removing the Queen of Scots from Bolton, a place surrounded with catholics, to Tutbury in the county of Stafford ; where she was put under the custody of the earl of Shrewsbury. Elizabeth entertained hopes, that that princess, discouraged by her misfortunes, and confounded by the late transactions, would be glad to secure a safe retreat from all the tempests, with which she had been agitated ; and she promised to bury every thing in oblivion, provided Mary would agree, either to resign voluntarily her crown, or to associate

especially in the present. The King's murder, indeed, procured Murray the regency : But much more Queen Mary's ill-conduct and imprudence, which he could not possibly foresee, and which never would have happened, had she been entirely innocent.

ⁱ Goodall, vol. II. p. 253, 283, 289. 310, 311. Haynes, vol. I. p. 492.

^k Rymer, tom. XV. p. 677.

^l MS. in the Advocate's library. A. 3, 29. p. 128, 129, 130, from Cott. Lib. Cal. c. 1.

her

her son with her in the government; and the administration to remain, during his minority, in the hands of the earl of Murray^m. But that high-spirited princess refused all treaty upon such terms, and declared that her last words should be those of a Queen of Scotland. Besides many other reasons, she said, which fixed her in that resolution, she knew, that if, in the present emergence, she made such concessions, her submission would be universally deemed an acknowledgment of guilt, and would ratify all the calumnies of her enemiesⁿ.

MARY still insisted upon the alternative of two demands; either that Elizabeth should assist her in recovering her authority, or should give her liberty to retire into France, and make trial of the friendship of other princes: And as she asserted, that she had come voluntarily into England, invited by many former professions of amity, she thought that one of these requests could not, without the most extreme injustice, be refused her. But Elizabeth, sensible of the danger, which attended either of these proposals, was secretly resolved to detain her still a captive; and as her retreat into England had been very little voluntary, her claim upon the Queen's generosity appeared much less urgent than she was willing to pretend. Necessity, it was thought, would to the prudent justify her detention: Her past misconduct would apologize for it to the equitable: And tho' it was foreseen, that compassion for her situation, joined to her intrigues and insinuating behaviour, would, while she remained in England, excite the zeal of her friends, especially of the catholics; these inconveniencies were esteemed much less than those which attended any other expedient. Elizabeth trusted also to her own address, for eluding all those difficulties; She proposed to avoid breaking absolutely with the Queen of Scots, to keep

^m Goodall, vol. ii. p. 295.

ⁿ Ibid. p. 301.

CHAP.

XL.

1568.

her always in hopes of accommodation, to negotiate perpetually with her, and still to throw the blame of not coming to any conclusion, either on unforeseen accidents, or on the obstinacy and perverseness of others.

WE come now to mention some English affairs, which we left behind us, that we might not interrupt our narration of the events in Scotland, which form so material a part of the present reign. The term, fixed by the treaty of Chateau-Cambresis for the restitution of Calais expired in 1567; and Elizabeth, after making her demand at the gates of that city, sent Sir Thomas Smith to Paris; and that minister, in conjunction with Sir Henry Norris, her ordinary ambassador, enforced her pretensions. Conferences were held on that head, without coming to any conclusion. The chancellor De L'Hopital told the English ambassadors, that tho' France by an article of the treaty was obliged to restore Calais on the expiration of eight years, there was another article of the same treaty, which now deprived Elizabeth of all right, that could accrue to her by that Engagement: That it was agreed, if the English should, during that interval, commit hostilities upon France, they should instantly forfeit all claim to Calais; and the taking possession of Havre and Dieppe, with whatever pretences that measure might be covered, was a plain violation of the peace between the nations: That tho' these places were not taken by force, but put into Elizabeth's hands by the governors; these governors were rebels; and a correspondence with such offenders was the most flagrant Injury, which could be committed to any sovereign: That in the treaty, which ensued upon the expulsion of the English from Normandy, the French ministers had absolutely refused to make any mention of Calais, and had thereby declared their intention to take

take advantage of the title which had accrued to the crown of France: And that tho' a general clause had been inserted, implying a reservation of all claims; this concession could not avail the English, who at that time possessed no just claim to Calais, and had previously forfeited all pretensions to that fortress°. The Queen was no wise surprized at hearing these allegations; and as she knew that the French court intended not from the first to make restitution, much less, after they could defend their refusal by such plausible reasons, she thought it better for the present to submit to the loss, than to pursue a doubtful title by a war both dangerous and expensive, as well as unseasonable^p.

CHAP.
XL.
1568.

ELIZABETH entered anew into negotiations for marrying the archduke Charles; and she seemed at present to have no great motive of policy, which might induce her to make this fallacious offer: But as she was very rigorous in the Terms insisted on, and refused him all power and title, and even the exercise of his religion in England, the treaty came to nothing; and that prince, despairing of success in his addresses, married the daughter of Albert, duke of Bavaria^q.

° Haynes, p. 587.
p. 407, 408.

^p Camden, p. 406.

^q Ibid.

C H A P. XL.

Character of the Puritans.—Duke of Norfolk's conspiracy.—Insurrection in the north.—Assassination of the Earl of Murray.—A Parliament.—Civil wars of France.—Affairs of the Low Countries.—New conspiracy of the duke of Norfolk.—Trial of Norfolk,—His execution.—Scotch Affairs.—French affairs—Massacre of Paris.—French affairs.—Civil wars of the Low Countries.—A Parliament.

1568.
Character
of the pu-
ritans.

OF all the European churches, which shook off the yoke of the papal authority, no one proceeded with so much reason and moderation as the church of England; an advantage, which had been derived partly from the interposition of the civil magistrate in this innovation, partly from the gradual and slow steps by which the reformation was conducted in that kingdom. Rage and animosity against the catholic religion was as little indulged as could be supposed in such a revolution: The fabric of the secular hierarchy was maintained entire: The antient liturgy was preserved, so far as was thought consistent with the new principles: Many ceremonies, become venerable from age and preceding use, were retained: The splendor of the catholic worship, tho' removed, had at least given place to order and decency: The distinctive habits of the clergy, according to their different ranks, were continued: No innovation was admitted merely from spite and opposition to the former usage: And the new religion, by mitigating the genius of the antient superstition, and rendering it more compatible with the peace and interests of society, had preserved itself in that happy medium, which wise men have always sought,

fought, and which the people have so seldom been CHAP.
able to maintain. XL.

1568.

BUT tho' such in general was the spirit of the reformation in that country, many of the English reformers, being men of a more warm complexion and more obstinate temper, endeavoured to push matters to extremity against the church of Rome, and indulged themselves in the most violent contrariety and antipathy to all former practices. Among these, Hooper, who afterwards suffered for his religion with such extraordinary constancy, was chiefly distinguished. This man was appointed, during the reign of Edward, to the see of Gloucester, and made no scruple of accepting the episcopal office; but he refused to be consecrated in the episcopal habits, the cymarre and rochette, which had formerly, he said, been abused to superstition, and which were thereby rendered unbecoming a true christian. Cranmer and Ridley were surprized at this objection, which opposed the received practice, and even the established laws; and tho' young Edward, desirous to promote a man so celebrated for his eloquence, his zeal, and his morals, enjoined them to dispense with this ceremony, they still continued resolute to retain it. Hooper then embraced the resolution, rather to refuse the bishopric than cloath himself in those hated garments; but it was determined, that, for the sake of the example, he should not escape so easily. He was first confined to Cranmer's house, and then thrown into prison, till he should consent to be a bishop on the terms proposed: He was plyed with conferences, and reprimands, and arguments: Bucer and Peter Martyr and the most celebrated foreign reformers were consulted on this important question: And a compromise, with great difficulty, was at last made, that Hooper should not be obliged to wear commonly the obnoxious robes, but should agree to be consecrated in them, and to use them during cathedral service: A condescension

* Burnet, vol. II. p. 152. Heylin, p. 90.

CHAP. not a little extraordinary in a man of so inflexible a
XL. spirit as this reformer.

1568.

The same objection, which had risen with regard to the episcopal habits, had been moved against the rayment of the inferior clergy; and the surplice in particular, with the tippet and corner cap, was a great object of abhorrence to many of the popular zealots^s. In vain was it urged, that particular habits, as well as postures and ceremonies, being constantly used by the clergy, and employed in religious service, acquire a veneration in the eyes of the people, appear sacred to their apprehensions, excite their devotion, and contract a kind of mysterious virtue, which attaches the affections of men to the national and established worship: That in order to produce this effect an uniformity in these particulars is requisite, and even a perseverance, as far as possible, in the former practice: And that the nation would be happy, if, by retaining these inoffensive observances, they could engage the people to renounce willingly what was hurtful or pernicious in the antient superstition. These arguments, which had influence with wise men, were the very reasons which engaged the violent protestants to reject the habits. They pushed matters to a total opposition with the church of Rome: Every compliance, they said, was a symbolizing with Antichrist^t: And this spirit was carried so far by some reformers, that in a national remonstrance, which was afterwards made by the church of Scotland against these habits, it was asked, "What has Christ Jesus to do with Belial? What has darkness to do with light? "If surplices, corner caps, and tippets have been badges "of idolaters in the very act of their idolatry; why "should the preacher of Christian liberty, and the open rebuker of all superstition partake with the dregs "of the Romish beast? Yea, who is there that ought "not rather to be afraid of taking in his hand or "on his forehead the print and mark of that odious

^s Strype, vol. I. p. 416.

^t Ibid p. 416.

beast?

“beast?” But this application was rejected by the CHAP-
English church. XL.

THERE was only one instance, where the spirit of contradiction to the Romanists took place universally in England: The altar was removed from the wall, was placed in the middle of the church, and was thenceforth denominated the communion-table. The reason, why this reformation met with such general compliance, was, that the nobility and gentry got thereby a pretence for making spoil of the plate, vestures, and rich ornaments, which belonged to the altars *.

1568.

THESE disputes, which had been started during the reign of Edward, were carried abroad by the protestants, who fled from the persecutions of Mary; and as their zeal had received an encrease from the furious cruelty of their enemies, they were generally inclined to carry their opposition to the utmost extremity against the practices of the church of Rome. Their communication with Calvin and the other reformers, who followed the discipline and worship of Geneva, confirmed them farther in this obstinate reluctance; and tho’ some of the refugees, particularly those established at Frankfurt, still adhered to King Edward’s liturgy, the prevailing spirit carried these confessors to seek a still farther reformation. On the accession of Elizabeth, they returned to their native country; and being regarded with general veneration on account of their zeal and past sufferings, they ventured to insist on the establishment of their projected model; nor did they want countenance from many considerable persons in the Queen’s council. But the Princess herself, so far from being willing to despoil religion of the few ornaments and ceremonies, which remained in it, was of herself rather inclined to bring the public worship still nearer to the Romish ritual; and she thought, that the reforma-

* Keith, p. 565. Knox, p. 402. * Heylin, preface, p. 3. Hist. p. 106. † When Norwel, one of her chaplains, had spoke less reverently in a sermon, preached before her of the sign of the cross,

tion

tion had already gone too far in shaking off those forms and observances, which, without distracting men of more refined apprehensions, tend in a very innocent manner to allure, and amuse, and engage the vulgar. She took care to have a law for uniformity strictly enacted: She was empowered by the parliament to add any new ceremonies, which she thought proper: And tho' she was sparing in the exercise of this prerogative, she continued rigid in exacting an observance of the established laws, and in punishing all nonconformity. The zealots, therefore, who harboured a secret antipathy to the episcopal order and to the whole liturgy, were obliged, in a great measure, to conceal these sentiments, which would have been regarded as highly audacious and criminal; and they confined their avowed objections to the surplice, the confirmation of children, the sign of the cross in baptism, the ring in marriage, kneeling at the sacrament, and bowing at the name of Jesus. So fruitless is it for sovereigns to watch with a rigid care over orthodoxy, and to employ the sword in religious controversy, that the work, perpetually renewed, is perpetually to begin; and a garb, a gesture, nay, a metaphysical or grammatical distinction, when rendered important by the disputes of theologians and the zeal of the magistrate, is sufficient to destroy the unity of the church, and even the peace of society. These controversies had already excited such ferment among the people, that in some places they refused to frequent the churches where the habits and ceremonies were used, would not salute the conforming clergy, and proceeded so far as to revile them in the streets, to spit in their

she called aloud to him from her closet window, commanding him to retire from that ungodly digression and to return unto his text. And on the other side, when one of her divines had preached a sermon in defence of the real presence, she openly gave him thanks for his pains and piety. Heylin, p. 124. She would have absolutely forbid the marriage of the clergy, if Cecil had not interposed. Strype's Life of Parker, p. 107, 108, 109. She was an enemy to sermons; and usually said, that she thought two or three preachers were sufficient for a whole county.

faces, and to use them with all manner of contumely^z. And while the sovereign authority checked these excesses, the flame was confined, not extinguished; and burning fiercer from confinement, it burst out in the succeeding reigns to the destruction of the church and monarchy.

CHAP.

XL.

1568.

ALL enthusiasts, indulging themselves in rapturous flights, extasies, visions, inspirations, have a natural aversion to episcopal authority, to ceremonies, rites, and forms, which they denominate superstition, or beggarly elements, and which seem to restrain the liberal effusions of their zeal and devotion: But there was another set of opinions adopted by these innovators, which rendered them in a peculiar manner the object of Elizabeth's aversion. The same bold and daring spirit, which accompanied them in their addresses to the divinity, appeared in their political speculations; and the principles of civil liberty, which, during some reigns, had been very little avowed in the nation, and which were totally incompatible with the present exorbitant prerogative, had been strongly adopted by this new sect. Scarce any sovereign before Elizabeth, and none after her, carried higher, both in speculation and practice, the authority of the crown; and the puritans (so these sectaries were called, on account of their pretending to a greater purity of worship and discipline) could not recommend themselves worse to her favour, than by preaching up the doctrine of resisting or restraining princes. From all these motives, the Queen neglected no opportunity of depressing those zealous innovators; and while they were countenanced by some of her most favoured ministers, Cecil, Leicester, Knolles, Bedford, Walsingham, she never was, to the end of her life, reconciled to their principles and practices.

WE have thought proper to insert in this place an

^z Strype's Life of Whitgift, p. 460.

CHAP. account of the rise and the genius of the puritans;
 XL. because Camden marks the present year, as the pe-
 1568. riod when they began to make themselves considera-
 ble in England. We now return to our narration.

1569.
 Duke of
 Norfolk's
 conspira-
 cy.

THE Duke of Norfolk was the only peer, who enjoyed the highest title of nobility; and as there were at present no princes of the blood, the splendor of his family, the opulence of his fortune, and the extent of his influence, had rendered him without comparison the first subject in England. The qualities of his mind corresponded to his high station: Beneficent, affable, generous, he had acquired the affections of the people; prudent, moderate, obsequious, he possessed without giving jealousy the good graces of his sovereign. His grandfather and father had long been regarded as the leaders of the catholics; and this hereditary attachment, joined to the alliances of blood, had procured him the friendship of the most considerable men of that party: But as he had been educated among the reformers, was sincerely devoted to their principles, and maintained that strict decorum and regularity of life, by which the protestants were at that time distinguished; he thereby enjoyed the rare felicity of being popular even with the most opposite factions. The height of his prosperity alone was the source of his misfortunes, and engaged him into attempts, from which his virtue and prudence would naturally have for ever kept in him a distance.

NORFOLK was at this time a widower; and being of a suitable age to espouse the Queen of Scots, that marriage had appeared so natural, that it had occurred to several of his friends and those of that princess: But the first person, who, after secretary Lidington, opened the scheme to the duke is said to be the earl of Murray, before his departure for Scotland^a. That nobleman set before Norfolk both the advantage of composing the differences in Scotland by an

^a Lesley, p. 36, 37.

1569.

alliance which would be so generally acceptable, and the prospect of reaping the succession of England; and in order to bind Norfolk's interest the faster with Mary's, he proposed that the duke's daughter should espouse the young king of Scotland. The obtaining previously Elizabeth's consent, was regarded both by Murray and Norfolk as a circumstance essential to the success of their project; and all circumstances being adjusted between them, Murray took care, by the means of Sir Robert Melvil, to have the design communicated to the Queen of Scots. That princess replied, that the vexations, which she had met with in her two last marriages, had made her more inclined to lead a single life, but she was determined to sacrifice her own inclinations to the public welfare: And therefore, so soon as she should be legally divorced from Bothwell, she would be determined by the opinion of her nobility and people in the choice of another husband ^b.

It is probable, that Murray was not sincere in this proposal. He had two motives to engage him to dissimulation. He knew the danger, which he must run in his return thro' the North of England, from the power of the Earls of Northumberland and Westmoreland, Mary's partizans in that country; and he dreaded an insurrection in Scotland from the duke of Chatelrault, and the earls of Argyle and Huntley, whom she had appointed her lieutenants during her absence. By these feigned appearances of friendship, he both engaged Norfolk to write in his favour to the northern noblemen ^c; and he persuaded the Queen of Scots to give her lieutenants permission, and even advice, to make a cessation of hostilities with the regent's party ^d.

THE duke of Norfolk, tho' he had agreed, that Elizabeth's consent should be previously obtained, before the completion of his marriage, had good reason to apprehend, that he never should prevail with her vo-

^b Lesley, p. 40, 41.^c State Trials, p. 76, 78.^d Lesley, p. 41.

CHAP.

XL.

1569.

luntarily to make that concession. He knew her perpetual and unrelenting jealousy against her heir and rival; he was acquainted with her former reluctance to all proposals of marriage with the Queen of Scots; he foresaw, that that princess's espousing a person of his power, and character, and interest, would give the greatest umbrage; and as it would then become necessary to reinstate Mary in possession of her throne on some tolerable terms, and even to endeavour the re-establishing her character, he dreaded, that Elizabeth, whose politics had now taken a different turn, would never agree to such indulgent and generous conditions. He therefore attempted previously to gain the consent and approbation of several of the most considerable nobility; and he was successful with the earls of Pembroke, Arundel, Derby, Bedford, Shrewsbury, Southampton, Northumberland, Westmorland, Sussex. The lord Lumley, and Sir Nicholas Throckmorton embraced cordially the proposal: Even the earl of Leicester, Elizabeth's declared favourite, who had formerly entertained some views of espousing Mary, willingly resigned all his pretensions, and seemed to enter zealously into Norfolk's interests^e. There were other motives, besides affection to the duke, which produced this general combination of the nobility.

SIR William Cecil, secretary of state, was the most vigilant, active, and prudent minister ever known in England; and as he was governed by no views but the interests of his sovereign, which he inflexibly pursued, his authority over her became every day more predominant. Ever cool himself, and uninfluenced by prejudice or affection, he checked those sallies of passion, and sometimes of caprice, to which, she was subject; and if he failed of persuading her in the first movement, his perseverance, and remonstrances, and arguments were sure at last to recommend themselves to

^e Lesley, p. 55. Camden, p. 419. Spotswood, p. 230.

^f Haynes, p. 535.

her sound discernment. The more credit he gained with his mistress, the more was he exposed to the envy of her other counsellors; and as he had been supposed to adopt the interests of the house of Suffolk, whose claim seemed to carry with it no danger to the present establishment, his enemies, in opposition to him, were naturally led to attach themselves to the Queen of Scots. Elizabeth saw, without uneasiness, this emulation among her courtiers, which served to augment her authority: and tho' she supported Cecil, wherever matters came to extremity, and dissipated every conspiracy against him, particularly one laid about this time to have him thrown into the Tower on some pretence or other^s, she never gave him such unlimited confidence as might enable him entirely to crush his adversaries.

CHAP.
XL.

1569.

NORFOLK, sensible of the difficulty, which he must meet with in controlling Cecil's councils, especially where they concurred with the inclinations, as well as interests of the Queen, durst not open to her his intentions of marrying the Queen of Scots; but proceeded still in the same course of encreasing his interest in the kingdom, and engaging more of the nobility to take part in his measures. A letter was wrote to Mary by Leicester, and signed by several men of the first rank, recommending Norfolk for her husband, and stipulating conditions for the advantage of both kingdoms; particularly, that she should give sufficient surety to Elizabeth, and the heirs of her body for the free enjoyment of the crown of England; that a perpetual league, offensive and defensive, be made between their realms and subjects; that the protestant religion be established by law in Scotland; and that she should grant an amnesty to her rebels in that kingdom^a. When Mary returned a favourable answer to this application, Norfolk employed himself with new ardor

^a Camden, p. 417.
Haynes, p. 535, 539.

^b Lesley, p. 50. Camden, p. 420.

CHAP.

XL.

1569.

in the execution of his project; and besides securing the interests of many of the considerable gentry and nobility who resided at court, he wrote letters to such as lived at their country seats, and possessed the greatest authority in the several counties¹. The Kings of France and Spain, who interested themselves extremely in Mary's cause, were secretly consulted, and expressed their approbation of these measures^k. And tho' Elizabeth's consent was always supposed as a previous condition to the finishing this alliance, it was apparently Norfolk's intention, when he proceeded such lengths without consulting her, to render his party so strong, that it should no longer be in her power to refuse it^l.

It was impossible, that so extensive a conspiracy could entirely escape the Queen's vigilance and that of Cecil. She dropt several surmises to the duke, by which he might learn, that she was acquainted with his designs; and she frequently warned him to beware on what pillow he reposed his head^m: But he never had the prudence or the courage to open to her his full intentions. Certain intelligence of this dangerous combination was given her first by Leicester, then by Murrayⁿ, who, if ever he was sincere in promoting Norfolk's marriage, which is much to be suspected, had at least proposed, for his own safety and that of his party, that Elizabeth should, in reality as well as in appearance, be entire arbiter of the conditions, and should not have her consent extorted by any confederacy of her own subjects. This information gave great alarm to the court of England; and the more so, as those intrigues were attended with other

¹ Lesly, p. 62.^k Ibid. p. 63.^l State Trials, vol.

I. p. 82.

^m Camden, p. 420. Spotswood, p. 231.ⁿ Lesly, p. 7. It appears by Haynes, p. 521, 525, that Queen Elizabeth had heard rumours of Norfolk's dealing with Murray; and charged the latter to inform her of the whole truth, which he accordingly did. See also the earl of Murray's letter produced on Norfolk's trial.

circum-

circumstances, of which, it is probable, Elizabeth CHAP.
was not wholly ignorant. XL.

AMONG the nobility and gentry, that seemed to enter into Norfolk's views, there were many, who were zealously attached to the catholic religion, who had no other design than that of restoring Mary to her liberty, and who would gladly, by a combination with foreign powers, or even at the expence of a civil war, have placed her on the throne of England. The earls of Northumberland and Westmoreland, who possessed great power in the north, were leaders of this party: and the former nobleman made offer to the Queen of Scots, by Leonard Dacres, brother to lord Dacres, that he would free her from confinement, and convey her to Scotland or any other place, to which she should think proper to retire^o. Sir Thomas and Sir Edward Stanley, sons to the earl of Derby, Sir Thomas Gerrard, Rolstone, and other gentlemen, whose interest lay in the neighbourhood of the place where Mary resided, concurred in the same views, and required, that, in order to facilitate the execution of the scheme, a diversion should, in the mean time, be made from the side of Flanders ^p. Norfolk discouraged, and even in appearance suppressed, these conspiracies; both because his duty to Elizabeth would not allow him to think of effecting his purpose by rebellion, and because he foresaw, that, if the Queen of Scots came into the possession of these men, they would rather choose for her husband the King of Spain, or some foreign prince, who had power, as well as inclination, to re-establish the catholic religion ^q.

1569.

WHEN men of honour and good principles, like the duke of Norfolk, engage in dangerous enterprizes, they are commonly so unfortunate as to be criminal by halves; and while they ballance between the execution of their designs and their remorse, their fear of punishment and their hope of pardon,

^o Lesley, p. 76.

^p Ibid. p. 98.

^q Ibid. p. 77.
they

CHAP. they render themselves an easy prey to their enemies.
 XL. The duke, in order to repress the surmizes, spread
 1569. against him, spoke contemptuously to Elizabeth of
 the Scots alliance; affirmed that his estate in England
 was more valuable than the revenue of a kingdom
 wasted by civil wars and factions; and declared,
 that, when he amused himself in his own tennis-
 court at Norwich amidst his friends and vassals, he
 esteemed himself at least a petty prince, and was
 fully contented with his condition^r. Finding, that
 he did not convince her by these asseverations, and
 that he was looked on with a jealous eye by the cour-
 tiers, he retired to his country-seat without taking
 leave^s. He soon after repented of this measure,
 and set out on his return to court, with a view of
 using every expedient to regain the Queen's good
 graces; but he was met at St. Albans by Fitz-Gar-
 ret, lieutenant of the band of pensioners, by whom
 he was conveyed to Burnham, three miles from
 Windsor, where the court then resided^t. He was
 soon after committed to the Tower, under the custo-
 dy of Sir Henry Nevill^u. Lesley, bishop of Ross,
 the Queen of Scots ambassador, was examined and
 confronted with Norfolk before the council^x. The
 earl of Pembroke was confined to his own house:
 Arundel, Lumley, and Throcmorton were taken in-
 to custody. The Queen of Scots herself was remov-
 ed to Coventry; all access to her was, during some
 time, more strictly prohibited; and the viscount Here-
 ford was joined to the earls of Shrewsbury and
 Huntingdon, in the office of guarding her.

Insurrec- A RUMOUR had been very generally diffused in the
 tions in north of an intended rebellion; and the earl of Sus-
 the north. sex, president of York, alarmed with the danger sent
 for Northumberland and Westmoreland, in order to
 examine them; but not finding any proof against

^r Camden, p. 420.^s Haynes, p. 528.^t Ibid. p. 339.^u Camden, p. 421. Haynes, p. 540.^x Lesley, p. 80.

them,

them, he allowed them to depart. The report meanwhile gained ground daily; and many appearances of its reality being discovered, orders were dispatched by Elizabeth to these two noblemen, to appear at court, and answer for their conduct^y. They had already proceeded so far in their criminal designs, that they dared not to trust themselves in her hands: They had prepared measures for a rebellion; had communicated their design to Mary and her ministers^z; had entered into a correspondence with the duke of Alva, governor of the Low Countries; had obtained his promise of a reinforcement of troops, and of a supply of arms and ammunition; and had prevailed on him to send over to London Chiapini Vitelli, one of his most famous captains, on pretence of adjusting some differences with the Queen, but in reality with a view of putting him at the head of the northern rebels. The summons sent to the two earls, precipitated the rising before they were fully prepared; and Northumberland remained in suspense between opposite dangers, when he was informed, that some of his enemies were on the way with a commission to arrest him. He took horse instantly, and hastened to his associate Westmoreland, whom he found surrounded with his friends and vassals, and deliberating with regard to the measures, which he should follow in the present emergence. They determined to begin the insurrection without delay; and the great credit of these two noblemen, with that zeal for the catholic religion, which still prevailed in the neighbourhood, soon drew together multitudes of the common people. They published a manifesto, in which they maintained, that they intended to attempt nothing against the Queen, to whom they vowed unshaken allegiance; and that their sole aim was to re-establish the religion of their ancestors, to remove evil counsellors, and to restore

CHAP.

XL.

1569:

^y Haynes, p. 552. ^z Ibid. p. 595. Strype, vol. II. append. p. 30. MS. in the Advocate's Library from Cott. Lib: Cal. c. 9.

CHAP. XL. the duke of Norfolk and other faithful peers to their liberty and to the Queen's favour^a. Their number amounted to four thousand foot and sixteen hundred horse, and they expected the concurrence of all the catholics in England^b.

1569.

THE Queen was not negligent in her defence, and she had beforehand, from her prudent and wise conduct, acquired the general good will of her people, the best security of a sovereign; insomuch that even the catholics in most counties expressed an affection for her service^c; and the duke of Norfolk himself, tho' he had lost her favour, and lay in confinement, was not wanting, as far as his situation permitted, to promote the levies among his friends and retainers. Suffex, attended with the earls of Rutland, the lords Hunsdon, Evers, and Willoughby of Parham, marched against the rebels at the head of seven thousand men, and found them already advanced to the bishoprick of Durham, of which they had taken possession. They retired before him to Hexham; and hearing that the earl of Warwic and lord Clinton were advancing against them with a greater body, they found no other expedient but to disperse themselves without striking a blow. The common people retired to their houses; The leaders fled into Scotland. Northumberland was found skulking in that country, and was confined by Murray to the castle of Lochleven. Westmoreland received shelter from the chieftanes of the Kers and Scots, partizans of Mary; and persuaded them to make an inroad into England, with a view of exciting a quarrel between the two kingdoms. After they had committed great ravages, they retreated to their own country; and Westmoreland made his escape into Flanders, where he was protected. This sudden and precipitate rebellion was followed soon after by another still more imprudent, raised by Leonard Dacres. Lord

^a Cabbala, p. 169. Strype, vol. I. p. 547.
p. 663.

^c Cabbala, p. 170. Digges, p. 4.

^b Stowe,

Hunsdon,

Hunsdon, at the head of the garrison of Berwic, CHAP.
XL. was able, without other assistance, to quell these rebels. Great severity was exercised against those, who had taken part in these rash enterprizes. Sixty-six petty constables were hanged^d; and no less than eight hundred persons are said, on the whole, to have suffered by the hands of the executioner^e. But the Queen was so well pleased with Norfolk's behaviour, that she released him from the Tower, allowed him to live under some shew of confinement in his own house, and only exacted a promise from him not to proceed any farther in his pretensions to marriage with the Queen of Scots^f. 1569.

ELIZABETH now found that the detention of Mary was attended with all the ill consequences, which she had foreseen when she first embraced that measure. This latter princess recovering, by means of her misfortunes and her own natural good sense, from that delirium, in which she seems to have been thrown during her attachment to Bothwel, had behaved with such modesty and judgment, and even dignity, that every one, who approached her, was charmed with her demeanor; and her friends were enabled, on some plausible grounds, to deny the reality of all those crimes, which had been imputed to her^g. The compassion for her situation, and the necessity of effecting her relief, proved an incitement among all her partizans to be active in promoting her cause; and as her delivery from captivity, it was thought, could no wise be effected but by attempts, dangerous to the established government, Elizabeth had reason to expect little tranquillity so long as the Scottish Queen remained a prisoner in her hands. But as this inconvenience had been preferred to the danger of allowing that princess to enjoy her liberty, and to seek relief in all the catholic courts of

^d Camden, p. 423.^e Lesley, p. 82.^f Ibid.

p. 98. Camden, p. 429. Haynes, p. 597.

^g Lesley, p.

232. Haynes, p. 511. 548.

C H A P.

XL.

1569.

Europe, it behoved the Queen to support the measure which she had adopted, and to guard by every prudent expedient against the mischiefs to which it was exposed. She still flattered Mary with hopes of her protection, maintained an ambiguous conduct between that Queen and her enemies in Scotland, negotiated perpetually concerning the terms of her restoration, made constant professions of friendship to her; and by these artifices endeavoured both to prevent her from making any desperate efforts for her delivery, and to satisfy the French and Spanish ambassadors, who never intermitted their solicitations, sometimes accompanied with menaces, in her favour. This deceit was received with the same deceit by the Queen of Scots: Professions of confidence were returned by professions equally insincere: And while an appearance of friendship was maintained on both sides, the animosity and jealousy, which had long prevailed between them, was every day becoming more inveterate and incurable. These two princesses, in address, capacity, activity, and spirit, were nearly a match for each other; but unhappily, Mary, besides her present forlorn condition, was always inferior in personal conduct and discretion, as well as in power, to her illustrious rival.

ELIZABETH and Mary wrote at the same time letters to the regent. The Queen of Scots desired, that her marriage with Bothwel might be examined, and a divorce be legally pronounced between them. The Queen of England gave Murray the choice of three conditions; that Mary should be restored to her dignity on certain terms; that she should be associated with her son, and the administration remain in the regent's hands, till the young prince should come to years of discretion; or that she should be allowed to live at liberty as a private person in Scotland, and have an honourable settlement made in her favour^h. Murray summoned a conven-

^h MSS. in the advocate's library. A. 329. p. 137. from Cott. Lib. catal. c. 1.

tion,

tion, in order to deliberate on these proposals of the two Queens. No answer was made by them to Mary's letter, on pretence that she had there maintained the style of a sovereign, addressing herself to her subjects; but in reality, because they saw that her request was calculated to prepare the way for a marriage with Norfolk, or some powerful prince, who could support her cause, and restore her to the throne. They replied to Elizabeth, that the two former conditions were so derogatory to the royal authority of their prince, that they could not so much as deliberate concerning them: The third alone could be the subject of treaty. It was evident, that Elizabeth, in proposing conditions so unequal in their importance, invited the Scots to a refusal of those which were most advantageous to Mary; and as it was difficult, if not impossible, to adjust all the terms of the third, so as to render it secure and eligible to all parties, it was concluded that she was not sincere in any of them ¹.

CHAP. XL.

1569.

It was pretended, that Murray had entred into a private negotiation with the Queen, to get Mary delivered into his hands ^k; and as Elizabeth found the detention of her in England so dangerous, it is probable, that she would have been pleased, on any honourable or safe terms, to rid herself of a prisoner who gave her so much inquietude^l. But all these projects vanished by the sudden death of the regent, who was assassinated, in revenge of a private injury, by a gentleman of the name of Hamilton. Murray was a person of considerable vigour,

1570.

23 January.

¹ Spotswood, p. 230, 231. Lesley, p. 71.
den, p. 425. Lesley, p. 83.

^k Cam-

^l By Murden's state papers, published after the printing of this passage, it appears, that an agreement had been made between Elizabeth and the regent for the delivery of Mary. The Queen afterwards sent down Killigrew to the earl of Marre when regent, offering to deliver up Mary to him. Killigrew was instructed to take good security from the regent, that that Queen should be tried for her crimes, and that the sentence should be executed upon her. It appears that Marre refused the offer; because we hear no more of it.

CHAP. XL. ability, and constancy; but tho' he was not unsuccessful, during his regency, in composing the dissensions in Scotland, his talents shone out more eminently in the beginning than in the end of his life. His manners were rough and austere; and he possessed not that perfect integrity, which frequently accompanies, and can alone atone for, that unamiable character.

1570.
Assassination of the earl of Murray.

By the death of the regent, Scotland relapsed into its former anarchy. Mary's party assembled together and made themselves masters of Edinburgh. The castle, commanded by Kirkaldy of Grange, seemed to favour her cause; and as many of the principal nobility had embraced that side, it became probable, tho' the people were in general averse to her, that her authority might again acquire the ascendant. To check its progress, Elizabeth dispatched Suffex, with an army, to the North, under colour of chastizing the ravages committed by the borderers. He entered Scotland, and laid waste the lands of the Kers and Scots, seized the castle of Hume, and committed hostilities on all Mary's partizans, who, he said, had offended his mistress, by harbouring the English rebels. Sir William Drury was afterwards sent with a body of troops, and he threw down the houses of the Hamiltons, who were engaged in the same faction. The English armies were afterwards recalled by agreement with the Queen of Scots, who promised, that no French troops should be introduced into Scotland, and that the English rebels should be delivered up to the Queen by her partizans ^m.

BUT tho' the Queen, covering herself with the pretence of revenging her own quarrel, so far contributed to support the party of the young King, she was cautious not to declare openly against the Queen of Scots, and she even sent a request, which was equal to a command, to the enemies of that princess, not to e-

^m Lesley, p. 91.

lect, during some time, a regent in the place of Mur-
 ray ⁿ. Lenox, the King's grandfather, was, there-
 fore, chosen temporary governor, under the title of
 Lieutenant. Hearing afterwards that Mary's parti-
 zans, instead of delivering up Westmoreland, and
 the other fugitives, as they had promised, had allow-
 ed them to escape into Flanders; she permitted the
 King's party to give Lenox the title of regent ^o, and
 she sent Randolf, as her resident, to maintain a cor-
 respondence with him. But notwithstanding this step,
 taken in favour of Mary's enemies, she never laid a-
 side her ambiguous conduct, or quitted the pretensi-
 ons of amity to that princess. Being importuned by
 the Bishop of Ross, and her other agents, as well as
 by foreign ambassadors, she twice procured a suspen-
 sion of arms between the Scots factions, and by that
 means stopped the hands of the regent, who was
 likely to obtain advantages over the opposite party ^p.
 By these seeming contrarieties she kept alive the facti-
 ons in Scotland, increased their mutual animosity, and
 rendered the whole country a scene of devastation
 and of misery ^q. She had no intention to conquer
 the kingdom, and consequently no interest or design
 to instigate the parties against each other; but this
 consequence was an accidental effect of her cautious
 politics, by which she was engaged, as far as possible,
 to keep on good terms with the Queen of Scots, and
 never to violate the appearances of friendship with
 her, at least those of neutrality ^r.

CHAP.

XL.

1570.

ⁿ Spotswood, p. 240.^o Ibid. p. 241.^p Ibid.

p. 243.

^q Crawford, p. 136.

^r Sir James Melvil, p. 108, 109, ascribes to Elizabeth a posi-
 tive design of animating the Scots factions against each other;
 but his evidence is too inconsiderable to counterbalance many
 other authorities, and is, indeed, contrary to her subsequent con-
 duct, as well as her interests, and the necessity of her situation.
 It was plainly her interest, that the King's party should prevail,
 and nothing could have engaged her to stop their progress, or e-
 ven forbear from openly assisting them, but her intention of still
 amusing the Queen of Scots, by the hopes of being peaceably re-
 stored to her throne. See farther, Strype, vol. II. Appen. p. 20.

CHAP.

XL.

1570.

THE better to amuse Mary with the prospect of an accommodation, Cecil and Sir Walter Mildway were sent to her with proposals from Elizabeth. The terms were somewhat rigorous, such as a captive Queen might expect from a jealous rival; and they thereby bore the greater appearance of sincerity on the part of the English court. It was required, that the Queen of Scots, besides renouncing all title to the crown of England during the life-time of Elizabeth, should make a perpetual league, offensive and defensive, between the kingdoms; that she should marry no Englishman without Elizabeth's consent, nor any other person without the consent of the states of Scotland; that redress should be made for the late ravages committed in England; that justice should be executed on the murderers of the late King; that the young prince should be sent into England, to be educated there; that six hostages, all of them noblemen, should be delivered to the Queen of England, with the castle of Hume, and some other fortress, for the security of performance *. Such were the conditions upon which Elizabeth promised to contribute her endeavours towards the restoration of the deposed Queen. The necessity of Mary's affairs obliged her to consent to them; and the Kings of France and Spain, as well as the pope, when consulted by her, approved of her conduct; chiefly on account of the civil wars by which all Europe was at that time agitated, and which incapacitated the catholic princes from giving her any assistance †.

ELIZABETH'S commissioners proposed also to Mary a plan of accommodation with her subjects in Scotland; and after some reasoning on that head, it was agreed, that the Queen should require Lenox, the regent, to send up commissioners, to treat of conditions under her mediation. The partizans of Mary boasted, that all terms were fully settled with the court of En-

* Spotswood, p. 245. Lesley, p. 101.

† Lesley, p. 109, &c.
gland,

gland, and that the Scots rebels would soon be constrained to submit to the restoration of their sovereign: But Elizabeth took care that these rumours should meet with no credit, and that the King's party should not be discouraged, nor sink too low in their demands. Cecil wrote to inform the regent, that all the Queen of England's proposals, so far from being fixed and irrevocable, were to be discussed anew in the conference; and desired him to send commissioners, who should be constant to the King's cause, and cautious not to make concessions which might be prejudicial to their party^u. Suffex also, in his letters, dropped hints to the same purpose; and Elizabeth herself said to the abbot of Dunfermling, whom Lenox had sent to the court of England, that she would not insist on Mary's restoration, provided the Scots could make the justice of their cause appear to her satisfaction; and that even, if their reasons should fall short of full conviction, she would take effectual care to provide for their future security^x.

THE Scots Parliament appointed the earl of Morton, the abbot of Dunfermling, and Sir James Macgill to manage the treaty. These commissioners first presented memorials, containing reasons for the deposition of their Queen; and they seconded their arguments, with examples drawn from the Scots history, with the authority of laws, and with the sentiments of many famous divines. The lofty ideas, which Elizabeth had entertained of the absolute, indefeizable right of sovereigns, made her be shocked with these republican topics; and she told the Scots commissioners, that she was no-wise satisfied with their reasons for justifying the conduct of their countrymen; and that they might therefore proceed to open the conditions, which they required for their security^y. They replied, that their commission did not empower them to treat of any terms, which might

^u Spotfwood, p. 245.

^y Ibid. p. 248, 249.

^x Ibid. p. 247, 248.

CHAP. infringe the title and sovereignty of their young king;
 XL. but they would gladly hear whatever proposals should
 1571. be made them by her majesty. The conditions, recommended by the Queen, were not disadvantageous to Mary; but as the commissioners still insisted that they were not authorized to treat, in any manner, concerning the restoration of that Princess^z, the conferences were necessarily at an end; and Elizabeth dismissed the Scots commissioners with injunctions, that they should return, after having procured more ample powers from their Parliament^a. The bishop of Ross complained openly to the English council, that they had abused his mistress by fair promises and professions; and Mary herself was no longer at a loss to judge of Elizabeth's insincerity. By reason of these disappointments, matters came still nearer to extremity between the two Princesses; and the Queen of Scots, finding all her hopes eluded, was more strongly incited to make, at all hazards, every possible attempt for her liberty and security.

AN incident also happened about this time, which tended to widen the breach between Mary and Elizabeth, and to encrease the vigilance and jealousy of the latter princess. Pope Pius the fifth, who had succeeded Paul, after having endeavoured in vain to conciliate by gentle means the friendship of Elizabeth, whom his predecessor's violence had irritated, issued at last a bull of excommunication against her, deprived her of all title to the crown, and absolved her subjects from their oaths of allegiance^b. It seems probable, that this attack on the Queen's authority was made in concert with Mary, who intended by that means to forward the northern rebellion; a measure which was at that time projected^c. John Felton affixed this bull to the gates of the bishop of London's

^z Haynes, 623.

^a Spotswood, p. 249, 250, &c. Lesly, p. 133, 136. Camden, p. 431, 432.

^b Camden, p. 427.

^c Ibid. p. 441, from Cajetan's life of Pius the fifth.

palace; and scorning either to fly or deny the fact, ^{CHAP.} he was seized, and condemned, and received the ^{XL.} crown of martyrdom, for which he appears to have ^{1571.} entertained so violent an ambition^d.

A new Parliament, after five years interval, was ^{2d April.} assembled at Westminster; and as the Queen, by the ^{A Parlia-} rage of the pope against her, was become still more ^{ment.} the head of the ruling party, it might be expected, both from this incident and from her own prudent and vigorous conduct, that her authority over the two houses would be absolutely uncontrollable. It was so in fact; yet it is remarkable, that it prevailed not without some small opposition; and that too arising chiefly from the height of zeal for protestantism; a disposition of the English, which, in general, contributed extremely to encrease the Queen's popularity. We shall be somewhat particular in relating the transactions of this session, because they show, as well the extent of the royal power during that age, as the disposition of Elizabeth and the genius of her government. It will be curious also to observe the faint dawnings of the spirit of liberty in the English, the jealousy with which that spirit was repressed by the sovereign, the imperious conduct which was maintained in opposition to it, and the ease with which it was subdued by this arbitrary princefs.

THE Lord keeper, Bacon, after the speaker of the commons was elected, told the Parliament, in the Queen's name, that she enjoined them not to meddle with any matters of state^e: Such was his expression; by which he probably meant, the questions^{*} of the Queen's marriage and the succession, about which they had before given her some trouble: For as to the other great points of government, alliances, peace and war, or foreign negotiations; no Parliament in that age ever ventured to take them under consideration, or question, in these particulars, the conduct of their sovereign.

^d Camden, p. 428.

^e D'Ewes, p. 141.

CHAP.

XL.

1571.

IN the former Parliament, the puritans had introduced seven bills for a farther reformation in religion; but they had not been able to prevail in any one of them^f. This house of commons had sat a very few days, when Stricland, a member, revived one of the bills, that for the amendment of the liturgy^g. The chief objection, which he mentioned, was the sign of the cross in baptism. Another member added, the kneeling at the sacrament; and remarked, that if a posture of humiliation was requisite in that act of devotion, it were better that the communicants should throw themselves prostrate on the ground, in order to keep at the widest distance from former superstition^h.

RELIGION was a point, of which Elizabeth was, if possible, still more jealous than of matters of state. She pretended, that, in quality of supreme head or governor of the church, she was fully empowered, by her prerogative alone, to decide all questions which might arise with regard to doctrine, discipline, or worship; and she never would allow her Parliaments so much as to take these points into considerationⁱ. The courtiers forgot not to insist on this topic: The treasurer of the household, tho' he allowed, that any heresy might be condemned by Parliament, (a concession which seems to have been very rash and unguarded; since the act, investing the crown with the supremacy, or rather recognizing that prerogative, gave the sovereign full power to reform all heresies) yet he affirmed, that it belonged to the Queen alone, as head of the church, to regulate every question of ceremony in worship^k. The comptroller seconded this argument; insisted on the extent of the Queen's prerogative; and said, that the house might, from former examples, have taken warning not to meddle with such matters. One Pistor opposed these remonstrances of the courtiers. He was scandalized,

^f D'Ewes, p. 185.
p. 167.

^g Ibid. p. 156, 157.
ⁱ Ibid. p. 158.

^k Ibid. p. 166.

^h Ibid.

he said, that affairs of such infinite consequence (viz. CHAP. XL. 1571. kneeling and making the sign of the cross) should be passed over so lightly. These questions, he added, concern the salvation of our souls, and interest every one of us more deeply than the monarchy of the whole world. This cause he shewed to be God's; the rest were all but terrene, yea trifles in comparison, call you them ever so great: Subsidies, crowns, kingdoms, he knew not what weight they had, when laid in the ballance with subjects of such unspeakable importance^l. Tho' the zeal of this member seems to have been highly approved of, the house, overawed by the prerogative, voted upon the question, that a petition should be presented to her majesty, for her licence to proceed farther in this bill; and in the mean time to stop all debate or reasoning concerning it^m.

MATTERS would probably have rested here, had not the Queen been so highly offended with Stricland's presumption, in moving the bill for reformation of the liturgy, that she sent for him to the council, and prohibited him thenceforth to appear in the house of commonsⁿ. That act of power was too violent even for this submissive Parliament to endure. Carleton took notice of the matter, complained that the liberties of the house were violated; observed that Stricland was not a private man, but represented a multitude; and moved, that he might be sent for, and, if he was guilty of any offence, might answer for it at the bar of the house, which he insinuated to be the only competent tribunal^o. Yelverton enforced the principles of liberty with still greater boldness. He said, that the precedent was dangerous: And tho' in this happy time of lenity, among so many good and honourable personages as were at present invested with authority, nothing of extremity or injury was to be apprehended; yet the times might alter; what now is permitted, hereafter might be construed as duty, and might be enforced

^l D'Ewes, p. 166.
175.

^o Ibid.

^m Ibid. p. 167.

ⁿ Ibid. p.

CHAP. XL. 1571. even on the ground of the present permission. He added, that all matters not treasonable, or which implied *too much* derogation of the imperial crown, might, without offence, be introduced into Parliament, where every question that concerned the community must be considered, and where even the right of the crown itself must finally be determined. He remarked, that men sat not in that house in their private capacities, but as elected by their country; and tho' it was proper, that the prince should retain his prerogative, yet was that prerogative limited by law: As the sovereign could not of himself make laws, neither could he break them, merely from his own authority^p.

THESE principles were popular, and noble, and generous; but the open assertion of them was, at that time, somewhat new in England: And the courtiers were more warranted by present practice, when they advanced a contrary doctrine. The treasurer warned the house to be cautious in their proceedings; neither to venture farther than their assured warrant might extend, nor hazard their good opinion with her majesty in any doubtful cause. The member, he said, whom they required, was not detained on account of any liberty of speech, but for the exhibiting a bill in the house against the prerogative of the Queen; a temerity which was not to be tolerated. And he concluded with observing, that even speeches made in that house, have been questioned and examined by the sovereign^q. Cleere, another member, remarked, that the sovereign's prerogative is not so much as disputable, and that the safety of the Queen is the safety of the subjects. He added, that, in questions of divinity, every man was for his instruction to repair to his ordinary; and he seems to insinuate, that the bishops themselves, for their instruction, must repair to the Queen^r. Mr. Fleetwood observed, that, in his memory, he knew a man,

^p D'Ewes, p. 175, 176.

^q Ibid. p. 175.

^r Ibid.

who,

who in the fifth of the present Queen, had been called CHAP. XL. to account for a speech in the house. But lest this example should be too recent, he would inform them from the parliament rolls, that in the reign of Henry the fifth, a bishop was committed to prison by the King's command, on account of his freedom of speech; and the Parliament presumed not to go farther than to be humble suitors for him: In the subsequent reign the speaker himself was committed, with another member; and the house found no other remedy than a like submissive application. He advised the house to have recourse to the same expedient; and not to presume, either to send for their member, or demand him as of right*. During this speech, those members of the council who sat in the house, whispered together; upon which the speaker moved, that the house should make stay of all farther proceedings: A motion, which was immediately complied with. The Queen finding that the experiment which she had made was likely to excite a great commotion, saved her honour by this silence of the house; and that the question might no more be resumed, she sent next day to Stricland her permission to give his attendance in Parliament†.

NOTWITHSTANDING this rebuke from the throne, the zeal of the commons still engaged them to continue the discussion of those other bills which regarded religion; but they were interrupted by a still more arbitrary proceeding of the Queen, in which the lords condescended to be her instrument. That house sent a message to the commons, desiring that a committee might attend them. Some members were accordingly appointed for that purpose; and the upper house informed them, that the Queen's majesty being informed of the articles of reformation which they had canvassed, approved of them, intended to publish them,

* D'Ewes, p. 176.

† Ibid. p. 176.

and

CHAP.

XL.

1571.

and to make the bishops execute them, by virtue of her regal authority, as supreme head of the church of England: But that she would not permit them to be treated of in Parliament^u. The house, tho' they did not entirely stop proceedings on account of this injunction, seem to have been no-wise offended at such haughty treatment; and in the issue all their bills came to nothing.

A MOTION, made by Robert Bell, a puritan, against an exclusive patent granted to a company of merchants at Bristol^x, gave also occasion to some remarkable incidents. The Queen, some days after the motion was made, sent her orders, by the mouth of the speaker, commanding the house to spend little time in motions, and to avoid long speeches. All the members understood that she had been offended, because a matter had been moved which seemed to touch her prerogative^y. Fleetwood accordingly spoke of this delicate subject. He observed, that the Queen had a prerogative of granting patents; that to question the validity of any patent, was to invade the royal prerogative; that all foreign trade was entirely subjected to the pleasure of the sovereign; that even the statute which gave liberty of commerce, admitted of all prohibitions from the crown; and that the prince, when he granted an exclusive patent, only employed the power vested in him, and prohibited all others from dealing in any particular branch of commerce. He quoted the clerk of the Parliament's book, to prove, that no man might speak in Parliament of the statute of wills, unless the King first gave licence; because the royal prerogative in the wards was thereby touched. He shewed likewise the statutes of Edward the first, Edward the third, and Henry the fourth, with a saving of the prerogative. And in Edward the sixth's time, the protector was

^u D'Ewes, p. 180, 158.
p. 159.

^x Ibid. p. 185.

^y Ibid.

applied

applied to, for his allowance to mention matters of CHAP.
prerogative ². XL.

SIR Humphrey Gilbert, the gallant sea-adventurer, carried these topics still farther. He endeavoured to prove the motion made by Bell to be a vain device, and perilous to be treated of; since it tended to the derogation of the prerogative imperial, which whoever should attempt so much as in fancy, could not, he said, be otherwise accounted than an open enemy. For what difference is there between saying, that the Queen is not to use the privilege of the crown, and saying that she is not Queen? And tho' experience has shewn so much clemency in her majesty, as might, perhaps, make the subjects forget their duty; it is not good to sport or venture too much with princes. He remembered them of the fable of the hare, who, upon the proclamation, that all horned beasts should depart the court, immediately fled, lest his ears should be construed to be horns; and by this apologue he seems to insinuate, that even those who heard or permitted such dangerous speeches, would not themselves be entirely free from danger. He desired them to beware, lest, if they meddled farther with these matters, the Queen might look to her own power, and finding herself able to suppress their challenged liberty, and to exert an arbitrary authority, might imitate the example of Lewis the eleventh of France, who, as he termed it, delivered the crown from wardship ².

Tho' this speech gave some disgust, no body, at the time, replied any thing, but that Sir Humphrey mistook the meaning of the house, and of the member who made the motion: They never had other purpose, than to represent their grievances in due and seemly form unto her majesty. But, in a subsequent debate, Peter Wentworth, a man of a superior free spirit, called that speech an insult on the house; noted Sir Hum-

² D'Ewes, p. 160.

² Ibid. p. 168.

C H A P.

XL.

1571.

and to make the bishops execute them, by virtue of her regal authority, as supreme head of the church of England: But that she would not permit them to be treated of in Parliament^u. The house, tho' they did not entirely stop proceedings on account of this injunction, seem to have been no-wise offended at such haughty treatment; and in the issue all their bills came to nothing.

A MOTION, made by Robert Bell, a puritan, against an exclusive patent granted to a company of merchants at Bristol^x, gave also occasion to some remarkable incidents. The Queen, some days after the motion was made, sent her orders, by the mouth of the speaker, commanding the house to spend little time in motions, and to avoid long speeches. All the members understood that she had been offended, because a matter had been moved which seemed to touch her prerogative^y. Fleetwood accordingly spoke of this delicate subject. He observed, that the Queen had a prerogative of granting patents; that to question the validity of any patent, was to invade the royal prerogative; that all foreign trade was entirely subjected to the pleasure of the sovereign; that even the statute which gave liberty of commerce, admitted of all prohibitions from the crown; and that the prince, when he granted an exclusive patent, only employed the power vested in him, and prohibited all others from dealing in any particular branch of commerce. He quoted the clerk of the Parliament's book, to prove, that no man might speak in Parliament of the statute of wills, unless the King first gave licence; because the royal prerogative in the wards was thereby touched. He shewed likewise the statutes of Edward the first, Edward the third, and Henry the fourth, with a saving of the prerogative. And in Edward the sixth's time, the protector was

^u D'Ewes, p. 180, 158.
p. 159.

^x Ibid. p. 185.

^y Ibid.

applied

applied to, for his allowance to mention matters of prerogative ^z. CHAP. XL.

SIR Humphrey Gilbert, the gallant sea-adventurer, carried these topics still farther. He endeavoured to prove the motion made by Bell to be a vain device, and perilous to be treated of; since it tended to the derogation of the prerogative imperial, which whoever should attempt so much as in fancy, could not, he said, be otherwise accounted than an open enemy. For what difference is there between saying, that the Queen is not to use the privilege of the crown, and saying that she is not Queen? And tho' experience has shewn so much clemency in her majesty, as might, perhaps, make the subjects forget their duty; it is not good to sport or venture too much with princes. He remembered them of the fable of the hare, who, upon the proclamation, that all horned beasts should depart the court, immediately fled, lest his ears should be construed to be horns; and by this apologue he seems to insinuate, that even those who heard or permitted such dangerous speeches, would not themselves be entirely free from danger. He desired them to beware, lest, if they meddled farther with these matters, the Queen might look to her own power, and finding herself able to suppress their challenged liberty, and to exert an arbitrary authority, might imitate the example of Lewis the eleventh of France, who, as he termed it, delivered the crown from wardship ^a.

THO' this speech gave some disgust, no body, at the time, replied any thing, but that Sir Humphrey mistook the meaning of the house, and of the member who made the motion: They never had other purpose, than to represent their grievances in due and seemly form unto her majesty. But, in a subsequent debate, Peter Wentworth, a man of a superior free spirit, called that speech an insult on the house; noted Sir Hum-

^z D'Ewes, p. 160.

^a Ibid. p. 168.

C H A P.

XL.

1571.

phrey's disposition to flatter and fawn on the prince; compared him to theameleon, which can change itself into all colours, except white; and recommended to the house, a due care of liberty of speech, and of the privileges of Parliament^b. It appears, on the whole, that the motion against the exclusive patent had no effect. Bell, the member who first introduced it, was sent for by the council, and was severely reprimanded for his temerity. He returned to the house with such an amazed countenance, that all the members, well informed of the reason, were struck with terror; and during some time, no one durst rise to speak of any matter of importance, for fear of giving offence to the Queen and the council. Even after the fears of the commons were somewhat abated, the members spoke with extreme precaution; and by employing most of their discourse in preambles and apologies, they shewed their conscious terror of the rod which was hanging over them. Wherever any delicate point was touched, tho' ever so gently; nay seemed to be approached, tho' at ever so great a distance, the whisper ran about the house, "The Queen will be offended; the council will be extremely displeased:" And by these surmizes men were warned of the danger to which they exposed themselves. It is remarkable, that the patent which the Queen defended with such imperious violence, was contrived for the profit of four courtiers, and was attended with the utter ruin of seven or eight thousand of her industrious subjects^c.

29th May. Thus every thing which passed the two houses, was extremely respectful and submissive; yet did the Queen think it incumbent on her, at the conclusion of the session, to check, and that with great severity, those feeble efforts for liberty, which had appeared in the motions and speeches of some members. The lord keeper told the commons, in her majesty's name, that, tho' the majority of the lower house had shewed them-

^b D'Ewes, p. 175.

^c Ibid. p. 242.

felves, in their proceedings, discreet and dutiful, yet a few of them had discovered a contrary character, and had justly merited the reproach of audacious, arrogant, and presumptuous: Contrary to their duty, both as subjects and parliament-men, nay contrary to the exprefs injunctions given them from the throne at the beginning of the session; injunctions, which it might well have become them to have better attended to; they had presumed to call in question her majesty's grants and prerogatives. But her majesty warns them, that since they will thus wilfully forget themselves, they are otherwise to be admonished: Some other species of correction must be found for them; since neither the commands of her majesty, nor the example of their wiser brethren, can reclaim their audacious, arrogant, and presumptuous folly, by which they are thus led to meddle with what no way belongs to them, and what lies not within the compass of their understanding ^d.

CHAP.

XL.

1571.

IN all these transactions appears clearly the opinion which Elizabeth had entertained of the duty and authority of Parliaments. They were not to canvass any matters of state: Still less were they to meddle with the church. Questions of either kind were far above their reach, and were appropriated to the prince alone, or to those councils and ministers with whom he was pleased to entrust them. What then was the office of Parliaments? They might give directions for the due tanning of leather, or milling of cloth; for the preservation of pheasants and partridges; for the reparation of bridges and highways; for the punishment of vagabonds or common beggars. Regulations concerning the police of the country came properly under their inspection; and the laws of this kind which they prescribed, had, if not a greater, yet a more durable authority, than those derived solely from the proclamations of the sovereign. Precedents or reports could fix a rule for deci-

^d D'Ewes, p. 151.

CHAP.

XL.

1571.

sions in private property, or the punishment of crimes; but no alteration or innovation in the municipal law could proceed from any other source than the Parliament; nor would the courts of justice be induced to change their established practice by an order of council. But the most acceptable part of parliamentary transactions was the granting of subsidies; the attainting and punishing the obnoxious nobility, or any minister of state after his fall; the countenancing such great efforts of power, as might be deemed somewhat exceptionable, when they proceeded entirely from the sovereign. The redress of grievances was sometimes promised to the people; but seldom could have place, while it was an established rule, that the prerogatives of the crown must not be abridged, or so much as questioned and examined in Parliament. Even tho' monopolies and exclusive companies had already reached an enormous height, and were every day encreasing, to the destruction of all liberty, and extinction of all industry; it was criminal in a member to propose, in the most dutiful and regular manner, a parliamentary application against any of them.

THESE maxims of government were not kept secret by Elizabeth, or smoothed over by any fair appearances or plausible pretences. They were openly avowed in her speeches and messages to Parliament; and were accompanied with all the haughtiness, nay sometimes bitterness of expression, which the meanest servant could look for from his offended master. Yet notwithstanding this conduct, Elizabeth continued to be the most popular sovereign that ever swayed the scepter of England; because the maxims of her reign were conformable to the principles of the times, and to the opinion which was generally entertained with regard to the constitution. The continued encroachments of popular assemblies on Elizabeth's successors have so changed our ideas of these matters, that the passages above mentioned appear to us extremely
curious,

curious, and even at first surprizing; but they were so little remarked, during the time, that neither Camden, tho' a contemporary writer, nor any other historian, has taken any notice of them. So absolute was the authority of the crown, that the precious spark of liberty had been kindled, and was preserved, by the puritans alone; and it was to this sect, whose principles appear so frivolous and habits so ridiculous, that the English owe the whole freedom of their constitution. Actuated by that zeal which belongs to innovators, and by the courage which enthusiasm inspires, they hazarded the utmost indignation of their sovereign; and employing all their industry to be elected into Parliament; a matter not difficult, while a seat was rather regarded as a burthen than an advantage^e; they first acquired a majority in that assembly, and then obtained an ascendant over the church and monarchy.

CHAP.
XL.

1571.

THE following were the principal laws enacted this session of Parliament. It was declared treason, during the life-time of the Queen, to affirm, that she was not the lawful sovereign, or that any other possessed a better title, or that she was a heretic, schismatic, or infidel, or that the laws and statutes cannot limit and determine the right of the crown and the successor thereof: To maintain in writing or printing, that any person, except the *natural issue* of her body, is or ought to be the Queen's heir or successor, subjected the person and all his abettors, for the first offence, to imprisonment during a year, and to the forfeiture of half their goods: The second offence subjected them to the penalty of a premunire^f. This law was plainly levelled against the Queen of Scots and her partizans; and implied an avowal, that Elizabeth never intended to declare her successor. It may be noted, that the usual

^e It appeared this session, that a bribe of four pounds had been given to a mayor for a seat in Parliament. D'Ewes, p. 181. It is probable, that the member had no other view but the privilege of being free from arrests.

^f 13 Eliz. c. 1.

CHAP. XL. phrase of *lawful issue*, which the Parliament thought indecent towards the Queen, as if she could be supposed to have any other, was changed into that of *natural issue*. But this alteration was the source of great ridicule during the time; and some persons suspected a deeper design, as if Leicester intended, in case of the Queen's death, to produce some bastard of his own, and affirm that he was her offspring.

1571.

It was also enacted, that whosoever by bulls shall publish absolutions or other rescripts of the pope, or shall by means of them reconcile any man to the church of Rome, such offenders, as well as those who were so reconciled, should be guilty of treason. The penalty of a premunire was imposed on every one who imported any *Agnus Dei*, crucifix, or such other implement of superstition, consecrated by the pope^b. The former laws against taking interest, which was denominated usury, were enforced by a new statute^c. A supply of one subsidy and two fifteenths was granted by Parliament. The Queen, as she was determined to yield to them none of her power, was very cautious of asking them for any supplies. She endeavoured, either by a rigid frugality to make her ordinary revenues suffice for the necessities of the crown, or she employed her prerogative and acquired money by the granting of patents, monopolies, or by some such ruinous expedient.

Tho' Elizabeth possessed such uncontrouled authority over her parliaments, and such extensive influence over her people; tho' during a course of thirteen years, she had been able to maintain the public tranquillity, which was only interrupted by the hasty and ill-concerted insurrection of the north; she was still kept in great anxiety, and felt her throne perpetually totter under her. The violent commotions, excited in France and the Low Countries, as well as in Scotland, seemed in one view to secure her against any distur-

^c Camden, p. 436.

^b 13 Eliz. c. 2.

ⁱ Ibid. c. 8.

bance;

bance; but they served, on more reflection, to instruct her in the danger of her situation, when she remarked, that England, no less than these neighbouring countries, contained the seeds of intestine discord, the differences of religious opinion, and the furious intolerance and animosity of the opposite sectaries.

CHAP.

XL.

1571.

THE league, formed at Bayonne in 1566 for the extermination of the protestants, had not been concluded so secretly but intelligence of it had reached Condé, Coligni, and the other leaders of the hugonots; and finding, that the measures of the court agreed with their suspicions, they determined to prevent the cruel perfidy of their enemies, and to strike a blow before the catholics were aware of the danger. The hugonots, tho' dispersed over the whole kingdom, formed a kind of separate empire; and being closely united, as well by their religious zeal, as by the dangers, to which they were perpetually exposed, they obeyed with entire submission the orders of their leaders, and were ready on every alarm to fly to arms. The King and Queen mother were living in great security at Monceaux in Brie; when they found themselves surrounded by protestant troops, which had secretly marched thither from all quarters; and had not a body of Swiss come hastily to their relief, and conducted them with great intrepidity to Paris, they must have fallen, without resistance, into the hands of the malecontents. A battle was afterwards fought in the plains of St. Dennis, where, tho' the old constable Montmorency, the general of the catholics, was killed combating bravely at the head of his troops, the hugonots were finally defeated. Condé collecting his broken troops, and receiving a strong reinforcement from the German protestants, appeared again in the field; and laying siege to Chartres, a place of great importance, obliged the court to agree to a new accommodation. Such was the mutual animosity of these religionists, that, even had the leaders on both sides been ever so sincere in their intentions for peace,

and

C H A P.

XL.

1571.

and reposed ever so great confidence in each other, it would have been difficult to have retained the people in tranquillity; much more, where such extreme jealousy prevailed, and where the court employed every pacification as a snare for their enemies. A plan was laid for seizing the person of the prince and admiral; who narrowly escaped to Rochelle, and summoned their partizans to their assistance*. The civil wars were renewed with greater fury than ever, and the parties became still more exasperated against each other. The young duke of Anjou, brother to the King, commanded the forces of the catholics; and fought in 1569 a great battle at Jarnac with the hugonots, where the prince of Condé was killed, and his army defeated. This discomfiture, with the loss of so great a leader, reduced not the hugonots to despair. The admiral still supported the cause; and having placed at the head of the protestants, the prince of Navarre, then sixteen years of age, and the young prince of Condé, he encouraged the party rather to perish bravely in the field, than ignominiously by the hands of the executioner. He collected such numbers, so determined to endure every extremity, that he was enabled to make head against the duke of Anjou; and being strengthened by a new reinforcement of Germans, he obliged that prince to retreat and to divide his forces. Coligni then laid siege to Poitiers; and as the eyes of all France were turned on this enterprize, the duke of Guise, emulous of the renown, which his father had acquired by the defence of Mentz, threw himself into the place, and so animated the garrison by his valour and conduct, that the admiral was obliged to raise the siege. Such was the commencement of that unrivaled fame and grandeur, afterwards attained by this duke of Guise. The attachment, which all the catholics had born to his father, was immediately transferred to the son; and men pleased themselves

* Davila, lib. 4.

in comparing all the great and heroic qualities, which seemed, in a manner, hereditary in that family. Equal in affability, in munificence, in address, in eloquence, and in every quality, which engages the affections of men; equal also in valour, in conduct, in enterprize, in capacity; there seemed only this difference between them, that the son, educated in more turbulent times, and finding a greater dissolution of all law and order, exceeded the father in ambition and temerity, and was engaged in enterprizes still more destructive to the authority of his sovereign and to the repose of his native country.

CHAP.
XL.

1571.

ELIZABETH, who kept her attention fixed on the civil commotions of France, was no wise pleased with this new rise of her enemies, the Guises; and being anxious for the fate of the protestants, whose interests were connected with her own¹, she was engaged, notwithstanding her aversion against all rebellion, and all opposition to the will of the sovereign, to give them secretly some assistance. Besides employing her authority with the German princes, she sent money to the Queen of Navarre, and received some jewels as pledges for the loan. And she permitted Henry Champernon to levy, and transport over into France, a regiment of an hundred gentlemen volunteers; among whom Walter Raleigh, then a young man, began to distinguish himself in that great school of military valour^m. The admiral, constrained by the impatience of his troops, and by the difficulty of subsisting them, fought with the duke of Anjou, the battle of Moncontour in Poictou, where he was wounded and defeated. The court of France, notwithstanding their frequent experience of the obstinacy of the hugonots, and the vigour of Coligni, vainly flattered themselves that the force of the rebels was at last finally annihilated; and they neglected farther preparations against a foe, who, they thought,

¹ Haynes, p. 471.^m Camden, p. 423.

could never more become dangerous. They were surprized to hear, that that leader had appeared in another quarter of the kingdom; had encouraged the young princes, whom he governed, to equal constancy; had assembled an army; had taken the field; and was even strong enough to threaten Paris. The public finances, diminished by the continued disorders of the kingdom, and wasted by so many fruitless military enterprizes, could no longer bear the charge of a new armament; and the King, notwithstanding his extreme animosity against the hugonots, was obliged, in 1570, to conclude an accommodation with them, to grant them a pardon for all past offences, and to renew the edicts for liberty of conscience.

Tho' a pacification was seemingly concluded, the mind of Charles was no wise reconciled to his rebellious subjects; and this accommodation, like all the foregoing, was nothing but a snare, by which the perfidious court had projected to destroy at once, without danger, all its formidable enemies. As the two young princes, the admiral, and all the leaders of the hugonots, instructed by past experience, discovered an extreme distrust of the King's intentions, and kept themselves in security, at a distance, all possible artifices were employed to remove their apprehensions, and convince them of the sincerity of the new counsels, which seemed to be embraced. The terms of the peace were strictly observed to them; the toleration was regularly maintained; all attempts, made by the zealous catholics to infringe it, were punished with severity; offices, and favours, and honours were bestowed on the principal nobility among the protestants; and the King and council every where declared, that, tired of civil disorders, and convinced of the impossibility of forcing men's consciences, they were thenceforth determined to allow every one the free exercise of his religion.

AMONG the other artifices, employed to lull the protestants into a fatal security, Charles affected to enter

enter into close connexions with Elizabeth; and as it seemed not the interest of France to forward the union of the two kingdoms of Great Britain, that princess the more easily flattered herself, that the French monarch would prefer her friendship to that of the Queen of Scots. The better to deceive her, proposals of marriage were made her with the duke of Anjou; a prince whose youth, beauty, and reputation for valour might naturally be supposed to recommend him to a woman, who had appeared not altogether indifferent to these endowments. The Queen immediately founded on this offer the project of deceiving the court of France; and being intent on the artifice of that scheme, she laid herself the more open to be deceived. Negotiations were entered into with regard to the marriage; terms of the contract were proposed; difficulties started and removed; and the two courts, equally insincere, tho' not equally criminal, seemed to approach every day nearer to each other in their demands and concessions. The great obstacle seemed to lie in adjusting the differences of religion; because Elizabeth, who recommended toleration to Charles, was determined not to grant it in her own dominions, not even to her husband; and the duke of Anjou seemed unwilling to submit, for the sake of interest, to the dishonour of an apostacyⁿ.

THE artificial politics of Elizabeth never triumphed so much in any contrivances as in those which were conjoined with her coquetry; and as her character in this particular was generally known, the court of France thought that they might, without danger of forming any final conclusion, venture the farther in their concessions and offers to her. The Queen also had other motives for dissimulation. Besides the advantage of discouraging Mary's partizans by the prospect of an alliance between France and England, her

ⁿ Camden, p. 433. Davila, lib. 5. Digges's Compleat Ambassador, p. 84, 110, 111.

CHAP. situation with Philip demanded her utmost vigilance
 XL. and attention; and the present revolutions in the
 Low Countries made her glad of fortifying herself
 1571. even with the appearance of a new confederacy.

Affairs of
 the Low
 Countries.

THE theological controversies, which had long agitated Europe, had, from the beginning, penetrated into the Low Countries; and as these provinces maintained a very extensive commerce, they had early received from every kingdom, with which they corresponded, a tincture of religious innovation. An opinion at that time prevailed, which had been zealously propagated by the priests, and implicitly received by sovereigns, that heresy was closely connected with rebellion, and that every great or violent alteration in the church involved a like revolution in the state and civil government. The forward zeal of the reformers would seldom allow them to wait the consent of the magistrate to their innovations; they became less dutiful when they were opposed and persecuted; and tho' their pretended spirit of reasoning and enquiry was in reality, among the greatest part of them, nothing but a new species of implicit faith, the prince took the alarm; as if no institutions could be secure from the temerity of their researches. The emperor Charles, who proposed to augment his authority under the pretence of defending the catholic faith, easily adopted these political principles; and notwithstanding the limited prerogative, which he possessed in the Netherlands, he published the most arbitrary, severe, and tyrannical edicts against the protestants, and he took care that the execution of them should be no less violent and sanguinary. He was neither cruel nor bigotted in his natural disposition; yet an historian, celebrated for moderation and caution, has computed, that, in the several persecutions, promoted by that monarch, no less than an hundred thousand persons perished by the hands

hands of the executioner°. But these severe remedies, CHAP.
 so far from answering the purpose intended, had rather XL.
 served to augment the numbers as well as zeal of the
 reformers; and the magistrates of the several towns,
 seeing no end of those barbarous executions, felt
 their humanity rebel against their principles, and de-
 clined any farther persecution of the new doctrines.

1571.

WHEN Philip succeeded to his father's dominions, the Flemings were justly alarmed with new apprehensions; lest their prince, observing the lenity of the magistrates, should take the execution of the edicts from such remiss hands, and should establish the inquisition in the Low Countries, accompanied with all the iniquities and barbarities which attended it in Spain. The severe and unrelenting character of the man, his professed attachment to Spanish manners, the inflexible bigotry of his principles; all these circumstances increased their terror: And when he left the Netherlands, with a known intention never to return, the disgust of the inhabitants was extremely augmented, and their dread of those tyrannical orders, which their sovereign, surrounded with Spanish ministers, would issue from his cabinet of Madrid. He left the dutchess of Parma governess of the Low Countries and the natural good sense and good temper of that princess, had she been entrusted with the sole power, would have preserved the submission of those opulent provinces, which were lost from that refinement of treacherous and barbarous politics, on which Philip so highly valued himself. The Flemings found, that the name alone of regent remained with the dutchess; that cardinal Granville possessed entirely the King's confidence; that attempts were every day made on their liberties; that a resolution was taken never more to assemble the states; that new bishoprics were arbitrarily erected, in order to enforce the executi-

° Grotii Annal. lib. 1. Father Paul, another great authority, computes, in a passage above cited, that 50,000 persons were put to death in the Low-Countries alone.

CHAP.
XL.

1571.

on of the persecuting edicts; and that on the whole, they must make account of being reduced to the condition of a province under the Spanish monarchy. The discontents of the nobility gave countenance to the complaints of the gentry, which encouraged the mutiny of the populace; and all orders of men showed a strong disposition to revolt. Associations were formed, tumultuary petitions presented, names of distinction assumed, badges of party displayed; and the current of the people, impelled by religious zeal and irritated by feeble resistance, rose to such a height, that in several towns, particularly in Antwerp, they made an open invasion on the established worship, pillaged the churches and monasteries, broke the images, and committed the most unwarrantable disorders.

THE wiser part of the nobility, particularly the prince of Orange, and the counts Egmont and Horn, were alarmed with these excesses, to which their own discontents had at first given countenance; and seconding the wisdom of the governors, they suppressed those dangerous insurrections, punished the ring-leaders, and reduced all the provinces to a state of order and submission. But Philip was not contented with the re-establishment of his antient authority: He considered, that provinces, so remote from the seat of government, could not be ruled by a limited prerogative; and that a prince, who must entreat rather than command, would necessarily, when he resided not among the people, feel every day a diminution of his power and influence. He determined, therefore, to lay hold of the late popular mutinies as a pretence for abolishing entirely the privileges of the Low Country provinces; and for ruling them thenceforth with a military and arbitrary authority. In the execution of this violent design, he employed a man, who was a proper instrument in the hands of such a tyrant, Ferdinand of Toledo, duke of Alva, had been educated entirely amidst arms;

arms; and having attained a consummate knowledge in the military art, his habits led him to transfer into all government the severe discipline of a camp, and to conceive no measures between prince and subject but those of rigid command and implicit obedience. This general, in 1568, conducted from Italy to the Low Countries a powerful body of veteran Spaniards; and his avowed animosity to the Flemings, with his known character, struck that whole people with terror and consternation. It belongs not to our subject to relate at length those violences, which Alva's natural barbarity, steeled by reflection, and aggravated by insolence exercised on those flourishing provinces. It suffices to say, that all their privileges, the gift of so many princes, and the inheritance of so many ages, were openly and expressly abolished by edict; arbitrary and sanguinary tribunals erected; the counts Egmont and Horn, notwithstanding their great merits and past services, brought to the scaffold; multitudes of all ranks thrown into prison; and thence delivered over to the executioner: And notwithstanding the peaceable submission of all men, nothing was heard of but confiscation, imprisonment, exile, torture, and death.

ELIZABETH was equally displeased to see the progress of that scheme, laid for the extermination of the protestants, and to observe the erection of so great a military power, in a state situated so near her. She gave protection to all the Flemish exiles who took shelter in her dominions; and as many of these were the most industrious inhabitants of the Netherlands, and had rendered that country so celebrated for its arts, she reaped the advantage of introducing into England some useful manufactures, which were formerly unknown in that kingdom. Foreseeing that the violent government of Alva could not long subsist without exciting some commotion, she ventured to commit an insult upon him, which she would have been cautious not to hazard against a more established authority.

Some

CHAP.

XL.

1571.

CHAP.

XL.

1571.

Some Genoese merchants had engaged by contract with Philip, to transport into Flanders the sum of four hundred thousand crowns; and the vessels in which this money was embarked, had been attacked in the Channel by some privateers equipped by the French Hugonots, and had taken shelter in Plymouth and Southampton. The commanders of the ships pretended, that the money belonged to the King of Spain; but the Queen finding, upon enquiry, that it was the property of Genoese merchants, took possession of it as a loan; and by that means deprived the duke of Alva of this resource in the time of his greatest necessity. Alva, in revenge, seized all the English merchants in the Low Countries, threw them into prison, and confiscated their effects. The Queen retaliated by a like violence on the Flemish and Spanish merchants; and gave all the English liberty to make reprisals on the subjects of Philip. These differences were afterwards accommodated by treaty, and mutual reparations were made to the merchants: But nothing could repair the loss which so well-timed a blow inflicted on the Spanish government in the Low Countries. Alva, in want of money, and dreading the immediate mutiny of his troops, to whom large arrears were due, imposed by his arbitrary will the most ruinous taxes on the people. He not only required the hundredth penny, and the twentieth of all immoveable goods: He also demanded the tenth of all moveable goods on every sale; an absurd tyranny, which would not only have destroyed all arts and commerce, but even have restrained the common intercourse of life. The people refused compliance: The duke had recourse to his usual expedient of hanging: And thus matters came still nearer the last extremity between the Flemings and the Spaniards^p.

ALL the enemies of Elizabeth, in order to revenge themselves for her insults, had naturally recourse to one policy, the supporting the cause and pretensions of the

^p Bentivoglio, part. I. lib. V. Camden, p. 416.



Queen of Scots; and Alva, whose measures were ever violent, soon opened a secret intercourse with that princess. There was one Rodolphi, a Florentine merchant, who had resided about fifteen years in London, and who, at the same time that he conducted his commerce in England, had managed all the intrigues of the court of Rome with the catholic nobility and gentry^a. He had been thrown into prison at the time when the duke of Norfolk's intrigues with Mary were discovered; but either no proof was found against him, or the part which he had acted was not very criminal; and he soon after recovered his liberty. This man, zealous for promoting the catholic faith, had formed a scheme, in concert with the Spanish ambassador, for subverting the government, by a foreign invasion, and a domestic insurrection; and when he communicated his project, by letter, to Mary, he found, that as she was now fully convinced of Elizabeth's artifices, and despaired of ever recovering her authority, or even her liberty, by pacific measures, she very willingly gave her concurrence. The great number of discontented catholics were the chief source of their hopes on the side of England; and they also observed, that the kingdom was, at that time, full of indigent gentry chiefly younger brothers, who having at present, by the late decay of the church, and the yet languishing state of commerce, no prospect of a livelihood suitable to their birth, were ready to throw themselves into any desperate enterprize^c. But in order to inspire spirit and courage into all these malecontents, it was requisite, that some great nobleman should put himself at their head; and no one appeared to Rodolphi, and to the bishop of Ross, who entered into all these intrigues, so proper, both on account of his power and his popularity, as the duke of Norfolk.

THIS nobleman, when released from confinement in the Tower, had given his promise, that he would

^a Lesley, p. 123. State Trials, vol. i. p. 87.

^c Lesley, p. 123.

CHAP.

XL.

1571.

Some Genoese merchants had engaged by contract with Philip, to transport into Flanders the sum of four hundred thousand crowns; and the vessels in which this money was embarked, had been attacked in the Channel by some privateers equipped by the French Hugonots, and had taken shelter in Plymouth and Southampton. The commanders of the ships pretended, that the money belonged to the King of Spain; but the Queen finding, upon enquiry, that it was the property of Genoese merchants, took possession of it as a loan; and by that means deprived the duke of Alva of this resource in the time of his greatest necessity. Alva, in revenge, seized all the English merchants in the Low Countries, threw them into prison, and confiscated their effects. The Queen retaliated by a like violence on the Flemish and Spanish merchants; and gave all the English liberty to make reprisals on the subjects of Philip. These differences were afterwards accommodated by treaty, and mutual reparations were made to the merchants: But nothing could repair the loss which so well-timed a blow inflicted on the Spanish government in the Low Countries. Alva, in want of money, and dreading the immediate mutiny of his troops, to whom large arrears were due, imposed by his arbitrary will the most ruinous taxes on the people. He not only required the hundredth penny, and the twentieth of all immoveable goods: He also demanded the tenth of all moveable goods on every sale; an absurd tyranny, which would not only have destroyed all arts and commerce, but even have restrained the common intercourse of life. The people refused compliance: The duke had recourse to his usual expedient of hanging: And thus matters came still nearer the last extremity between the Flemings and the Spaniards^p.

ALL the enemies of Elizabeth, in order to revenge themselves for her insults, had naturally recourse to one policy, the supporting the cause and pretensions of the

^p Bentivoglio, part. I. lib. V. Camden, p. 416.

Queen



Queen of Scots; and Alva, whose measures were ever violent, soon opened a secret intercourse with that princess. There was one Rodolphi, a Florentine merchant, who had resided about fifteen years in London, and who, at the same time that he conducted his commerce in England, had managed all the intrigues of the court of Rome with the catholic nobility and gentry^a. He had been thrown into prison at the time when the duke of Norfolk's intrigues with Mary were discovered; but either no proof was found against him, or the part which he had acted was not very criminal; and he soon after recovered his liberty. This man, zealous for promoting the catholic faith, had formed a scheme, in concert with the Spanish ambassador, for subverting the government, by a foreign invasion, and a domestic insurrection; and when he communicated his project, by letter, to Mary, he found, that as she was now fully convinced of Elizabeth's artifices, and despaired of ever recovering her authority, or even her liberty, by pacific measures, she very willingly gave her concurrence. The great number of discontented catholics were the chief source of their hopes on the side of England; and they also observed, that the kingdom was, at that time, full of indigent gentry chiefly younger brothers, who having at present, by the late decay of the church, and the yet languishing state of commerce, no prospect of a livelihood suitable to their birth, were ready to throw themselves into any desperate enterprize^r. But in order to inspire spirit and courage into all these malecontents, it was requisite, that some great nobleman should put himself at their head; and no one appeared to Rodolphi, and to the bishop of Ross, who entered into all these intrigues, so proper, both on account of his power and his popularity, as the duke of Norfolk.

THIS nobleman, when released from confinement in the Tower, had given his promise, that he would

^a Lesley, p. 123. State Trials, vol. i. p. 87.

^r Lesley, p. 123.

CHAP. drop all intercourse with the Queen of Scots^a; but
 XL. finding that he had lost, and, as he feared, beyond
 1571. all recovery, the confidence and favour of Elizabeth,
 and being still, in some degree, restrained from his
 liberty, he was tempted, by impatience and despair,
 to violate his word, and to open anew his correspon-
 dence with the captive princess^t. A promise of
 marriage was renewed between them; the duke en-
 gaged to enter into all her interests; and as his re-
 morfes gradually decayed in the course of these trans-
 actions, he was pushed to give his assent to enterprizes
 still more criminal. Rodolphi's plan was, that the
 duke of Alva should, on some other pretence, assem-
 ble a great quantity of shipping in the Low Coun-
 tries; should transport a body of six thousand foot,
 and four thousand horse, into England; should land
 them at Harwich, where the duke of Norfolk was
 to join them with all his friends; should thence march
 directly to London, and oblige the Queen to submit
 to whatever conditions the conspirators should please
 to impose upon her^u. Norfolk gave his consent to
 this plan; and three letters in consequence of it,
 were wrote in his name by Rodolphi, one to Alva,
 another to the pope, and a third to the King of Spain;
 but the duke, apprehensive of the danger, refused to
 sign them^x. He only sent to the Spanish ambassador
 a servant and confident, named Barker, as well to no-
 tify his concurrence in the plan, as to vouch for the
 authenticity of these letters; and Rodolphi, having
 obtained a letter of credence from the ambassador,
 proceeded on his journey to Brussels and to Rome.
 The duke of Alva and the pope embraced the scheme
 with alacrity: Rodolphi informed Norfolk of their
 intentions^y; and every thing seemed to concur in
 forwarding the undertaking.

^a Haynes, p. 571.^t State Trials, vol. i. p. 102.^u Lesley, p. 155. State Trials, vol. i. p. 86, 87.^x Lesley, p. 159, 161. Camden, p. 432.^y State Trials, vol. i. p. 93.

1571.

NORFOLK, notwithstanding these criminal enterprises, had never entirely forgot his duty to his sovereign, his country, and his religion; and tho' he had laid the plan both for an invasion and an insurrection, he still flattered himself, that the innocence of his intentions would justify the violence of his measures, and that, as he aimed at nothing but the liberty of the Queen of Scots, and the obtaining Elizabeth's consent to his marriage, he could not justly reproach himself as a rebel and a traitor^z. It is certain, however, that, considering the Queen's vigour and spirit, the scheme, if successful, must finally have ended in her dethronement; and her authority was here exposed to the utmost danger. The conspiracy had hitherto entirely escaped the vigilance of Elizabeth, and that of secretary Cecil, who now bore the title of lord Burleigh. It was from another attempt of Norfolk, that they first obtained a hint, which, being diligently traced, led at last to a full discovery. Mary had intended to send a sum of Money to lord Herreis, and her partizans in Scotland; and Norfolk undertook to have it conveyed to Bannister, a servant of his, at that time in the north, who was to find some expedient to have it delivered to lord Herreis^a. He entrusted the money to a servant who was not in the secret, and told him that the bag contained a sum of silver, which he was to deliver to Bannister, with a letter: But the servant, conjecturing from the weight and size of the bag, that it was full of gold, carried the letter to Burleigh; who immediately ordered Bannister, Barker, and Hicford, the duke's secretary, to be put under arrest, and to undergoe a severe examination. The torture made them confess the whole truth; and as Hicford, tho' ordered to burn all papers, had carefully kept them concealed under the mats of the duke's chamber, and under the tiles of the house, full evidence now

^z Lesley, p. 158.
I. p. 87. Camden, p. 434.
vol. ii. p. 82.

^a Ibid. p. 169. State Trials, vol.
Digges, p. 134, 137, 140. Strype,

CHAP. appeared against his master^b. Norfolk himself, who
 XL. was intirely ignorant of the discoveries made by his
 1571. servants, was brought before the council, and tho' ex-
 horted to atone for his guilt by a full confession, he
 persisted in denying every accusation with which he
 was charged. The Queen always declared, that if he
 had given her this proof of his sincere repentance, she
 would have pardoned all his former offences^c; but
 finding him obstinate, she committed him to the Tow-
 er, and ordered him to be brought to his trial. The
 bishop of Ross had, on some suspicion, been commit-
 ted to custody before the discovery of Norfolk's guilt;
 and every expedient was employed to make him re-
 veal his share in the conspiracy. He at first insisted on
 his privilege as an ambassador; but he was told, that
 as his mistress was no longer a sovereign, he would
 not be regarded as an ambassador, and that even if
 that character was allowed, it did not warrant him
 in conspiring against the sovereign in whose court
 he resided^d. As he still refused to answer interroga-
 tories, he was informed of the confession made by
 Norfolk's servants; after which he entertained no lon-
 1572. ger any scruple to make a full discovery, and his evi-
 12 Janua- tion. A jury of twenty-five peers unanimously passed
 iv. sentence upon him. The trial was quite regular, even
 Trial of according to the strict rules observed at present in these
 Norfolk. matters; except that the witnesses gave not their evi-
 dence in court, and were not confronted with the cri-
 minal: A laudable practice, which was not at that
 time observed in trials for high treason.

The Queen still hesitated concerning Norfolk's exe-
 cution; whether that she was really moved by friend-
 ship and compassion, towards a peer of that rank and
 merit, or, that affecting the praise of clemency, she on-
 ly put on the appearance of these sentiments. Twice

^b Lesley, p. 173.
 Spotswood.

^c Ibid. p. 175.

^d Ibid. p. 189.

she signed a warrant for his execution, and twice re-
 voked the fatal sentence^d; and tho' her ministers and
 counsellors pushed her to rigour, she still appeared
 irresolute and undetermined. After four months he-
 sitation, a Parliament was assembled; and the com-
 mons addressed her, in very strong terms, for the ex-
 ecution of the duke; a sanction which, when added
 to the greatness and certainty of his guilt, would, she
 thought, justify, in the eyes of all the world, her se-
 verity against that nobleman. Norfolk died with
 great calmness and constancy; and tho' he cleared him-
 self of any disloyal intentions against the Queen's au-
 thority, he acknowledged the justice of the sentence by
 which he suffered^e. That we may relate together
 affairs of a like nature, we shall mention, that the earl
 of Northumberland, being delivered up to the Queen
 by the regent of Scotland, was also a few months af-
 ter brought to the scaffold for his rebellion.

THE Queen of Scots was either the occasion or
 the cause of all these disturbances; but as she was
 a sovereign princess, and might reasonably, from the
 harsh treatment which she had met with, think her-
 self entitled to use any expedient for her relief, Eli-
 zabeth durst not, as yet, form any resolution of pro-
 ceeding to extremity against her. She only sent
 lord Delawar, Sir Ralph Sadler, Sir Thomas Bromley,
 and Dr. Wilson, to expostulate with her, and to re-
 quire satisfaction for all those parts of her conduct,
 which, from the beginning of her life, had given
 exception to Elizabeth: Her assuming the arms of
 England, refusing to ratify the treaty of Edinburgh,
 her intending to marry Norfolk without the Queen's
 consent, her concurring in the northern rebelli-
 on^f, practising with Rodolphi to engage the King
 of Spain in an invasion of England^g, procuring the

CHAP.
XL.

1572.
His exe-
cution.

8th May.

2d June.

^d Carte, p. 527. from Fenelon's dispatches. Digges, p. 166.
 Strype, vol. II. p. 83. ^e Camden, p. 440. Strype, vol. II.
 App. p. 23. ^f Digges, p. 16, 107. Strype, vol. II. p. 51,
 52. ^g Ibid. p. 194, 208, 209. Strype, vol. II. p. 40, 51.

CHAP. pope's bull of excommunication, and allowing her
 XL. friends abroad to give her the title of Queen of En-
 1572. gland. Mary justified herself from the several arti-
 cles of this charge, either by denying the facts im-
 puted to her, or by throwing the blame on others^h. But the Queen was little satisfied with her apology; and the Parliament was so enraged against her, that the commons made a direct application for her immediate trial and execution. They employed some topics derived from practice and reason, and the laws of nations; but the chief stress was laid on passages and examples from the Old Testamentⁱ, which, if considered as a general rule of conduct, (an intention which it is unreasonable to suppose) would imply consequences dangerous to all the principles of humanity and morality. Matters were here carried farther than Elizabeth intended; and being satisfied with shewing Mary the disposition of the nation, she sent to the house her express commands not to deal any farther at present in the affair of the Scottish Queen^k. Nothing could be a stronger proof that the puritanical interest prevailed in the house, than the intemperate use of authorities derived from scripture, especially from the Old Testament; and the Queen was so little a lover of that sect, that she was not likely to make any concession merely in deference to their solicitation. She shewed this session her disapprobation of their schemes in another remarkable instance. There had passed in the lower house two bills, for regulating ecclesiastical ceremonies; but she sent them a like imperious message with the foregoing, and by the terror of her prerogative stopt all farther proceedings^l.

BUT tho' Elizabeth would not proceed to such extremities against Mary, as were recommended to her by the Parliament, she was alarmed with the great interest and the restless spirit of that princess, as well as

^h Camden, p. 442.

^k Ibid. p. 219. 241.

ⁱ D'Ewes, p. 207, 208, &c.

^l D'Ewes, p. 213, 238.

her close connections with Spain; and she thought it necessary both to increase the rigour and strictness of her confinement, and to follow maxims different from what she had hitherto pursued in her management of Scotland^m. That kingdom remained still in a state of anarchy. The castle of Edinburgh, commanded by Kirkaldy of Grange, had declared for the Queen; and the lords of that party, encouraged by his countenance, had taken possession of the capital, and carried on a vigorous war against the regent. By a sudden and unexpected inroad, they seized that nobleman at Stirling; but finding that his friends, rallying from the castle, were likely to relieve him, they instantly put him to death. The earl of Marre was chosen regent in his place; and found the same difficulties to encounter in the government of that divided country. He was therefore glad to accept of the mediation of the French and English ambassadors, and to conclude on equal terms a truce with the Queen's partyⁿ. He was a man of a free and generous spirit, and scorned to submit to any dependance on England; and for this reason Elizabeth, who had formed close connections with France, yielded with less reluctance to the solicitations of that court, still maintained the appearance of neutrality between the parties, and allowed matters to remain on a ballance in Scotland^o. But affairs soon after took a new turn: Marre died of melancholy, with which the distracted state of the country affected him: Morton was chosen regent; and as this nobleman had secretly taken all his measures with Elizabeth, who no longer relied on the friendship of the French court, she resolved to exert herself more effectually for the support of that party, whom she had always favoured. She sent Sir Henry Killigrew ambassador into Scotland, who found Mary's partizans so discouraged by the discovery and

CHAP.

XL.

1572.

Scots affairs.

^m Digges, p. 152.
156, 165, 169.

ⁿ Spotswood, p. 263.

^o Digges, p.

CHAP.

XL.

1572.

punishment of Norfolk's conspiracy, that they were glad to submit to the King's authority, and accept of an indemnity for all past offences^p. The duke of Chatelrault, and the earl of Huntley, with the most considerable of Mary's friends, laid down their arms on these conditions. The garrison alone of the castle of Edinburgh continued refractory. Kirkaldy's fortunes were desperate; and he flattered himself with the hopes of receiving assistance from the Kings of France and Spain, who encouraged his obstinacy, in the view of being able, from that quarter, to give disturbance to England. Elizabeth was alarmed with the danger; she no more apprehended the making an entire breach with the Queen of Scots, who, she found, could not any longer be amused by her artifices; she had an implicit reliance on Morton; and she saw, that, by the submission of all the considerable nobility, the pacification of Scotland would be an easy, as well as a most important undertaking. She, therefore, ordered Sir William Drury, governor of Berwic, to march with some troops and artillery to Edinburgh, and to besiege the castle^q. The garrison submitted at discretion; Kirkaldy was delivered to his countrymen, by whom he was tried and executed: Secretary Lidington, who had taken part with him, died soon after a voluntary death, as is supposed; and Scotland, submitting entirely to the regent, gave not, during a long time, any farther inquietude to Elizabeth.

French
affairs.

THE events which happened in France, were not so agreeable to the Queen's interests and inclinations. The fallacious pacifications, which had been so often made with the Hugonots, gave them good reason to suspect the present intentions of the court; and after all the other leaders of that party were deceived into a dangerous credulity, the sagacious admiral still remained doubtful and uncertain. But his suspicions were

^p Spotswood, p. 268.

^q Camden, p. 449.

at last overcome, partly by the profound dissimulation of Charles, partly by his own earnest desire to end the miseries of France, and return again to the performance of his duty towards his prince and country.

C H A P.

XL.

1572.

He considered besides, that as the former violent conduct of the court had ever met with such fatal success, it was not unlikely, that a prince, who had newly come to years of discretion, and appeared not to be rivetted in any dangerous animosities or prejudices, would be induced to govern himself by more moderate maxims. And as Charles was young, was of a passionate hasty temper, and addicted to pleasure, such deep perfidy seemed either remote from his character, or difficult, and almost impossible to be so uniformly supported by him. Moved by these considerations, the admiral, the Queen of Navarre, and all the Hugonots began to repose themselves in full security, and gave credit to the treacherous caresses and professions of the French court. Elizabeth herself, notwithstanding her great experience and penetration, entertained not the least mistrust of Charles's sincerity; and being pleased to find her enemies of the house of Guise removed from all authority, and to observe an animosity every day growing between the French and Spanish monarchs, she concluded a defensive league with the former, and regarded this alliance as an invincible barrier to her throne. Walsingham, her ambassador sent her over, by every courier, the most satisfactory accounts of the honour, and plain-dealing, and fidelity of that perfidious prince.

THE better to blind the eyes of the jealous Hugonots and draw their leaders into the snare prepared for them, Charles offered his sister, Margaret, in marriage to the prince of Navarre; and the admiral, with all the considerable nobility of that party, had come to Paris, in order to assist at the celebration of these

* Digges, p. 8, 39.

† Camden, p. 443.

CHAP.

XL.

1572.

24th Aug.
Maffacre
of Paris.

nuptials, which, it was hoped, would finally, if not compose the differences, at least appease the bloody animosity of the two religions. The Queen of Navarre was poisoned by orders from the court; the admiral was dangerously wounded by an assassin: Yet Charles, by redoubling his dissimulation was still able to retain the Hugonots in their security: Till on the evening of St. Bartholomew, a few days after the marriage, the signal was given for a general massacre of those religionists, and the King himself in person led the way to these assassinations. The hatred long entertained by the Parisians against the protestants, made them second, without any preparation, the fury of the court; and all conditions, ages and sexes, suspected of any propensity to that religion, were involved in an undistinguished ruin. The admiral, his son-in-law Teligni, Soubize, Rochefoucaut, Pardailhon, Piles, Lavardin; men, who, during the late wars, had distinguished themselves by the most heroic actions, were miserably butchered without resistance; the streets of Paris flowed with blood; and the people more enraged than satiated with their cruelty, as if repining that death had saved the victims from farther insult, exercised on their dead bodies all the rage of the most licentious brutality. About five hundred gentlemen and men of rank perished in this massacre; and near ten thousand of inferior condition^u. Orders were suddenly dispatched to all the provinces for a like general execution of the protestants; and in Rouën, Lyons, and many other cities, the people emulated the fury of the capital. Even the murder of the King of Navarre, and the prince of Condé had been proposed by the duke of Guise; but Charles, softened by the amiable manners of the King of Navarre, and hoping that these young princes might easily be converted to the catholic faith, determined to spare their lives, tho' he obliged them to purchase their safety by a seeming change of their religion.

^u Davila, lib. v.

CHARLES, in order to cover this barbarous perfidy, pretended, that a conspiracy of the Hugonots to seize his person had been suddenly discovered; and that he had been necessitated, for his own defence, to proceed to this severity against them. He sent orders to Fenelon, his ambassador in England, to ask an audience, and to give Elizabeth this account of the late transaction. That minister, who was a man of probity, abhorred the treachery and cruelty of his court, and even scrupled not to declare, that he was now ashamed to bear the name of a Frenchman^x; yet was he obliged to obey his orders, and make use of the apology, which had been prescribed to him. He met with that reception from all the courtiers, which, he knew, the conduct of his master had so well merited. Nothing could be more awful and affecting than the solemnity of his audience. A melancholy sorrow sat on every face: Silence, as in the dead of night, reigned thro' all the chambers of the royal apartment: The courtiers and ladies, clad in deep mourning, were ranged on each side, and allowed him to pass, without affording him one salute or favourable look; till he was admitted to the Queen herself^y. That princess received him with a more easy, if not a more gracious countenance; and heard his apology, without discovering any visible symptoms of indignation. She then told him, that, tho', on the first rumour of this dreadful intelligence, she had been astonished, that so many brave men and loyal subjects, who rested secure on the faith of their sovereign, should have been suddenly butchered in so barbarous a manner; she had hitherto suspended her judgment, till farther and more certain information should be brought her: That the account, which he had given, even if founded on no mistake or bad information; tho' it might alleviate, would by no means remove the blame of the King's counsellors, or

CHAP.

XL.

1572.

^x Digges, p. 247.
Fenelon's Dispatches.

^y Carte vol. iii. p. 522. from Fenelon's Dispatches.

CHAP. justify the strange irregularity of their proceedings:
 XL. That the same force, which without resistance had
 1572. massacred so many defenceless men, could easily have
 secured their persons, and have reserved them for a
 trial, and for punishment by a formal sentence, which
 would have distinguished the innocent from the guilty;
 That the admiral in particular, being dangerously
 wounded, and environed by the guards of the King,
 on whose protection he seemed entirely to rely, had
 no means of escape, and might surely, before his
 death, have been convicted of the crimes imputed to
 him: That it was more worthy of a sovereign to re-
 serve in his own hands the sword of justice, than to
 commit it to bloody murderers, who, being the de-
 clared and mortal enemies of the persons accused,
 employed it without mercy and without distinction:
 That if these sentiments were just, even supposing the
 conspiracy of the protestants to be real; how much
 more so, if that crime was nothing but a calumny of
 their enemies, invented for their ruin and destruction?
 That if upon enquiry the innocence of these unhap-
 py victims should afterwards appear, it was the King's
 duty to turn his vengeance on their enemies and ca-
 lumniators, who had thus cruelly abused his confi-
 dence, had murdered so many of his brave subjects,
 and had done what in them lay to cover him with in-
 famy and dishonour: And that for her part, she
 should form her judgment of his intentions by his
 subsequent conduct; and in the mean time should
 act as desired by the ambassador, and rather pity
 than blame his master for the extremities, to which
 he had been carried^z.

ELIZABETH was fully sensible of the dangerous
 situation in which she now stood. In the massacre of
 Paris, she saw the result of that general conspiracy,
 which had been formed for the extermination of the
 protestants; and she knew, that she herself, as the head

^z Digges, p. 247, 248.

and protector of that religion, was exposed to the utmost fury and resentment of the catholics. The violences and cruelties of the Spaniards in the Low Countries were another branch of the same conspiracy; and as Charles and Philip, two princes nearly allied in perfidy and barbarity, as well as in bigotry, had now laid aside their pretended quarrel, and had avowed the most entire friendship^a, she had reason, so soon as they had appeased their domestic commotions, to dread the effects of their united councils. The duke of Guise also and his family, whom Charles, in order to deceive the admiral, had hitherto kept at a distance, had now acquired an open and entire ascendant in the court of France; and she was sensible, that these princes, from personal as well as political reasons, were her declared and implacable enemies. The Queen of Scots, their near relation and close confederate, was the pretender to her throne; and tho' detained in custody, was actuated by a restless spirit, and besides her foreign allies, possessed very numerous and zealous partizans in the heart of the kingdom. For these reasons, Elizabeth thought it more prudent not to break all terms with the French monarch; but still to listen to the professions of friendship, which he made her. She allowed even the negotiations to be renewed for her marriage with the duke of Alençon, Charles's third brother: Those with the duke of Anjou had already been broke off. She sent the earl of Worcester to assist in her name at the baptism of a young princess, born to Charles; but before she agreed to give this last mark of condescension, she thought it becoming her dignity, to renew her expressions of blame and even of detestation against the cruelties exercised on his protestant subjects^c. Meanwhile, she prepared herself for that attack, which seemed to threaten her from

CHAP.
XL.

1572.

^a Digges, p. 268, 282.^b Ibid. passim. Camden, p. 447.^c Digges, p. 297, 298. Camden, p. 447.

CHAP. the combined power and violence of the Romanists :
 XL. She fortified Portsmouth, put her fleet in order, ex-
 1572. exercised her militia, cultivated popularity with her
 subjects, acted with vigour for the farther reduction
 of Scotland under obedience to the young King, and
 renewed her alliance with the German princes, who
 were no less alarmed than herself at these treache-
 rous and sanguinary measures, so universally em-
 braced by the catholics.

French
 affairs.

1573.

BUT tho' Elizabeth cautiously avoided the coming
 to extremities with Charles, the greatest security,
 which she possessed against his violence, was derived
 from the difficulties, which the obstinate resistance of
 the hugonots still created to him. Such of that sect
 as lived near the frontiers, immediately, on the first
 news of the massacres, fled into England, Germany
 or Switzerland, where they excited the compassion
 and indignation of the protestants, and prepared
 themselves, with encreased forces and redoubled zeal,
 to return into France, and revenge the treacherous
 slaughter of their brethren. Those who lived in the
 middle of the kingdom took shelter in the nearest
 garrisons, occupied by the hugonots; and finding,
 that they could repose no faith in capitulations, and
 expect no clemency, were determined to defend
 themselves to the last extremity. The sect, which
 Charles had thought at one blow to exterminate, had
 now an army of eighteen thousand men on foot,
 and possessed in different parts of the kingdom above
 an hundred cities, castles, or fortresses^d; nor could
 that prince deem himself secure from the invasion
 threatened him by all the other protestants of Europe.
 The nobility and gentry of England were roused to
 such a pitch of resentment, that they offered to levy
 an army of twenty-two thousand foot and four thou-
 sand horse, to transport them into France, and to
 maintain them six months at their own charge : But

^d Digges, p. 343.

1573.

1574.

30th May.

1575.

Elizabeth, who was cautious in her measures, and who feared to inflame the quarrel between the two religions by these dangerous crusades, refused her consent, and moderated the zeal of her subjects^e. The German princes, less political, or more secure from the resentment of France, forwarded the levies made by the protestants; and the prince of Condé, having escaped from court, put himself at the head of these troops, and prepared to enter the kingdom. The duke of Alençon, the King of Navarre, the family of Montmorenci, and many considerable men even among the catholics, displeased, either on a private or public account, with the measures of the court, favoured the progress of the hugonots; and every thing relapsed into confusion. The King, instead of repenting his violent councils, which had brought matters to such extremity, called aloud for new severities^f; nor could even the mortal distemper, under which he laboured, moderate the rage and animosity, by which he was actuated. He died without male issue, at the age of twenty-five years; a prince, whose character, containing that unusual mixture of dissimulation and ferocity, of quick resentment, and unrelenting vengeance, executed the greatest mischiefs, and threatened still worse, both to his native country and to all Europe. Henry, duke of Anjou, who had, some time before, been elected King of Poland, no sooner heard of his brother's death, than he hastened to take possession of the crown of France; and found the kingdom, not only involved in the greatest present disorders, but exposed to infirmities, for which it was extremely difficult to provide any suitable remedy. The people were divided into two theological factions, furious from their zeal, and mutually enraged from the injuries which they had committed or received; and as all faith had been violated and moderation banished, it seemed impracti-

^e Digges, p. 335, 341.^f Davila, lib. 5.

CHAP. cable to frame any terms of composition between
 XL. them. Each party had devoted itself to leaders,
 1575. whose commands had more authority than the will
 of the sovereign; and even the catholics, to whom
 the King was attached, were conducted entirely by
 the councils of Guise and his family. The religi-
 ous connexions had, on both sides, superseded the
 civil; or rather (for men will always be guided by
 present interest) two empires being secretly formed
 in the kingdom, every individual was engaged by
 new views of interest to follow those leaders, to
 whom, during the course of past convulsions, he had
 been indebted for his honours and preferment.
 Henry, observing the low condition of the crown,
 had laid a scheme for restoring his own authority,
 by acting as umpire between the parties, by mode-
 rating their differences, and by reducing both to a
 dependance upon himself. He possessed all the ta-
 lents of dissimulation requisite for the execution of
 this delicate plan; but being deficient in vigour, ap-
 plication, and sound understanding, instead of ac-
 quiring a superiority over both factions, he lost the
 confidence of both, and taught the partizans of
 each to adhere more closely to their particular lea-
 ders, whom they found more hearty, cordial, and
 1576. sincere, in the cause, which they pursued. The hu-
 gonots were fortified by the accession of a German
 army under the prince of Condé and prince Casimir;
 but much more, by the credit and personal virtues of
 the King of Navarre, who, having fled from court,
 had placed himself at the head of that formidable
 party. Henry, in prosecution of his plan, entered
 into a composition with them; and being desirous of
 preserving a balance between the sects, he granted
 them peace on the most advantageous conditions.
 This was the fifth general peace made with the hu-
 gonots; but tho' it was no more sincere on the part of
 the court than any of the former, it gave the highest
 disgust to the catholics; and afforded the duke of Guise
 the

the desired pretence of declaiming against the measures, and maxims, and conduct of the King. That artful and bold leader took thence an occasion of reducing his party into a more formed and regular body; and he laid the first foundations of the famous LEAGUE, which, without paying any regard to the royal authority, aimed at the entire suppression of the hugonots. Such was the unhappy condition of France, from the past severities and violences of its princes, that toleration could no longer be admitted; and a concession for liberty of conscience, which would have probably appeased the reformers, excited the most violent resentment and animosity in the catholics. Henry, in order to divert the force of the league from himself, and even to elude its efforts against the hugonots, declared himself the head of that seditious confederacy, and took the field as leader of the Romanists. But his dilatory and feeble measures discovered his reluctance to the undertaking; and after some unsuccessful attempts, he concluded a new peace, which, tho' less favorable than the former to the protestants, gave no contentment to the catholics. Mutual diffidence still prevailed between the parties; the King's moderation was suspicious to both; each faction continued to fortify itself against that breach, which, they foresaw, must speedily ensue; theological controversy daily whetted the animosity of the sects; and every private injury became the ground of a public quarrel. The King, hoping, by his artifice and subtlety, to allure the nation into a love of pleasure and repose, was himself caught in the snare; and sinking into dissoluteness and indolence, wholly lost the esteem, and, in a great measure, the affections of the nation. Instead of advancing such men of character and ability, as were neuters between those dangerous factions, he gave all his confidence to young agreeable favourites, who, unable to prop his falling authority, leaned

1576.

1577.

1578.

CHAP. entirely upon it, and encreased the general odium against his administration. The public burthens, en-
 XL. creased by his profuse liberality, and feeling more
 1578. heavy on a disordered kingdom, became another ground of complaint; and the uncontrouled animosity of parties, joined to the multiplicity of taxes, rendered peace more calamitous than any open state of foreign or even domestic hostility. The artifices of the King were too refined to succeed, and too frequent to be concealed; and the plain, direct, and avowed conduct of the duke of Guise on the one side, and that of the King of Navarre on the other, drew by degrees the generality of the nation to devote themselves without reserve to the one or the other of those great leaders.

THE civil commotions of France were of too great importance to be overlooked by the other princes of Europe; and Elizabeth's foresight and vigilance, tho' somewhat restrained by her frugality, led her to take secretly some part in them. Besides employing on all occasions her good offices in favour of the hugonots, she had expended no inconsiderable sums of money in levying that army of Germans, which the prince of Condé and prince Casimir conducted into France²; and notwithstanding all her negotiations with the court, and her professions of amity, she always considered her own interests as connected with the prosperity of the French protestants and the depression of the house of Guise. Philip, on the other hand, had declared himself protector of the league; had entered into the closest correspondence with Guise; and had employed all his authority in supporting the credit of that factious leader. The sympathy of religion, which of itself begot a connexion of interests, was one considerable inducement; but that monarch had also in view, the subduing his rebellious subjects in the Netherlands; who, as they received great encouragement from the

² Camden, p. 452.

French protestants, would, he hoped, finally despair of success, after the entire suppression of their friends and confederates.

CHAP.
XL.

1579.

THE same political views, which engaged Elizabeth to support the hugonots, would have led her to assist the distressed protestants in the Low Countries; but the mighty power of Philip, the tranquillity of all his other dominions, and the great force, which he maintained in these mutinous provinces, kept her in awe, and obliged her, notwithstanding all temptations and all provocations, to preserve some terms of amity with that monarch. The Spanish ambassador remonstrated to her, that many of the Flemish exiles, who infested the seas, and preyed on his master's subjects, were received into the harbours of England, and were there permitted to dispose of their prizes; and by these remonstrances the Queen found herself under a necessity of denying them all entrance into her dominions. But this measure proved in the issue extremely prejudicial to the interests of Philip. These desperate exiles, finding no longer any possibility of subsistence, were forced to attempt the most perilous enterprizes; and they made an assault on the Brille, a seaport town in Holland, where they met with success, and, after a short resistance, became masters of the place^h. The duke of Alva was alarmed with the danger; and stopping those bloody executions, which he was making on the defenceless Flemings, he hastened with his army to extinguish the flame, which, falling on materials so well prepared for combustion, seemed to menace a general conflagration. His fears soon appeared to be well grounded. The people in the neighbourhood of the Brille, enraged by that complication of cruelty, oppression, insolence, usurpation, and persecution, under which they laboured, flew to arms; and in a few days almost the whole province of Holland

^h Camden, p. 443.

CHAP. and that of Zealand had revolted from the Spaniards,
 XL. and had openly declared against the tyranny of Alva.

This event happened in the year 1572.

1579.

WILLIAM, prince of Orange, descended from a sovereign family of great lustre and antiquity in Germany, inheriting the possessions of a sovereign family in France, had fixed his residence in the Low Countries; and on account of his noble birth and immense riches, as well as of his personal virtues, was universally regarded as the greatest subject, who lived in those provinces. He had opposed by all regular and dutiful means the progress of the Spanish usurpations; and when Alva conducted his army into the Netherlands, and assumed the government, this prince, well acquainted with the violent character of the man, and the tyrannical spirit of the court of Madrid, wisely fled from the danger which threatened him, and retired to his paternal estate and dominions in Germany. He was cited to appear before Alva's tribunal, was condemned in absence, was declared a rebel, and his ample possessions in the Low Countries were confiscated. In revenge, he levied an army of protestants in the empire; and made some attempts to restore the Flemings to liberty; but was still repulsed with loss by the vigilance and military conduct of Alva, and by the great bravery as well as discipline, of those veteran Spaniards who served under that general. The revolt of Holland and Zealand, provinces which the prince of Orange formerly commanded, and where he was infinitely beloved, called him anew from his retreat; and he added conduct, no less than spirit, to that obstinate resistance, which was here made to the Spanish dominion. By uniting the revolted towns into a league, he laid the foundation of that illustrious commonwealth, the offspring of industry and liberty, whose arms and policy have made long so signal a figure in every transaction of Europe. He inflamed the inhabitants by every motive,
 which

E L I Z A B E T H.

which religion, resentment, or love of freedom could inspire. Tho' the present greatness of the Spanish monarchy might deprive them of all courage, he still flattered them with the concurrence of the other provinces, and with assistance from the neighbouring states: and he exhorted them, in defence of their religion, their liberties, their lives, to endure the utmost extremities of war. From this spirit proceeded the desperate defence of Harlem; a defence, which nothing but the most consuming famine could overcome, and which the Spaniards revenged by the execution of more than two thousand of the inhabitants¹. This extreme severity, instead of striking terror into the Hollanders, animated them by despair; and the vigorous resistance made at Alcmaer, where Alva was finally repulsed, showed them that their insolent enemies were not wholly invincible. The duke, finding at last the pernicious effects of his violent councils, solicited to be recalled from the government: Medina-celi, who was appointed his successor, refused to accept the charge: Requesens, commendator of Castile, was sent from Italy to replace Alva; and this tyrant departed from the Netherlands in 1574; leaving his name in execration to the inhabitants, and boasting in his turn, that, during the course of five years government, he had delivered above eighteen thousand of these rebellious heretics into the hands of the executioner^k.

C H A P.
XL.
1579.

REQUESENS, tho' a man of milder dispositions, could not appease the violent hatred, which the revolted Hollanders had entertained against the Spanish government; and the war continued as obstinate as ever. In the siege of Leyden undertaken by the Spaniards, the Dutch opened the dykes and sluices, in order to drive them from that enterprize; and the very peasants were active in ruining their fields by an inundation, rather

¹ Bentivoglio, lib. 7.

^k Grotius, lib. 2.

than

CHAP XL. ^{1579.} than fall again under the hated tyranny of Spain. But notwithstanding this repulse, the governor still pursued the war; and the contest seemed too unequal between so mighty a monarchy, and two small provinces, however fortified by nature, and however defended by the desperate resolution of the inhabitants. The prince of Orange, therefore, in 1575, was resolved to sue for foreign assistance, and to make applications to one or other of his great neighbours, Henry or Elizabeth. The court of France was not exempt from that spirit of tyranny and persecution which prevailed among the Spaniards; and that kingdom, torn by domestic dissensions, seemed not to enjoy, at present, either leisure or ability to pay regard to foreign interests. But England, long connected both by commerce and alliance with the Netherlands, and now more concerned in the fate of the revolted provinces by a sympathy in religion, seemed naturally interested in their defence; and as Elizabeth had justly entertained great jealousy against Philip, and governed her powerful and opulent kingdom in perfect tranquillity, great hopes were entertained, that her policy, her ambition, or her generosity, would engage her to support them under their present calamities. They sent therefore a solemn embassy to London, consisting of St. Aldegonde, Douza, Nivelles, Buys, and Melsen; and after employing the most humble supplications to the Queen, they proffered her the possession and sovereignty of their provinces, if she would employ her power in their defence.

THERE were many strong motives which might impel Elizabeth to accept so liberal an offer. She was apprized of the injuries which Philip had done her, by his intrigues with the malecontents in England and Ireland¹: She was displeased to see a violent and military government erected in her neighbourhood:

¹ Digges, p. 73.

She foresaw the danger which she should incur from a total prevalence of the catholics in the Low Countries: And the maritime situation of those provinces, as well as their command over the great rivers, was a very inviting circumstance to a nation like the English, who were beginning to cultivate commerce and naval power. But this princess, tho' magnanimous, had never entertained the ambition of making conquests, or gaining new acquisitions; and the whole purpose of her vigilant and active politics, was to maintain, by the most frugal and cautious expedients, the tranquillity of her own dominions. An open war with the Spanish monarchy was the apparent consequence of her accepting the dominion of these provinces; and after taking the inhabitants under her protection, she could never afterwards in honour abandon them, but, however desperate their defence might become, she must embrace it, even farther than her convenience or interest would permit. For these reasons, she refused, in plain terms, the sovereignty proffered her; but told the ambassadors, that, in return for the good-will which the prince of Orange and the States had shown her, she would endeavour to mediate an agreement for them, on the most reasonable conditions which could be obtained^m. She sent accordingly Sir Henry Cobham to Philip; and represented to him, the danger which he would incur of losing all the Low Countries, if France could obtain the least interval from her intestine disorders, and find leisure to offer her protection to the mutinous and discontented inhabitants. Philip seemed to take this remonstrance in good part; but no accord ensued, and the war continued with the same rage and violence as before.

It was an accident that delivered the Hollanders from their present desperate situation. Requesens, the governor, dying suddenly, the Spanish troops, dis-

^m Camden, p. 453, 454.

CHAP.

XL.

1579.

contented for want of pay, and licentious for want of a proper authority to command them, broke out into a furious mutiny; and threw every thing into confusion. They sacked and pillaged the cities of Maestricht and Antwerp, and committed great slaughter on the inhabitants: They threatened all the other cities with a like fate: And all the provinces, excepting Luxembourg, united for mutual defence against their violence, and called in the prince of Orange and the Hollanders, as their protectors. A treaty, commonly called the pacification of Ghent, was formed by common agreement; where the removal of foreign troops, and the restoration of their antient liberties, were the objects which the provinces stipulated to pursue. Don John of Austria, natural brother to Philip, being appointed governor, found, on his arrival at Luxembourg, that the States had so fortified themselves, and that the Spanish troops were so divided by their situation, that there was no possibility of resistance; and he agreed to the terms required of him. The Spaniards were recalled; and these provinces seemed at last to breathe a little from their calamities.

BUT it was not easy for an entire peace to be settled, while the thirst of revenge and dominion governed the King of Spain, and while the Flemings were so strongly agitated with resentment for past, and fear of future injuries. The ambition of Don John, who coveted this great theatre for his military talents, engaged him rather to enflame than appease the quarrel; and as he found the States determined to impose very strict limitations on his authority, he broke all articles, seized Namur, and procured the recall of the Spanish army from Italy. This prince, endowed with a lofty genius, and animated by the prosperous successes of his youth, had opened his mind to vast undertakings; and looking much beyond the conquest of the revolted provinces,

provinces, had projected to marry the Queen of CHAP.
 Scots, and to acquire in her right the dominion of XL.
 the British kindoms^a. Elizabeth was aware of his
 intentions; and seeing now, from the union of all
 the provinces, a fair prospect of making a long and
 vigorous defence against Spain, she no longer scrupled
 to embrace the protection of their liberties,
 which seemed to be so intimately connected with her
 own safety. After sending them a sum of money,
 about twenty thousand pounds, for the immediate
 pay of their troops, she concluded a treaty with
 them; in which she stipulated to assist them with five
 thousand foot and a thousand horse, at the charge of
 the Flemings; and to lend them an hundred thousand
 pounds, on receiving the bonds of some of the
 most considerable towns of the Netherlands, for her
 re-payment within the year. It was farther agreed,
 that the commander of the English army, should be
 admitted into the council of the States; and nothing
 be determined concerning war or peace, without
 previously informing the Queen or him of it; that
 they should enter into no league without her consent;
 that if any discord arose among themselves, it should
 be referred to her arbitration; and that, if any prince,
 on any pretext, should attempt hostilities against her,
 they should send to her assistance an army equal to that
 which she had employed in their defence. This alliance
 was signed on the 7th of January, 1578°. One considerable
 inducement to the Queen for entering into treaty with the
 States, was to prevent their throwing themselves into the
 arms of France; and she was desirous to make the King
 of Spain believe, that it was her sole motive. She
 represented to him, by her ambassador, Thomas Wilkes,
 that she had hitherto acted religiously the part of a good
 neighbour and ally; had refused the sovereignty of Holland
 and Zealand, when proffered

1579.

^a Camden, p. 466. Grotius, lib. iii.^o Camden, p. 466.

CHAP.

XL.

1579.

her; had counselled the prince of Orange to submit to the King; and had even accompanied her advice with menaces, in case of his refusal. She persevered, she said, in the same friendly intentions; and, as a proof of it, would venture to interpose with her advice for the composition of the present differences: Let Don John, whom she could not but regard as her mortal enemy, be recalled; let some other prince more popular be substituted in his place; let the Spanish armies be withdrawn; let the Flemings be restored to their antient liberties and privileges: And if, after these concessions, they were still obstinate not to return to their duty, she promised to join her arms to those of the King of Spain, and force them to a compliance. Philip dissembled his resentment against the Queen; and still continued to supply Don John with money and troops. That prince, tho' once repulsed at Rimenant, by the valour of the English under Norris, and tho' opposed, as well by the army of the States as by prince Casimir, who had conducted to the Low Countries a great body of Germans, paid by the Queen, gained a great advantage over the Flemings at Gemblours; but was cut off in the midst of his prosperity by poison, given him secretly, as was suspected, by orders from Philip, who dreaded his ambition. The prince of Parma succeeded to the command, who uniting valour and clemency, negociation and military exploits, made great progress against the revolted Flemings, and advanced the progress of the Spaniards by his arts as well as by his arms.

DURING these years, while Europe was almost every where in great commotion, England enjoyed a profound tranquillity; owing chiefly to the prudence and vigour of the Queen's administration, and to the wise precautions which she employed in all her measures. By supporting the zealous protestants in Scotland, she had twice given them the superiority over their

their antagonists, had connected their interests closely with her own, and had procured herself entire security from that quarter, whence the most dangerous invasions could be made upon her. She saw in France her enemies, the Guises, tho' extremely powerful, yet counterballanced by the Hugonots, her zealous partizans; and even hated by the King, who was jealous of their restless and exorbitant ambition. The bigotry of Philip gave her just ground of anxiety; but the same bigotry had happily excited the most obstinate opposition among his own subjects, and had created him enemies, which his arms and policy were not likely soon to overcome. The Queen of Scots, her antagonist and rival, and the pretender to her throne, was a prisoner in her hands; and by her impatience and high spirit had been engaged in practices which afforded the Queen a pretence for rendering her confinement more rigorous, and for cutting off her communication with her partizans in England. Religion was the capital point, on which depended all the political transactions of that age; and the Queen's conduct in this particular, making allowance for the prevailing prejudices of the age, could scarcely be accused of severity or imprudence. She established no inquisition into men's bosoms; she imposed no oaths of supremacy, except on those who received trust or emolument from the public: And tho' the exercise of all religion but the established was prohibited, the violation of this law, by the saying mass, and receiving the sacrament, in private houses, was, in many instances, connived at^p; while, at the same time, the catholics, in the beginning of her reign, shewed little reluctance against going to church, or frequenting the ordinary duties of public worship. The pope, sensible that this practice would by degrees reconcile all his partizans to the reformed reli-

C H A P.

XL.

1579.

^p Camden, p. 459.

CHAP.

XL.

1579.

gion, hastened the publication of the bull, excommunicating the Queen, and freeing her subjects from all oaths of allegiance; and great pains were taken by the emissaries of Rome, to render the breach between the two religions as wide as possible, and to make the frequenting protestant churches appear highly criminal to the catholics^a. These practices, with the rebellions, which ensued, increased the vigilance and severity of the government; but the Romanists, if their condition was compared with that of the Nonconformists in other countries, and with their own practices where they domineered, could not justly complain much of violence or persecution. The Queen appeared rather more anxious to keep a strict hand over the puritans; who, tho' their pretensions were not so immediately dangerous to her authority, seemed to be actuated by a more unreasonable obstinacy, and to retain claims, of which, both in civil and ecclesiastical matters, it was, as yet, difficult to discern the full scope and intention. Some secret attempts of that sect to establish a separate congregation and discipline, had been carefully repressed in the beginning of this reign^r; and when any of the established clergy discovered a tendency to their principles, by omitting the legal habits or ceremonies, the Queen had shewn a determined resolution to punish them by fines and deprivations^s; tho' her orders to that purpose had, by the protection which these sectaries received from some of the most considerable courtiers, been frequently eluded. But what chiefly tended to gain Elizabeth the hearts of her subjects, was, her frugality, which, tho' carried sometimes to an extreme, led her not to amass treasures, but only to prevent impositions upon the people, who

^a Walsingham's Letter in Burnet, vol. ii. 418. Cabbala, p. 406.

^r Strype's Life of Parker, p. 342. Ibid. Life of Grindal, p. 315.

^s Heylin, p. 165, 166.

were at that time very little accustomed to bear the C H A P.
XL.
1579.
burthens of government. By means of her rigid oeconomy, she paid all the debts which she found on the crown, with their full interest; tho' some of these debts had been contracted even during the reign of her father^t. She repaid some loans, which she had exacted at the commencement of her reign; a practice in that age somewhat unusual^u: And she established her credit on such a footing, that no sovereign in Europe could more readily command any sum which the public exigences might at any time require^x. During this peaceable and uniform government, England furnishes few materials for history; and except the small part which Elizabeth took in foreign transactions, there scarce passed any occurrence which requires a particular detail.

THE most memorable event in this period was a Parliament of Parliament, summoned on the 8th of February, 1576, where debates were started, which may appear somewhat curious and singular. Peter Wentworth, a puritan, who had signalized himself in former Parliaments, by his free and undaunted spirit, opened this session with a premeditated harangue, which drew on him the indignation of the house, and gave great offence to the Queen and the Courtiers. As it seems to contain the first rude sketch of those principles of liberty which happily gained afterwards the ascendant in England, it may not be improper to give, in a few words, the substance of it. He premised, that the very name of liberty is sweet; but the thing itself is precious beyond the most inestimable treasure: And that it behoved them to be careful, lest, contenting themselves with the sweetness of the name, they forego the substance, and abandon what of all earthly possessions was of the highest value to the kingdom. He then proceeded to observe, that free-

^t D'Ewes, p. 245. Camden, p. 446.
246.

^x Ibid. p. 245.

^u D'Ewes, p.

CHAP.

XL.

1579.

dom of speech in that house, a privilege so useful both to sovereign and subject, had been formerly infringed in many essential articles, and was, at present, exposed to the most imminent danger: That it was usual, when any subject of importance was handled, especially if it regarded religion, to surmise, that these topics were disagreeable to the Queen, and that the farther proceeding in them would draw down her indignation upon their temerity: That Solomon had justly affirmed the King's displeasure to be a messenger of death; and it was no wonder that men, even tho' urged by motives of conscience and duty, should be inclined to stop short, when they found themselves exposed to so severe a penalty: That by employing this argument, the house was incapacitated from serving their country, or even from serving the Queen herself; whose ears, besieged by pernicious flatterers, were thereby rendered inaccessible to the most salutary truths: That it was a mockery to call an assembly a Parliament, and yet deny them that privilege, which was so essential to their being, and without which they must degenerate into an abject school of servitude and dissimulation: That as the Parliament was the great guardian of the laws, they ought to have liberty to discharge their trust, and to maintain that authority whence even Kings themselves derive their being: That a King was constituted such by law, and tho' he was not dependant on man, yet was he subordinate to God and the law, and was obliged to make their prescriptions, not his own will, the rule of his conduct: That even his commission, as God's vicerent, enforced, instead of loosening, this obligation; since he was thereby invested with authority to execute on earth the will of God, which is nothing but law and justice: That tho' these surmises of displeasing the Queen by their proceedings, had impeached, in a very essential point, all freedom of speech, a privilege granted them by
a spe-

a special law; yet was there a more express and more dangerous invasion made on their liberties, by frequent messages from the throne: That it had become a practice, when the house were entering on any question, either ecclesiastical or civil, to bring an order from the Queen, inhibiting them absolutely to treat of such matters, and barring them all farther discussion of those momentuous articles: That the prelates, emboldened by her royal protection, had assumed a decisive power in all questions of religion, and required that every one should implicitly submit his faith to their arbitrary determinations: That the love which he bore his sovereign, forbad him to be silent under such abuses, or to sacrifice, on this important occasion, his duty to servile flattery and complaisance: And that, as no earthly creature was exempt from fault, so neither was the Queen herself; but in imposing this servitude on her faithful commons, had committed a great, and even dangerous fault, against herself and the whole realm^y.

CHAP.
XL.

1579.

It is easy to observe, from this speech, that in these dawnings of liberty, the parliamentary stile was still crude and unformed; and that the proper decorum of attacking ministers and counsellors, without interesting the honour of the crown, or mentioning the person of the sovereign, was not as yet entirely established. The commons expressed great displeasure at this unusual licence: They sequestered Wentworth from the house, and committed him prisoner to the serjeant at arms. They even ordered him to be examined by a committee, consisting of all those members who were also members of the privy-council, and a report to be made next day to the house. This committee met in the Star-chamber, and wearing the aspect of that arbitrary court, summoned Wentworth to appear before them, and answer for his behaviour. But tho'

^y D'Ewes, p. 236, 237, &c.

CHAP. XL. the commons had discovered so little delicacy or precaution, in thus confounding their own authority with that of the Star-chamber; Wentworth understood better the principles of liberty, and refused to give these counsellors any account of his conduct in Parliament, till he was satisfied that they acted not as members of the privy-council, but as a committee of the house^z. He justified himself by pleading the rigour and hardship of the Queen's messages; and notwithstanding that the committee showed him, by instances in other reigns, that the practice of sending such messages was not unprecedented, he would not agree to express any sorrow or repentance. The issue of the affair was, that, after a month's confinement, the Queen sent to the commons, informing them, that, from her special grace and favour, she had restored him to his liberty and to his place in the house^a. By this seeming lenity, she indirectly retained the power which she had assumed, of imprisoning the members, and obliging them to answer before her for their conduct in Parliament. And Sir Walter Mildmay endeavoured to make the house sensible of her Majesty's goodness, in so gently remitting the indignation which she might justly conceive at the temerity of their member: But he informed them, that they had not the liberty of speaking what and of whom they pleased; and that indiscreet freedoms used in that house, had, both in the present and foregoing ages, met with a proper punishment. He warned them, therefore, not to abuse farther the Queen's clemency; lest she be constrained, contrary to her inclination, to turn an unsuccessful lenity into a necessary severity^b.

THE behaviour of the two houses was, in other respects, equally tame and submissive. Instead of a bill, which was at first introduced^c, for the reformation of

^z D'Ewes, p. 241.

^a Ibid. p. 244.

^b Ibid. p. 259.

^c Ibid. p. 252.

the church, they were contented to present a petition to her majesty for that purpose: And when she told them, that she would give orders to her bishops, to amend all abuses, and if they were negligent, she would herself, by her supreme power and authority over the church, give such redress as would entirely satisfy the nation; the Parliament willingly acquiesced in this sovereign and peremptory decision ^d.

CHAP.

XL.

1579.

THO' the commons shewed so little spirit in opposing the authority of the crown, they maintained, this session, their dignity against an incroachment of the lords, and would not agree to a conference which, they thought, was desired of them in an irregular manner. They acknowledged, however, with all humbleness, (such was their expression) the superiority of the lords: They only refused to give that house any reason for their proceedings; and asserted, that where they altered a bill sent them by the peers, it belonged to them to desire a conference, not to the upper house to require it ^e.

THE commons granted an aid of one subsidy and two fifteenths. Mildmay, in order to satisfy the house concerning the reasonableness of this grant, entered into a detail of the Queen's past expences in supporting the government, and of the increasing charges of the crown, from the daily increase in the price of all commodities. He did not, however, forget to admonish them, that they were to regard this detail as the pure effect of the Queen's condescension, since she was not bound to yield them any account how she employed her treasure ^f.

^d Ibid. p. 257.^e Ibid. p. 263.^f Ibid. p. 246.

C H A P. XLI.

*Scots affairs.---Spanish affairs.---Sir Francis Drake.---
A Parliament.---Negotiations of marriage with the
duke of Anjou.---Scots affairs.---Letter of Queen Ma-
ry to Elizabeth.---Conspiracies in England.---A Par-
liament.---The ecclesiastical commission.---Affairs of the
Low Countries.---Hostilities with Spain.*

1580.

THE greatest and most absolute security which Elizabeth enjoyed during her whole reign, never exempted her from vigilance and attention; but the scene began now to be more overcast, and dangers gradually multiplied on her from more than one quarter.

Scots af-
fairs.

THE earl of Morton had hitherto retained Scotland in strict alliance with the Queen, and had also restored domestic tranquillity: But it was not likely, that the factitious and legal authority of a regent would long maintain itself in a country unacquainted with law and order; where even the natural dominion of hereditary princes so often met with opposition and countroul. The nobility began anew to break into factions: The people were disgusted with some instances which appeared of Morton's avarice: And the clergy, who complained of farther incroachments on their narrow revenue, joined and increased the discontent of the other orders. The regent was sensible of his dangerous situation; and having dropt some peevish expressions, as if he were willing or desirous to resign the government, the noblemen of the opposite party, favourites of the young King, laid hold of this concession, and required that demission which he seemed so frankly to offer them. James was at this time but eleven years of age; yet Morton, having secured himself, as he imagined, by a general pardon, resigned his authority into the hands

hands of the King, who pretended to conduct, in his own name, the administration of the kingdom. The regent retired from the government, and seemed to employ himself entirely in the care of his domestic affairs; but either tired with this tranquillity, which appeared insipid after the agitations of ambition, or thinking it time to throw off dissimulation, he returned again to court, acquired an ascendant in the council; and tho' he resumed not the title of regent, governed with the same authority as before. The opposite party, after holding separate conventions, took to arms, on pretence of delivering their prince from captivity, and restoring him to the free exercise of his government: Queen Elizabeth interposed by her ambassador, Sir Robert Bowes, and mediated an agreement between the factions: Morton kept possession of the government; but his enemies were numerous and vigilant, and his authority seemed to become every day more precarious.

THE count d' Aubigny, of the house of Lenox, cousin-german to the King's father, had been born and educated in France; and being a young nobleman of a good address, and a sweet disposition, he appeared to the duke of Guise a very proper instrument for detaching James from the English interest, and connecting him with his mother and her relations. He no sooner appeared at Stirling, where James resided, than he acquired the affections of the young monarch; and joining his interests with James Stuart of the house of Ochiltree, a young man of profligate manners, who had acquired the King's favour, he employed himself, under the appearance of play and amusement, in instilling into the tender mind of the prince new sentiments of politics and government. He represented to him the injustice which had been done Mary in her deposition, and made him entertain thoughts, either of resigning the crown into her hands, or of associating her with

CHAP.

XLI.

1580.

CHAP.
XLI.

1580.

him in the administration^g. Elizabeth, alarmed with the danger which might ensue from the prevalence of this interest in Scotland, sent anew Sir Robert Bowes to Stirling; and accusing Aubigney, now created earl of Lenox, of an attachment to the French, warned James against entertaining such suspicious and dangerous connections^h. The King excused himself, by Alexander Hume his ambassador; and Lenox, finding that the Queen had openly declared against him, was farther confirmed in his intention of overturning the English interest, and particularly of ruining Morton, who was regarded as the head of it. That nobleman was arrested in council, accused as an accomplice in the late King's murder, committed to prison, brought to trial, and condemned to suffer as a traitor. He confessed, that Bothwel had communicated to him the design, had pleaded Mary's assent, and had desired his concurrence; but he denied, that he had ever given his approbation to that crime; and in excuse for his concealment, alledged the danger of revealing it, either to Henry, who had no resolution nor constancy, or to Mary, who appeared to be an accomplice in the murderⁱ. Sir Thomas Randolph was sent by the Queen to intercede in favour of Morton; and that ambassador, not content with discharging this duty of his function, engaged, by his persuasion, the earls of Argyle, Montrose, Angus, Marre, and Glencarne, to enter into a confederacy for protecting, even by force of arms, the life of the prisoner. The more to overawe that nobleman's enemies, Elizabeth ordered forces to be assembled on the borders of England; but this expedient served only to hasten his sentence and execution^k. Morton died with that constancy and resolution which had attended him thro' all the various events of his life; and left a reputation, which was

^g Digges, p. 412, 423. Melvil, p. 130. ^h Spotswood, p. 309. ⁱ Ibid. p. 314. Crawford, p. 333. Moyse's Memoirs, p. 54. ^k Spotswood, p. 312.

less disputed with regard to ability than probity and CHA R
virtue. But this conclusion of the scene happened not XLI.
till the subsequent year.

ELIZABETH was at this time extremely anxious on ^{1580.}Spanish af-
account of every revolution in Scotland; because that fairs.
country alone, not being separated from England by
sea, and bordering on all the catholic and malecontent
counties, afforded her enemies a safe and easy method
of attacking her; and because she was sensible, that
Mary, thinking herself abandoned by the French
monarch, had been engaged by the Guises to have
recourse to the powerful protection of Philip, who,
tho' he had not yet come to an open rupture with the
Queen, was every day, both by the injuries which he
committed and received, more exasperated against
her. That he might retaliate for the assistance which
she gave to his rebels in the Low Countries, he had
sent under the name of the pope¹, a body of seven
hundred Spaniards and Italians into Ireland; where
the inhabitants, always turbulent, and discontented
with the English government, were now more alie-
nated by religious prejudices, and were ready to join
every invader. The Spanish general, San Josepho,
built a fort in Kerry; and being there besieged by
the earl of Ormond, president of Munster, who was
soon after joined by lord Gray, the deputy, he made
a very weak and cowardly resistance. After some as-
saults, feebly sustained, he surrendered at discreti-
on; and Gray, who was attended with a very small
force, finding himself embarrassed with so many pri-
soners, put all the Spaniards and Italians to the
sword without mercy, and hanged about fifteen hun-
dred Irish: A cruelty which gave great displeasure to
Elizabeth^m.

WHEN the English ambassador made complaints of Sir Fran-
this invasion, he was answered by like complaints of cis Drake
the pyracies committed by Francis Drake, a bold sea-

¹ Digges, p. 359, 370.
tory of Ireland, p. 368.

^m Camden, p. 475. Cox's His-

CHAP.
XLI.

1580.

man, who had assaulted the Spaniards in the place where they deemed themselves the most secure, in the new world. This man, sprung from mean parents in the County of Devon, having acquired considerable riches by some depredations made on the Spaniards in the isthmus of Panama, and having there got a sight of the Pacific ocean, was so stimulated by ambition and avarice, that he scrupled not to employ his whole fortune in a new adventure thro' those seas, so much unknown at that time to all the European nationsⁿ. By means of Sir Christopher Hatton, then vice chamberlain, a great favourite of the Queen, he obtained her consent and approbation; and set sail from Plymouth in 1577, with four ships and a pinnace, on board of which were 164 able sailors^o. He passed into the South Sea by the Straits of Magellan, and falling on the Spaniards, who expected no enemy in these quarters, he took many rich prizes, and prepared to return with the immense booty, which he had acquired. Apprehensive of being intercepted by the enemy, if he took the same way homewards, by which he had reached the Pacific ocean, he attempted to find a passage by the north of California; and failing in that enterprize, he set sail for the East Indies, and returned safely this year by the Cape of Good Hope. He was the first Englishman who sailed round the Globe; and the first commander in chief: For Magellan, whose ship executed the same adventure, died in his passage. His name became very celebrated on account of so bold and fortunate an attempt; but many, apprehending the resentment of the Spaniards, endeavoured to persuade the Queen, that it would be more prudent to disown the enterprize, to punish Drake, and to restore the treasure. But Elizabeth who admired valour, and who was allured by the

ⁿ Camden, p. 478. Stowe, p. 689. ^o Camden, p. 478. Hakluy's Voyages, vol. iii. p. 730, 748. Purchas's Pilgrim, vol. i. p. 46.

prospect of sharing in the riches, determined to countenance that gallant sailor: She conferred on him the honour of knighthood, and accepted of a banquet from him at Deptford, on board the ship which had atchieved so memorable a voyage. When Philip's ambassador, Mendoza, exclaimed against Drake's pyracies, she told him, that the Spaniards, by arrogating a right to the whole new world, and excluding thence all other European nations, who should sail thither, even with a view of exercising the most lawful commerce, very naturally tempted others to make a violent irruption into these countries^p. To pacify, however, the Spanish monarch, she caused part of the booty to be restored to Pedro Sebura, a Spaniard, who pretended to be agent for the merchants, whom Drake had spoiled. Having learned afterwards, that Philip had seized the money, and had employed part of it against herself in Ireland, part of it in the pay of the prince of Parma's troops, she determined to make no more restitutions.

CHAP.
XLI.

1580.

1581.

THERE was another cause, which induced the Queen to take this resolution: She was in such want of money, that she was obliged to assemble a Parliament; a measure, which as she herself openly declared, she never embraced, except when obliged by the necessity of her affairs. The Parliament, besides granting her a supply of one subsidy and two fifteenths, enacted some statutes for the security of the government, chiefly against the attempts of the catholics. Whoever, in any way, reconciled any one to the church of Rome, or was himself reconciled, was declared to be guilty of treason: To say mass was subjected to the penalty of a year's imprisonment, and a fine of two hundred merks; the hearing it was punishable by a year's imprisonment and a fine of an hundred merks; A fine of

16th Jan.

A Parlia-
ment.

^p Camden, p. 480:

CHAP.
XLI.

1581.

twenty pounds a month was imposed on every one who continued, during that time, absent from church^a. To utter slanderous or seditious words against the Queen was punishable, for the first offence, with the pillory and loss of ears; the second offence was declared felony: The writing or printing such words was felony even on the first offence^r. The puritans prevailed to have farther application made for reformation in religion^s. Paul Wentworth, brother to the member of that name, who had distinguished himself in the preceding session, moved, that the commons, from their own authority, should appoint a general fast and prayers; and the commons rashly assented to his motion. For this presumption, they were severely reprimanded by a message from the Queen, as encroaching on the royal prerogative and supremacy; and they were obliged to submit, and ask forgiveness^t.

THE Queen and Parliament were engaged to pass these severe laws against the catholics, by some late discoveries, which had been made of the treasonable practices of the Romish priests. When the worship of the catholics was suppressed, and the reformation introduced into the universities, the King of Spain reflected, that as some species of literature was requisite for the support of these doctrines and controversies, the Romish communion must totally decay in England, if no means were found to give erudition to the ecclesiastics; and for this reason, he founded a seminary at Douay, where the catholics sent their children, chiefly those intended for the priesthood, in order to receive the rudiments of their education. The cardinal of Lorraine imitated this example by erecting a like seminary in his diocese of Rheims; and tho' Rome was somewhat distant, the pope would not neglect to adorn, with a foundation of the same nature,

^a 23 Eliz. c. 1.^r Ibid. c. 2.^s D'Ewes, p. 302.^t Ibid. p. 284, 285.

that

that capital of orthodoxy. These seminaries found-
 ed with this hostile intention, sent over every year
 a colony of priests, who maintained the catholic su-
 perstition in the full height of its bigotry; and be-
 ing educated with a view to the crown of martyr-
 dom, were not deterred, either by danger or fatigue,
 from maintaining and propagating their principles.
 They infused into all their votaries an extreme ha-
 tred against the Queen; whom they treated as an
 usurper, a schismatic, a heretic, a persecutor of the
 orthodox, and one solemnly and publicly anathema-
 tized by the holy father. Sedition, rebellion, and
 even sometimes assassination, were the expedients, by
 which they proposed to effectuate their purposes a-
 gainst her; and the severe restraint, not to say per-
 secution, under which the catholics laboured, made
 them the more willingly receive, from their ghostly
 fathers, such violent doctrines.

C H A P.
 XLI.
 1581.

THESE seminaries were all of them under the
 direction of the jesuits, a new order of regular
 priests erected in Europe; when the court of Rome
 perceived, that the lazy monks and beggarly friars,
 who sufficed in times of ignorance, were no longer
 able to defend the ramparts of the church, assailed
 on every side, and that the inquisitive spirit of the
 age required a society more active and more learn-
 ed, to oppose its dangerous progress. These men,
 as they stood foremost in the contest against the
 protestants, drew on them the extreme animosity of
 that whole sect; and by assuming a superiority over
 the other more numerous and more antient orders
 of their own communion, were even exposed to
 the envy of their brethren: So that it is no won-
 der, if the blame to which their principles and con-
 duct might be exposed, has, in many instances,
 been much exaggerated. This reproach, however,
 they must bear from posterity, that, by the very
 nature of their institution, they were engaged to

CHAP.

XLI.

1581.

pervert learning, the only effectual remedy against superstition, into a nourishment of that infirmity; and as their erudition was chiefly of the ecclesiastical and scholastic kind (tho' a few members have cultivated polite literature) they were only the more enabled, by that acquisition, to refine away the plainest dictates of morality, and to erect a regular system of casuistry, by which prevarication, perjury, and every crime, where it served their ghostly purposes, might be justified and defended.

The jesuits, as devoted servants to the court of Rome, exalted the prerogative of the sovereign pontiff above all earthly power; and by maintaining his authority of deposing Kings, set no bounds, either to his spiritual or temporal jurisdiction. This doctrine became so prevalent among the zealous catholics in England, that the excommunication, fulminated against Elizabeth, excited many scruples of a singular kind, to which it behoved the holy father to provide a remedy. The bull of Pius, in absolving the subjects from their oaths of allegiance, required them to resist the Queen's usurpation; and many Romanists were apprehensive, that, by this clause, they were obliged in conscience, even tho' no favourable opportunity offered, to rebel against her, and that no dangers nor difficulties could free them from this indispensable duty. But Parsons and Campian, two jesuits, were sent over with a mitigation and explanation of the doctrine; and they taught their votaries, that tho' the bull was for ever binding on Elizabeth and her partizans, it did not oblige the catholics to obedience, except when the sovereign pontiff should think proper, by a new summons, to require it^u. Campian was afterwards detected in treasonable practices; and being put to the rack, and confessing his guilt, he was publickly executed. His execution was ordered at the very time, when the

^u Camden, p. 477.

duke of Anjou was in England, and prosecuted with the greatest appearance of success his marriage with the Queen; and this severity was probably intended to appease her protestant subjects, and to satisfy them, that, whatever measures she might pursue, she never would depart from the principles of the reformation.

CHAP.
XLI.

1581.

WHILE hostilities were daily multiplying between Spain and England, and while Elizabeth knew, that Philip, from resentment, from bigotry, and from interest, was strongly, tho' secretly, induced to effect her ruin, she saw the necessity of securing herself against the efforts of so powerful and politic a monarch. The obstinate resistance of the states in the Netherlands gave her hopes, that his force and treasure would be wasted in subduing these provinces; but the admirable conduct and rapid progress of the prince of Parma struck her with apprehensions; and as the acquisition, which Philip, about this time, made of Portugal, brought him a great accession of riches and naval power, the expediency of seeking the protection of some powerful alliance became every day the more apparent. The animosity, which still increased between the French monarch and the duke of Guise, and the confederacy, which the latter prince had secretly formed with Philip, opened the prospect of a close alliance between the sovereigns of France and England; and the general apprehensions, entertained by all Europe of the Spanish power, seemed to require some general union for resisting its farther progress.

THE duke of Alençon, now created duke of Anjou, had never entirely dropped his pretensions to espouse Elizabeth; and that princess, tho' her suitor was near twenty-five years younger than herself, and had no knowledge of her person but by pictures or descriptions, was still pleased with the counterfeit image, which his addresses afforded her of love and tenderness. The duke, in order to forward his suit, besides employing

Negotiations of
marriage
with the
duke of
Anjou.

CHAP.
XLI.

1581.

his brother's ambassador, sent over Simier, an agent of his own; an artful man, of an agreeable conversation, who, soon remarking the Queen's humour, amused her with gay discourse, and instead of serious political reasonings, which, he found, only awakened her ambition, and hurt his master's interests, introduced every moment all the topics of passion and of gallantry. The pleasure, which she found in this man's society, soon produced a great familiarity between them; and amidst the greatest hurry of business, her wisest ministers had not such ready access to her person, as had Simier, who, on pretence of negotiation, entertained her with accounts of the tender attachment borne her by the duke of Anjou. The earl of Leicester, who had never before been alarmed with any courtship made to her, and who always trusted that her love of dominion would prevail over her inclination to marriage, began to apprehend, that she was at last caught in her own snare, and that the artful encouragement, which she had given to this young suitor, had unawares engaged her affections. To render Simier odious, he availed himself of the credulity of the times, and spread reports, that that minister had gained an ascendant over the Queen, not by any natural principles of her constitution, but by incantations and love potions. Simier, in revenge, endeavoured to discredit Leicester, and revealed to her a secret which none of her courtiers dared to discover, that this nobleman was secretly, without her consent, married to the widow of the earl of Essex; an action, which the Queen interpreted either to proceed from want of respect to her, or as a violation of their mutual attachment; and which so provoked her, that she threatened to send him prisoner to the Tower*. The quarrel went so far between Leicester and the French agent, that the former was suspected of having em-

* Camden, p. 471.

ployed one Tudor, a bravo, to take away the life of his enemy; and the Queen thought it necessary, by proclamation, to take Simier under her own protection. It happened, that while the Queen was rowed in her barge on the Thames, attended by Simier, and some of her courtiers, a shot was fired which wounded one of her bargemen; but Elizabeth finding, upon enquiry, that the piece had been discharged by accident, gave the person his liberty, without farther punishment. So far was she from entertaining any suspicion against her people, that she was many times heard to say, "That she would lend credit to nothing against them, which parents would not believe of their own children."

CHAP.
XLI.

1581.

THE duke of Anjou, encouraged by the accounts, which he received of the Queen's prepossessions in his favour, paid her secretly a visit at Greenwich; and after some conference with her, the purport of which is not known, he departed. It appeared, that, tho' his figure was not advantageous, he had lost no ground by being personally known to her; and soon after, she commanded Burleigh, now treasurer, Suffolk, Leicester, Bedford, Lincoln, Hatton, and secretary Walsingham, to concert with the French ambassadors the terms of the intended contract. Henry had sent over on this occasion a very splendid embassy to England, consisting of Francis de Bourbon, prince of Dauphiny, and many considerable noblemen; and as the Queen had in a manner the power of prescribing what terms she pleased, the articles were soon settled with the English commissioners. It was agreed, that the marriage should be celebrated within six weeks after the ratification of the articles; that the duke and his retinue should have the exercise of their religion; that after the marriage he should bear the title of King, but the administration should remain solely in the Queen; that their children,

CHAP.
XLI.
1581.

male or female, should succeed to the crown of England; that if there be two males, the eldest, in case of Henry's death without issue, should be King of France, the younger of England; that if there be but one male, and he succeed to the crown of France, he should be obliged to reside in England eight months every two years; that the laws and customs of England should be preserved inviolate; and that no foreigner should be promoted by the duke to any office in England^z. These articles, providing for the security of England, in case of its annexation to the crown of France, opened but a dismal prospect to the English; had not the age of the Queen, who was now in her forty-ninth year, contributed very much to allay their apprehensions of this nature. The queen also, as a proof of her still remaining uncertainty, added a clause, that she was not bound to compleat the marriage, till farther articles, which were not specified, shall be agreed on between the parties, and till the King of France be certified of their agreement. Soon after the Queen sent over Walsingham, as ambassador to France, in order to form closer connexions with Henry, and enter into a league offensive and defensive against the encreasing power and dangerous usurpations of Spain. The French King, who had been extremely disturbed with the unquiet spirit, the restless ambition, the enterprizing, and yet timid and inconstant disposition of Anjou, had already sought to free the kingdom from his intrigues, by opening a scene for his activity in Flanders; and having allowed him to embrace the protection of the states, had secretly supplied him with men and money for that undertaking. The prospect of settling him in England was for a like reason very agreeable to that monarch; and he was desirous to cultivate, by every expedient, the favourable sentiments which Elizabeth seemed to entertain towards

^z Camden, p. 484.

them. But this princess, tho' she had gone farther in CHAP.
XLI.
1581. her amorous dalliance^a than could be justified or accounted for by any principles of policy, was not yet determined to bring matters to a final conclusion; and she confined Walsingham, in his instructions, to the negotiating conditions of the mutual alliance between France and England^b. Henry with reluctance submitted to hold conferences on that subject; but no sooner had Walsingham begun to settle the conditions of alliance, than he was informed, that the Queen, foreseeing hostility with Spain to be the result of this confederacy, had declared that she would prefer the marriage with the war, before the war without the marriage^c. The French court, pleased with this change of resolution, broke off the conferences concerning the league, and opened a negotiation for the marriage^d. But matters had not long proceeded in this train, before the Queen again declared for the league in preference to the marriage, and ordered Walsingham to renew the conferences for that purpose. Before he had leisure to bring this point to maturity, he was interrupted by a new change of resolution^e; and not only the court of France, but Walsingham himself, Burleigh, and all the wisest ministers of Elizabeth, were in amaze, doubtful where this contest between inclination and reason, love and ambition, would at last terminate.

In the course of this affair, Elizabeth felt another variety of intentions, from a new contest between her reason and her ruling passions. The duke of Anjou expected some assistance of money, by which he might be enabled to open the campaign in Flanders; and the Queen herself, tho' her frugality made her long reluctant, was sensible that this supply was necessary; and she was at last induced, after much hesitation, to com-

^a Digges, p. 387, 396, 408, 426.

^b Ibid. p. 352.

^c Ibid. p. 375, 391.

^d Ibid. p. 392.

^e Ibid.

p. 408, 414.

CHAP.
XLI.

1581.

17th No-
vember.

ply with his request^f. She sent him a present of an hundred thousand crowns; by which, joined to his own demesnes and the assistance of his brother and the Queen dowager, he levied an army, and took the field against the prince of Parma. He was successful in raising the siege of Cambray; and being chosen by the states governor of the Netherlands, he put his army into winter quarters, and came over to England, in order to prosecute his suit to the Queen. The reception, which he met with, made him lay his account with entire success, and gave him certain hopes, that Elizabeth had surmounted all scruples, and was finally determined to make choice of him for her husband. In the midst of the pomp which attended the anniversary of her coronation, she was seen, after long and intimate discourse with him, to take a ring from her own finger, and to put it upon his; and all the spectators concluded, that, in this ceremony, she had given him a promise of marriage, and was even desirous of signifying her intention to all the world. St. Aldegonde, ambassador from the states, dispatched immediately a letter to his masters, informing them of this great event; and the inhabitants of Antwerp, who, as well as the other Flemings, regarded the Queen as a kind of tutelar divinity, testified their joy by bonfires and the discharge of their great ordinance^g. A puritan of Lincoln's Inn had wrote a passionate book, which he intituled, "The Gulph in which England will be swallowed by the French Marriage." He was apprehended and prosecuted by order of the Queen, and was condemned to lose his right hand as a libeller. Such was the constancy and loyalty of the man, that, immediately after the sentence was executed, he took off his hat with his other hand, and waving it over his head, cried "God save the Queen."

^f Digges, p. 357, 387, 388, 409, 426, 439. Rymer, XV. p. 792.

^g Camden, p. 486. Thuan, lib. 74.

BUT notwithstanding this attachment, which Elizabeth so openly discovered to the duke of Anjou, the combat of her sentiments was not entirely over; and her ambition, as well as prudence, rousing itself by intervals, still filled her breast with doubt and hesitation. Almost all the courtiers, whom she trusted and favoured, Leicester, Hatton and Walsingham, discovered an extreme aversion to the marriage; and the ladies of her bed-chamber made no scruple of opposing her resolution with the most zealous remonstrances^b. Among other enemies to the match, Sir Philip Sidney, son to Sir Henry Sidney, lord deputy of Ireland, and nephew to Leicester; a young man the most accomplished of that age; used the freedom to write her a letter, in which he dissuaded her from her present resolution, with an unusual elegance of expression, as well as force of reasoning. He told her, that the security of her government depended entirely on the affections of her protestant subjects; and she could not, by any measure, more effectually disgust them than by espousing a prince, who was son to the perfidious Catherine, brother to the cruel and perfidious Charles, and who had himself embued his hands in the blood of the innocent and defenceless protestants: That the catholics were her mortal enemies, and believed either that she had originally usurped the crown, or was now lawfully deposed by the pope's bull of excommunication; and nothing had ever so much elevated their hopes as the prospect of her marriage with the duke of Anjou: That her chief security at present against the efforts of so numerous, rich, and united a faction was, that they possessed no head who could conduct their dangerous enterprizes; and she herself was rashly supplying that defect, by giving an interest in the kingdom to a prince, whose education had zealously attached him to that communion: That tho' he was a stranger to the royal blood of England, the dispositions of men were now such, that

CHAP.
XLI.
1581.

^b Camden, p. 486.

CHAP. they preferred the religious to the civil connexions;
 XLI. and were more influenced by the sympathy of theo-
 1581. logical opinions than by the principles of legal and
 hereditary government: That the duke himself had
 discovered a very restless and turbulent spirit; and
 having often violated his loyalty to his elder brother
 and his sovereign, there remained no hopes that he
 would passively submit to a woman, whom he might
 think himself intitled, in quality of husband, to com-
 mand: That the French nation, so populous, so much
 abounding in soldiers, so full of nobility, who were
 devoted to arms, and, for some time, accustomed to
 serve for plunder, would supply him with partizans,
 dangerous to a people, unwarlike and defenceless like
 the generality of her subjects: That the plain and ho-
 nourable path, which she had followed, of cultivat-
 ing the affections of her people, had hitherto render-
 ed her reign secure and happy; and, however her ene-
 mies might seem to multiply upon her, the same in-
 vincible rampart was still able to protect and defend
 her: That so long as the throne of France was filled
 by Henry or his posterity, it was in vain to hope that
 the ties of blood would ensure the amity of that
 kingdom, preferably to the maxims of policy or the
 prejudices of religion; and if ever the crown devolv-
 ed to the duke of Anjou, the conjunction of France
 and England would prove a burthen, rather than a
 protection to the latter kingdom: That the example
 of her sister Mary was sufficient to instruct her in the
 danger of such connexions; and to prove that the af-
 fections and confidence of the English could never be
 maintained, where they had such reason to appre-
 hend that their interests would every moment be sacri-
 ficed to those of a foreign and hostile nation: That
 notwithstanding these great inconveniencies, discover-
 ed by past experience, the house of Burgundy, it must
 be confessed, was more popular in the nation than the
 family of France; and, what was of chief moment,
 Philip

Philip was of the same communion with Mary, and was connected with her by this great band of interest and affection: And that however the Queen might remain childless, even tho' old age should grow upon her, the singular felicity and glory of her reign would preserve her from contempt; the affections of her subjects and those of all the protestants in Europe, would defend her from attacks; and her own prudence, without other aid or assistance, would baffle all the efforts of her most malignant enemies¹.

C H A P.
XLI.

1582.

THESE reflections kept the Queen in great anxiety and irresolution; and she was observed to pass several nights without any sleep or repose. At last her settled habits of prudence and ambition prevailed over her temporary inclination; and having sent for the duke of Anjou, she had a long conversation with him in private, where she was supposed to have made him apologies for the breaking her former engagements. He expressed great disgust on his leaving her; threw away the ring which she had given him; and uttered many curses on the mutability of women, and of islanders². Soon after he went over to his government of the Netherlands; lost the confidence of the states by a rash and violent attempt on their liberties; was expelled that country; retired into France; and there died. The Queen, by her timely reflection, saved herself from the numerous mischiefs which must have attended so imprudent a marriage: And the present distracted state of the French monarchy, prevented her from feeling any effects of that resentment which she had reason to dread from the affront so wantonly put upon that royal family.

THE anxiety of the Queen, from the attempts of the Scots against English catholics, never ceased during the whole course of her reign; but the variety of revolutions which hap-

¹ Letters of the Sydneys, vol. i. p. 287, and seq. Cabbala, p. 363.

² Camden, p. 486.

CHAP.
XLI.

1582.

23d Au-
gust.

pened in all the neighbouring kingdoms, were the source sometimes of her hopes, sometimes of her apprehensions. This year the affairs of Scotland strongly engaged her attention. The influence which the earl of Lenox, and James Stuart, who now assumed the title of earl of Arran, had acquired over the young King, was but a slender foundation of authority; while the generality of the nobles, and all the preachers, were so much discontented with their administration. The assembly of the church appointed a solemn fast; of which one of the avowed reasons was the danger in which the King stood from the company of wicked persons¹: And on that day the pulpits resounded with declamations against Lenox, Arran, and all the King's present counsellors. When the minds of the people were sufficiently prepared by these lectures, a conspiracy of the nobility was formed, probably with the concurrence of Elizabeth, for seizing the person of James at Ruthven, a seat of the earl of Gowry; and the design being kept very secret, succeeded without any opposition. The leaders in this enterprize were, the earl of Gowry himself, the earl of Marre, the lords Lindesey and Boyd, the masters of Glamis and Oliphant, the abbots of Dunfermline, Paisley, and Cambuskenneth. The King wept when he found himself detained a prisoner; but the master of Glamis said, "No matter for his tears: Better that boys should weep than bearded men:" An expression which James could never afterwards forgive^m. But notwithstanding his resentment, he found it necessary to submit to the present necessity. He pretended an entire acquiescence in the conduct of the associators; acknowledged the detention of his person to be acceptable service; and agreed to summon both an assembly of the church and a convention of estates, in order to ratify that enterprize. The assembly, tho' they had established it as

¹ Spotswood, p. 319.^m Ibid. p. 320.

an inviolable rule, that the King, on no accounts and on no occasion, should ever intermeddle in ecclesiastical matters, made no scruple of taking civil affairs under their cognizance, and of giving their verdict, that the attempt of the conspirators was acceptable to all that feared God, or tendered the preservation of the King's person, and prosperous state of the realm. They even enjoined all the clergy to recommend these sentiments from the pulpit; and they threatened with ecclesiastical censures every man who should oppose the authority of the confederated lordsⁿ. The convention, being composed chiefly of these lords themselves, added their sanction to these proceedings. Arran was confined a prisoner to his own house: Lenox, tho' he had power to resist, yet, rather than excite a civil war, or be the cause of bloodshed^o, chose to retire into France, where he soon after died. He persevered to the last in his conversion to the protestant religion; which the Scots clergy would never be persuaded that he had sincerely embraced. The King sent for his family, restored his son to his paternal honours and estate, took care to establish the fortunes of all his other children; and to his last moments never forgot the early friendship which he had borne their father: A strong proof of the good dispositions of that prince.

No sooner was this revolution known in England, than the Queen sent Sir Henry Cary, and Sir Robert Bowes to James, in order to congratulate him on his deliverance from the pernicious councils of Lenox and Arran; to exhort him not to resent the seeming violence of the lord's enterprize; and to procure from him permission for the return of the earl of Angus, who, ever since Morton's fall, had lived in England. They easily prevailed in the last application; and as James suspected, that Elizabeth had not been entirely unac-

ⁿ Spotswood, p. 322.
Spotswood.

^o Heylin's Hist. Presbyter. p. 227.
^p Spotswood, p. 328.

CHAP.
XLI.

1582.

1583.

quainted with the project of his detention, he thought proper, before the English ambassadors, to dissemble his resentment against the confederated noblemen. Soon after, La Mothe-Fenelon, and Menneville, appeared as ambassadors from France: Their errand was to enquire concerning the situation of the King, make professions of their master's friendship, confirm the antient league with France, and procure an accommodation between him and the Queen of Scots. This last proposal gave great umbrage to the clergy; and the assembly had already voted the settling of terms between the mother and son to be a most wicked undertaking. The pulpits resounded with declamations against the French ambassadors; particularly Fenelon, whom they called the Messenger of the bloody murderer, meaning the duke of Guise: And as that minister, being knight of the Holy Ghost, wore a white cross on his shoulder, they commonly denominated it in contempt, the badge of Antichrist. The King endeavoured, tho' in vain, to repress these insolencies; but, in order to make the ambassadors some compensation, he desired the magistrates of Edinburgh to give them a splendid dinner before their departure. To prevent this entertainment, the clergy appointed that very day for a public fast; and finding that their orders were not regarded, they employed their sermons in thundering curses on the magistrates, who, by the King's direction, had put this mark of respect on the ambassadors. They even pursued them afterwards with the censures of the church; and it was with difficulty they were prevented from passing the sentence of excommunication against them, on account of their submission to royal, preferably to clerical, authority^a.

WHAT encreased the alarm with regard to an accommodation between James and Mary, was, that the English ambassadors seemed to concur with the

^a Spotswood, p. 324.

French in this proposal; and the clergy were so ignorant as to credit the sincerity of the professions made by the former. The Queen of Scots had often made overtures to Elizabeth, which had been entirely neglected; but hearing of James's detention, she wrote a letter in a more pathetic and more spirited strain than usual; craving the assistance of that princess, both for her own and her son's liberty. She said, that the account of the prince's captivity had excited her most tender concern; and the experience which she herself, during so many years, had of the extreme infelicity attending that situation, had made her the more apprehensive, lest a like fate should pursue her unhappy offspring: That the long train of injustice which she had suffered; the calumnies to which she had been exposed; were so grievous, that, finding no place for right or truth among men, she was reduced to make her last appeal to heaven, the only competent tribunal between princes of equal jurisdiction, degree, and dignity: That after her rebellious subjects, secretly instigated by Elizabeth's ministers, had expelled her from the throne, had confined her to prison, had pursued her with arms, she had voluntarily thrown herself under the protection of England, fatally allured by those reiterated professions of amity which had been made her, and by her confidence in the generosity of a friend, an ally, and a kinswoman: That, not contented with debarring her from her presence, with supporting the usurpers of her throne, with contributing to the destruction of her faithful subjects, Elizabeth had reduced her to a worse captivity than that from which she had escaped, and had made her this cruel return for the unlimited trust which she had reposed in her; That tho' her resentment of such severe usage had never carried her farther than to use some disappointed efforts for her deliverance, unhappy to herself

CHAP.
XLI.

1583.

Letter of
Queen
Mary to
Elizabeth.

CHAP.

XLI.

1583.

herself, and fatal to others, she found the rigours of confinement daily multiplied upon her; and at length carried to such a height as surpassed the bounds of all human patience any longer to endure them: That she was cut off from all communication, not only with the rest of mankind, but also with her only son; and her maternal fondness, which was now more enlivened by their unhappy sympathy in situation, and was her sole remaining attachment to the world, deprived even of that melancholy solace, which, letters or messages could give: That the bitterness of her sorrows, still more than her close confinement, had preyed upon her health, and had added the insufferable weight of bodily infirmity to all those other calamities under which she laboured: That while the daily experience of her maladies opened to her the comfortable prospect of an approaching deliverance into a region where pain and sorrow are no more, her enemies envied her that last consolation; and having secluded her from every joy on earth, had done what in them lay to debar her from all hopes in her future and eternal existence: That the exercise of her religion was refused her; the usage of those sacred rites in which she had been educated; the commerce with those holy ministers, whom heaven had appointed to receive the acknowledgment of our transgressions, and to seal our penitence by a solemn re-admission into heavenly favour and forgiveness: That it was in vain to complain of the rigours of persecution exercised in other kingdoms; when a Queen, and an innocent woman, was excluded from an indulgence, which never yet, in the most barbarous countries, had been denied to the meanest and most criminal malefactor: That, could she ever be induced to descend from that royal dignity in which Providence had placed her, or depart from her appeal to Heaven, there was only one other tribunal to which she would appeal from all her enemies; to the justice and humanity

ty of Elizabeth's own breast, and to that lenity, which, uninfluenced by malignant counsel, she would naturally be induced to exercise towards her: And that she finally intreated her, to resume her natural disposition, and to reflect on the support, as well as comfort, which she might receive from her son and herself, if, joining the obligations of gratitude to the ties of blood, she would deign to raise them from their present melancholy situation, and reinstate them in that liberty and authority to which they were entitled.

CHAP.

XLI.

1583.

ELIZABETH was chiefly induced to obstruct Mary's restoration, because she foresaw an unhappy alternative attending that event. If this princess recovered any considerable share of authority in Scotland, her resentment, ambition, zeal, and connections, both domestic and foreign, might render her a dangerous neighbour to England, and enable her, after suppressing the English party among her subjects, to revive those pretensions which she had formerly advanced to the crown, and which her partisans in both kingdoms still supported with great industry and assurance. If she was reinstated in power, with such strict limitations as could not be broken, she might be disgusted with her situation; and flying abroad, form more desperate attempts than any sovereign, who had a crown to hazard, would willingly undertake. Mary herself, sensible of these difficulties, and convinced by experience, that Elizabeth would for ever debar her the throne, was now become more humble in her wishes; and as age and infirmities had repressed those sentiments of ambition and indignation, by which she was formerly so much agitated, she was willing to sacrifice all her hopes of power and grandeur, in order to obtain a little more liberty; a blessing to which she very naturally aspired with the fondest impatience.

* Camden, p. 489.

CHAP.

XLI.

1583.

She proposed, therefore, that she should be associated with her son in the title to the crown of Scotland, but that the administration should remain solely in him: And she was contented to live in England, in a private station, and even in a kind of restraint; but with some more liberty, both for exercise and company, than she had enjoyed since the first discovery of her intrigues with the duke of Norfolk. But Elizabeth, who was afraid lest such a loose method of guarding her, would facilitate her escape into France or Spain, or, at least, would encourage and encrease her partizans, and enable her to conduct those intrigues to which she had already discovered so strong a propensity, was secretly determined to deny her requests; and tho' she feigned to assent to them, she well knew how to disappoint the expectations of the unhappy princess. While Lenox maintained his authority in Scotland, she never gave any reply to all the applications made to her by the Scottish Queen*: At present, when her own creatures had acquired possession of the government, she was resolved to throw the odium of the refusal upon them; and pretending, that nothing was required to a perfect accommodation, but the concurrence of the council of state in Scotland, she ordered her ambassador, Bowes, to open the negotiation for Mary's liberty, and her association with her son in the title to the crown. Tho' she seemed to make this concession to Mary, she refused her the liberty of sending any ambassador of her own; and that princess could easily conjecture, from this circumstance, what would be the result of the pretended negotiation. The Scots council, instigated by the clergy, rejected all treaty: And James, who was now a captive in their hands, affirmed, that he had never assented to an association with his mother, and that the matter had

* Jebb, vol. ii. p. 540.

never gone farther than some loose proposals for that purpose^t. CHAP.
XLI.

THE affairs of Scotland remained not long on the present footing. James, impatient of restraint, made his escape from his keepers; and flying to St. Andrews, summoned his friends and partizans to attend him. The earls of Argyle, Marshal, Montrose, and Rothes, hastened to pay their duty to their sovereign; and the opposite party found themselves unable to resist so powerful a combination. They were offered a pardon, upon their submission, and an acknowledgement of their fault, in seizing the King's person, and restraining him from his liberty. Some of them accepted of the terms: The greater number, particularly Angus, Hamilton, Marre, Glamis, left the country; and took shelter in Ireland or England, where they were protected by Elizabeth. The earl of Arran was recalled to court; and the malecontents, who could not brook the authority of Lenox, a man of virtue and moderation, found, that, by their resistance, they had thrown all the power into the hands of a person whose councils were as violent as his manners were profligate^u.

ELIZABETH wrote a letter to James; in which she quoted a moral sentence from Isocrates, and indirectly reproached him with inconstancy, and a breach of his engagements. James, in his reply, justified his measures; and turned two passages of Isocrates against her, for one which she had directed against him^x. She next sent Walsingham in an embassy to him; and her chief purpose in employing that aged minister on an errand where so little business was to be transacted, was to learn, from a man of so much penetration and discernment, the real character of James.

^t MS. in the Advocate's library, A. 3. 28. p. 401. from the Cott. Lib. Calig. c. 9.

^u Spotswood, p. 325, 326, & seq.

^x Melvil, p. 140, 141. Strype, vol. iii. p. 165.

CHAP.

XLI.

1583.

This young prince possessed very good parts, tho' not accompanied with that vigour and industry which his station required; and as he excelled in general discourse and conversation, Walsingham entertained a higher idea of his talents than he was afterwards found, when real business was transacted, to have fully merited^y. The account which he gave his mistress, induced her to treat him thenceforth with some more regard than she had hitherto been inclined to pay him.

1584.

THE King of Scots, persevering in his present views, summoned a Parliament; where it was enacted, that no clergyman should presume, in his sermons, to utter false, untrue, or scandalous sayings against the King, the council, or the public measures, or to meddle, in an improper manner, with the affairs of his majesty and the states^z. The clergy, finding that the pulpit would be no longer a sanctuary for them, were extremely offended: They said, that the King was become popish in his heart; and they gave their adversaries the epithets of gross libertines, belly gods, and infamous persons^a. The violent conduct of Arran soon brought over the popularity to their side. The earl of Gowry, tho' pardoned for the late attempt, was committed to prison, was tried on some new accusations, condemned, and executed. Many innocent persons suffered from the tyranny of this favourite; and the banished lords, being assisted by Elizabeth, now found the time favourable for the recovery of their estates and authority. After they had been foiled in one attempt upon Stirling, they prevailed in another; and being admitted to the King's presence, were pardoned, and restored to his favour.

ARRAN was degraded from authority; deprived of that estate and title which he had usurped; and the

^y Melvil, p. 148. Jebb, vol. ii. p. 536.

^z Spotswood, p. 353.

^a Ibid. p. 334.

whole country seemed to be composed to tranquillity. Elizabeth, after opposing, during some time, the credit of this favourite, had found it more expedient, before his fall, to compose all differences with him, by the means of Davison, a minister whom she sent to Scotland: But having more confidence in the lords, whom she had helped to restore, she was pleased with this alteration of affairs; and maintained a good correspondence with the new court and ministry of James.

CHAP.
XLI.

1584.

THESE revolutions in Scotland would have been regarded as of small importance to the repose and security of Elizabeth, had her own subjects been entirely united and had not the zeal of the catholics, excited by constraint more properly than persecution, daily threatened her with some dangerous insurrection. The vigilance of the ministers, particularly of Burleigh and Walsingham, was raised in proportion to the activity of the malecontents; and many arts, which had been blameable in a more peaceable government, were employed to detect conspiracies, and even discover the secret inclinations of men. Counterfeit letters were wrote in the name of the Queen of Scots, or of the English exiles, and privately conveyed to the houses of the catholics: Spies were hired to observe the actions and discourse of suspected persons: Informers were countenanced: And tho' the sagacity of these two great ministers helped them to distinguish the true from the false intelligence, many calumnies were, no doubt, hearkened to, and all the subjects, particularly the catholics, kept in the utmost anxiety and inquietude. Henry Percy earl of Northumberland, brother to the earl beheaded some years before, and Philip Howard, earl of Arundel, son to the unfortunate duke of Norfolk, fell under suspicion; and the latter was, by order of the council, confined to his own house. Francis Throcmorton, a private gentleman, was committed to

Conspira-
cies in
England.

CHAP. to custody, on account of a letter which he had wrote
 XLI. to the Queen of Scots, and which was intercepted.
 1584. Lord Paget, and Charles Arundel, who had been engaged with him in treasonable designs, immediately withdrew beyond sea. Throcmorton confessed, that a plan for an invasion and insurrection had been laid; and tho', on his trial, he was desirous of retracting this confession, and imputing it to the fear of torture, he was found guilty and executed. Mendoza, the Spanish ambassador, having promoted this conspiracy, was ordered to depart the kingdom; and Wade was sent into Spain, to excuse his dismissal, and to desire the King to send another ambassador in his place: But Philip would not so much as admit the English ambassador to his presence. Creighton, a Scots Jesuit, coming over on board a vessel which was seized, tore some papers, with an intention of throwing them into the sea; but the wind blowing them back upon the ship, they were put together, and discovered some dangerous secrets^b.

MANY of these conspiracies were, with great appearance of reason, imputed to the contrivances of the Queen of Scots^c; and as her name was employed in all of them, the council thought, that they could not use too many precautions against the danger of her claims, and the restless activity of her temper. She was removed from under the care of the earl of Shrewsbury, who, tho' vigilant and faithful in that trust, had also been indulgent to his prisoner, particularly with regard to air and exercise: And she was committed to the custody of Sir Amias Paulet and Sir Drue Drury; men of honour, but inflexible and rigid in their care and attention. An association was also set on foot by the earl of Leicester and other courtiers; and as Elizabeth was extremely beloved by the whole nation, except the more zealous catholics, men of all ranks willingly

^b Camden, p. 499.

^c Strype, vol. iii. p. 246.

flocked

flocked to the subscription of it. The purport of this association was to defend the Queen, to revenge her death or any injury committed against her, and to exclude from the throne all claimants, whatever title they possessed, by whose suggestion, or for whose behoof, any violence should be offered to her majesty^d. The Queen of Scots was sensible, that this association was levelled against her; and to remove all suspicion from herself, she also desired leave to subscribe it.

C H A P.

XLI.

1584.

ELIZABETH, that she might the more discourage malecontents, by shewing them the concurrence of the nation in her favour, summoned a new Parliament; and she met with that dutiful attachment, which she expected. The association was confirmed by Parliament; and a clause was added, by which the Queen was empowered to name commissioners for the trial of any pretender to the Crown, who should attempt or imagine any invasion, insurrection, or assassination against the Queen: Upon condemnation, pronounced by these commissioners, the person was excluded from all claim to the succession, and was farther punishable, as her majesty should direct. And for the greater security, a council of regency, in case of the Queen's violent death, was appointed to govern the kingdom, to settle the succession, and to take vengeance of that act of treason^e.

23d November.

A Parliament.

A SEVERE law was also enacted against jesuits and popish priests: That they should depart the kingdom within forty days; that those who should remain beyond that time, or should afterwards return, should be guilty of high treason; that those who harboured or relieved them should be guilty of felony; that those who were educated in seminaries, if they returned not in six months after notice given, and submitted not themselves, to the Queen, before a bishop or two justices, should be guilty of high treason: And that if

^d State Trials, vol. i. p. 122, 123.^e 27 Eliz. cap. 1.
any

any, so submitting themselves, should, within ten years, approach the Queen's court, or come within ten miles of it, their submission should be void^f. By this law, the exercise of the catholic religion, which had formerly been prohibited under lighter penalties, and which was, in many instances, connived at, was totally suppressed. In the subsequent part of the Queen's reign, the law was sometimes executed, by the capital punishment of priests; and tho' the partizans of that princess asserted, that they were punished for their treason, not their religion, the apology must only be understood in this sense, that the law was enacted on account of the treasonable views and attempts of the sect, not that every individual, who suffered the penalty of the law, was convicted of treason^g. The catholics, therefore, might now justly complain of a very violent persecution; which, we may safely affirm, in spite of the rigid and bigoted maxims of that age, not to be the best method of converting them, or of reconciling them to the established government and religion.

THE Parliament, besides arming the Queen with these powers, granted her a supply of one subsidy and two fifteenths. The only circumstance, in which their proceedings were disagreeable to her, was an application, which the commons made for a farther reformation in ecclesiastical matters. Yet even in this attempt, which affected her, as well as them, in a very delicate point, they discovered how much they were overawed by her authority. The majority of the house were puritans, or inclined to that sect^h; but the severe re-

^f 27 Eliz cap. 2.

^g Some even of those who defend the Queen's measures, allow that in ten years fifty priests were executed, and fifty-five banished. Camden, p. 649.

^h Besides the petition after-mentioned, another proof of the prevalency of the puritans among the commons was their passing a bill for the reverend observance of Sunday, which they called

primands, which they had already, in former sessions, C H A P.
met with from the throne, deterred them from intro- XLI.
ducing any bill concerning religion; a proceeding
which would have been interpreted as an incroachment
on the royal prerogative: They were contented to
proceed by way of humble petition, and that not to her
majesty, which would certainly have given some of-
fence but to the house of lords, or rather to the bishops,
who had a seat in that house, and from whom alone
they were contented to receive all advances towards
a reformation¹. A strange departure from what we
now apprehend to be the dignity of the commons!

1584.

THE commons desired in their humble petition, that
no bishop should exercise his function of ordination but
with the consent and concurrence of six presbyters: A
demand, which as it would have introduced a change
of ecclesiastical government, was firmly rejected by
the prelates. They desired that no clergyman should
be instituted into any benefice, without previous warn-
ing being given to the parish, that they might exa-
mine whether there lay any objection to his life or
doctrine: But this attempt towards a popular model
naturally met with the same fate. In another article of
the petition, they prayed, that the bishops should not
insist upon every ceremony, or deprive incumbents for
omitting part of the service: As if uniformity in pub-
lic worship had not been established by law; or as if
the prelates had been endowed with a dispensing pow-
er. They complained of abuses, which prevailed, in
denouncing the sentence of excommunication, and
entreated the reverend fathers to think of some law
for the remedy of these abuses: Implying that those

the Sabbath, and the depriving the people of those amusements,
which they were accustomed to take on that day. D'Ewes, p.
335. It was a strong symptom of a contrary spirit in the upper
house, that they proposed to add wednesday to the fast days, and
to prohibit entirely the eating of flesh on that day. D'Ewes, p.
373.

¹ D'Ewes, p. 357.

VOL. V.

M m

matters

CHAP. matters were too high for the commons of themselves to meddle with them.

XLI.
1584.

BUT the most material article, which the commons touched upon in their petition, was the ecclesiastical commission, and the oath *ex officio*, as it was called, exacted by that court. This is a subject of such importance, as to merit some explanation.

The ecclesiastical court.

THE first primate after the Queen's accession, was Parker a man rigid in exacting conformity to the established worship, and in punishing by fines and deprivations, all the puritans, who attempted to innovate any thing in the habits, ceremonies, or liturgy of the church. He died in 1575; and was succeeded by Grindal, who, as he himself was inclined to the new sect, was with great difficulty brought to execute the law against them, or to punish the nonconforming clergy. He declined obeying the Queen's orders for the suppression of *prophesyings*, which she apprehended, had become so many academies of fanaticism; and for this offence, she had, by an order of the Star Chamber, sequestered him from his archiepiscopal function, and confined him to his own house. Upon his death, which happened in 1583, she determined not to fall into the same error in her next choice; and she named Whitgift, a zealous churchman, who had already signalized his pen in controversy, and who, having in vain attempted to convince the puritans by argument, was now resolved to open their eyes by power, and by the execution of penal statutes. He informed the Queen, that all the spiritual authority lodged in the prelates was insignificant without the sanction of the crown; and as there was no ecclesiastical commission at that time in force, he engaged her to issue a new one; more arbitrary than any of the former, and conveying more unlimited authority*. She appointed forty-four commissioners, twelve of whom were ec-

* Neal's History of the Puritans, vol. i. p. 410.

clesiastics;

clestics; three commissioners could exercise the whole power of the court; their jurisdiction extended over the whole kingdom, and over all orders of men; and every circumstance of their authority, and all their methods of proceeding, were contrary to the clearest principles of law and natural equity. They were empowered to visit and reform all errors, heresies, schisms, in a word, to regulate all opinions, as well as to punish all breach of uniformity in the exercise of public worship. They were directed to make enquiry, not only by the legal methods of juries and witnesses, but by all other means and ways, which they could devise; that is, by the rack, by torture, by inquisition, by imprisonment. Where they thought proper to suspect any person, they might administer to him an oath, called *ex officio*, by which he was bound to answer all questions, and might thereby be obliged to accuse himself or his most intimate friend. The fines, which they imposed, were merely discretionary, and often occasioned the total ruin of the offenders, contrary to the established laws of the kingdom. The imprisonment, to which they condemned any delinquent, was limited by no rule but their own pleasure. They assumed a power of imposing on the clergy what new articles of subscription, and consequently of faith, they thought proper. Tho' all other spiritual courts were subject, since the reformation, to inhibitions from the supreme courts of law, the ecclesiastical commissioners exempted themselves from that legal jurisdiction, and were liable to no controul. And the more to enlarge their authority, they were empowered to punish all incests, adulteries, fornications; all outrages, misbehaviours, and disorders in marriage: and the punishments, which they might inflict were according to their wisdom, conscience, and discretion. In a word this court was a real *inquisition*; attended with

CHAP. XLI.

1584.

CHAP.

XLI.

1584.

all the iniquities, as well as cruelties, inseparable from that horrid tribunal. And as the jurisdiction of the ecclesiastical court was destructive of all law, so its erection was deemed by many a mere usurpation of this imperious princess, and had no other foundation than a clause of a statute, restoring the supremacy to the crown, and empowering the sovereign to appoint commissioners for exercising that prerogative. But prerogative in general, and especially the supremacy, were supposed in that age to involve powers, which no law, precedent, or reason could limit and determine.

But tho' the commons, in their humble petition to the prelates, had touched so gently and submissively on the ecclesiastical grievances, the Queen, in a speech from the throne at the end of the session, could not forbear taking notice of their presumption, and reproving them for those murmurs, which, for fear of offending her, they had pronounced so low as not directly to reach her royal ears. After giving them some general thanks for their attachment to her, and making professions of affection to her subjects, she told them, that whoever found fault with the church threw a slander upon her, since she was appointed by God supreme ruler over it, and no heresies nor schisms could prevail in the kingdom but by her permission and negligence: That some abuses must necessarily have place in every thing; but she warned the prelates to be watchful; for if she found them careless of their charge, she was fully determined to depose them: That she was commonly supposed to have employed herself in many studies, particularly, philosophical (by which, I suppose, she meant theological) and she would confess, that few, whose leisure had not allowed them to make profession of science, had read or reflected more: That as she could discern the presumption of many, in curiously canvassing the scriptures, and starting innovations, she would

would no longer endure this licence; but meant to CHAP. guide her people, by God's rule, in the just mean XLI. between the corruptions of Rome and the errors of modern sectaries: And that as the Romanists were the inveterate enemies of her person, so the other innovators were dangerous to all kingly government; and under colour of preaching the word of God, presumed to exercise their private judgment, and to censure the actions of the prince¹.

1584.

FROM the whole of this transaction, we may observe, that the commons, in making their general application to the prelates, as well as in some particular articles of their petition, showed themselves wholly ignorant, no less than the Queen, of the principles of liberty and a legal constitution. And it may not be unworthy of remark, that Elizabeth, so far from yielding to the displeasure of the parliament against the ecclesiastical commission, granted a new commission before the end of her reign; in which she enlarged, rather than restrained, the powers of the commissioners^m.

DURING this session of Parliament, there was discovered a conspiracy, which much increased the general animosity against the catholics, and still farther widened the breach between the religious parties. William Parry, a catholic gentleman, had received the Queen's pardon for a crime, by which he was exposed to capital punishment; and having got permission to travel, he retired to Milan, and made open profession of his religion, which he had concealed while he remained in England. He was here persuaded by Palmio, a

¹ D'Ewes, p. 328. This sect had indeed gone so far, that a book of discipline was secretly subscribed by above five hundred clergymen; and the presbyterian government thereby established in the midst of the church, notwithstanding the rigour of the prelates and of the high commission. So impossible is it by penal statutes, however severe, to suppress all religious innovation. See Neal's Hist. of the puritans, Vol. i. p. 483. Strype's Life of Whitgift, p. 291.

^m Rymer, tom. xvi. p. 292. 386. 400.

jesuit,

CHAP.

XLI.

1584.

jesuit, that he could not perform a more meritorious action, than to take away the life of his sovereign and his benefactors; the nuncio, Campeggio, when consulted, approved extremely of this pious undertaking; and Parry, tho' still agitated with doubts, came to Paris, with an intention of passing over to England, and executing his bloody purpose. He was here encouraged in the design by Thomas Morgan, a gentleman of great credit in the party; and tho' Watts and some other catholic priests told him, that the enterprize was criminal and impious, he preferred the authority of Raggazzoni, the pope's nuncio at Paris, and determined to persist in his resolution. He here wrote a letter to the pope, which was conveyed to cardinal Como; he communicated his intention to the holy father; and craved his absolution and paternal benediction. He received an answer from the cardinal, by which he perceived that his purpose was extremely applauded; and he came over to England with a full design of carrying it into execution. So deeply are the sentiments of morality engraved in men's breasts, that it is very difficult even for the prejudices of false religion totally to efface them; and this bigotted assassin resolved, before he came to extremity, to try every other expedient for alleviating the persecutions, under which the catholics at that time laboured. He found means of being introduced to the Queen; assured her that many conspiracies were formed against her; and exhorted her, as the only means of saving her life, to give the Romanists some more indulgence in the exercise of their religion: But lest he should be tempted by the opportunity to assassinate her, he always came to court unprovided of every offensive weapon. He even procured himself to be elected member of Parliament; and having made a vehement speech against the severe laws enacted this last session, was committed to custody

custody for his freedom, and sequestered from the CHAP. house. His failure in these attempts confirmed him XLI. the more in his former resolution, and he communicated his intentions to Nevil, who entered zealously into the design, and was determined to have a share in the merits of its execution. A book, newly published by Dr. Allen, afterwards created a cardinal, served farther to efface all their scruples, with regard to the murder of an heretical prince; and having agreed to shoot the Queen, while she should be taking the air on horseback, they resolved, if they could not make their escape, to sacrifice their lives in fulfilling a duty, so agreeable, as they imagined, to the will of God, and to true religion. But while they were watching an opportunity for the execution of their purpose, the earl of Westmoreland happened to die in exile; and as Nevil was next heir to that family, he began to entertain hopes, that, by doing some acceptable service to the Queen, he might recover the estate and honours which had been forfeited by the rebellion of the last earl. He betrayed the whole conspiracy to the ministers; and Parry, being thrown into prison, confessed the guilt, both to them, and to the jury who tried him. The letter from cardinal Como being produced in court, put Parry's narrative beyond all question; and that criminal, having received sentence of deathⁿ, suffered the punishment, which the law appointed for his treasonable conspiracy^o.

ⁿ State Trials, vol. i. p. 103 & seq. Strype, vol. iii. p. 255 & seq.

• This year, the earl of Northumberland, brother to the earl beheaded some years before, had been engaged in a conspiracy with lord Paget for the delivery of the Queen of Scots. He was thrown into the Tower; and being conscious that his guilt could be proved upon him, at least, that sentence would infallibly be pronounced against him, he freed himself from farther prosecution by a voluntary death. He shot himself into the breast with a pistol. About the same time, the earl of Arundel, son to the unfortunate duke of Norfolk, having entered into some exceptionable measures, and reflecting on the unhappy fate, which had at-

CHAP.
XLI.

1584.

The af-
fairs of
the Low
Countries.

THESE bloody designs now appeared every where, as the result of that bigotted spirit by which the two religions, especially the catholic, were at this time actuated. One Somerville, a gentleman of the county of Warwic, somewhat disordered in his understanding, had heard so much of the merit attending the assassination of heretics and persecutors, that he came to London with a view of murdering the Queen; but having betrayed his design by some extravagances, he was thrown into prison, and there perished by a voluntary death^p. About the same time, Baltazar Gerard, a Burgundian, undertook, and executed the same design against the prince of Orange; and that great man perished at Delft, by the hands of a desperate assassin, who, with a resolution worthy of a better cause, sacrificed his own life in order to destroy the famous restorer and protector of religious liberty. The Flemings, who regarded that prince as their father, were filled with infinite regret, as well when they considered the miserable end of so brave a patriot, as their own forlorn condition, from the loss of so powerful and prudent a leader, and from the rapid progress of the Spanish arms. The prince of Parma had made every year great advances upon them, had reduced several of the provinces to obedience, and had laid close siege to Antwerp, the richest and most populous city of the Netherlands, whose subjection, it was foreseen, would give a mortal blow to the already declining affairs of the revolted States. The only hopes which remained to them, arose from

tended his family, endeavoured to depart secretly beyond sea, but was discovered and thrown into the Tower. In 1587 this nobleman was brought to his trial for high treason; chiefly because he had dropped some expressions of affection to the Spaniards and had affirmed that he would have masses said for the success of the armada. His peers found him guilty of treason: This severe sentence was not executed; but Arundel never recovered his liberty. He died a prisoner in 1595. He carried his religious austerities so far, that they were believed the immediate cause of his death.

^p Camden, p. 495.

the prospect of foreign succours. Being well acquainted with the cautious and frugal maxims of Elizabeth, they expected better success in France; and in the view of engaging Henry to embrace their defence, they tendered him the sovereignty of their provinces. But the present condition of that monarchy obliged the King to reject so advantageous an offer. The duke of Anjou's death, which, he thought, would have delivered him from the intrigues of that fickle and turbulent prince, plunged him into the deepest distress; and the King of Navarre, a professed Hugonot, being next heir to the crown, the duke of Guise took thence occasion to revive the catholic league, and to urge Henry, by the most violent expedients, to seek the exclusion and suppression of that brave and virtuous prince. Henry himself, tho' a zealous catholic, yet, because he declined complying with their precipitate measures, became an object of aversion to the league; and as his zeal in practising all the superstitious observances of the Romish church, was accompanied with a very licentious conduct in private life, the catholic faction, in contradiction to the most vulgar experience, embraced thence the pretext of representing his devotion as mere hypocrisy and deceit. Finding his authority to decline, he was obliged to declare war against the Hugonots, and to put arms into the hands of the League, whom, both on account of their dangerous pretensions at home, and their close alliance with Philip, he secretly regarded as his most dangerous enemies. Constrained by the same policy, he perceived the danger of associating himself with the revolted protestants in the Low Countries, and was obliged to renounce that inviting occasion of revenging himself for all the hostile intrigues and enterprizes of Philip.

THE States, reduced to this extremity, sent over a solemn embassy to London, and made offer to the

CHAP.
XLI.

1585.

Queen, of acknowledging her for their sovereign, on condition of obtaining her protection and assistance. Elizabeth's wisest counsellors were very much divided in opinion with regard to the conduct which she should hold in this critical and important emergency. Some advised her to reject the offer of the States, and represented the imminent dangers, as well as injustice, attending the acceptance of them. They said, that the suppression of rebellious subjects was the common cause of all sovereigns, and the encouragement of a revolt in the Flemings, might prove the example to a like pernicious practice in the English: That tho' princes were bound by the laws of the Supreme Being, not to oppress their subjects, the people never were entitled to forget all duty to their sovereign, or transfer, from every fancy or disgust, or even from the justest ground of complaint, their obedience to any other master: That the Queen, in the succours hitherto afforded the Flemings, had considered them as labouring under oppression, not as entitled to freedom; and had intended only to admonish Philip not to persevere in his tyranny, without any view of ravishing from him these provinces, which he enjoyed by hereditary right from his ancestors: That her situation in Ireland, and even in England, would afford that powerful monarch sufficient opportunity of retaliating upon her; and she must henceforth expect, that, instead of secretly fomenting faction, he would openly employ his whole force in the protection and defence of the catholics. That the pope would undoubtedly unite his spiritual arms to the temporal ones of Spain; and that the Queen would soon repent her making so small and precarious an acquisition in foreign countries, by exposing her own dominions to such imminent danger^q.

^q Camden, p. 507. Bentivoglio, part. 2. lib. iv.

OTHER counsellors of Elizabeth maintained a contrary opinion. They asserted, that the Queen had not even from the beginning of her reign, but certainly had not at present, the choice, whether she would embrace friendship or hostility with Philip: That by the whole tenor of that prince's conduct it appeared, that his sole aims were, the extension of his empire, and the utter extermination of the protestants, under the specious pretence of maintaining the catholic faith: That the provocations which she had already given him, joined to his general scheme of policy, would for ever render him her implacable enemy; and as soon as he had subdued his revolted subjects, he would undoubtedly fall, with the whole force of his united empire, on her defenceless state: That the only question was, whether she would maintain a war, abroad and supported by allies, or wait till the subjection of all the confederates of England, should give her enemies leisure to begin their hostilities in the bowels of that kingdom: That the revolted provinces, tho' in a declining condition, possessed still considerable force; and by the assistance of England, by the advantages of their situation, and by their inveterate antipathy to Philip, might still be enabled to maintain the contest against the Spanish monarchy: That their maritime power, united to the Queen's, would give her entire security on that side from which alone she could be assaulted, and would even enable her to make inroads on Philip's dominions, both in Europe and the Indies: That a war which was necessary, could never be unjust; and self-defence was concerned, as well in warding certain dangers at a distance, as in repelling any immediate invasion: And that since hostility with Spain was the unavoidable consequence of the present interests and situations of the two monarchies, it were better to compensate that danger and loss by the acquisition of such important provinces to the English empire^r.

^r Camden, *ibid.* Bentivoglio, *ibid.*

CHAP.

XLI.

1585.

AMIDST these opposite councils, the Queen, apprehensive of the consequences attending each extreme, was inclined to steer a middle course; and tho' such conduct is seldom prudent, she was not, in this resolution, guided by any prejudice or affection. She determined not to see, without opposition, the total ruin of the revolted provinces, whose interests she deemed so closely connected with her own: But foreseeing, that the acceptance of their sovereignty would engage her to employ her whole force in their defence, would give umbrage to her neighbours, and would expose her to the reproach of ambition and usurpation, imputations which she had hitherto carefully avoided, she immediately rejected this offer. She concluded a league with the States on the following conditions: That she should send over an army to their assistance, of five thousand foot and a thousand horse, and pay them during the war; that the general, and two others, whom she should appoint, should be admitted into the council of the States; that neither party should make peace without the consent of the other; that her expences should be refunded after the conclusion of the war; and that the towns of Flushing and the Brille, with the castle of Ramme-kins, should, in the mean time, be consigned into her hands by way of security.

THE Queen knew that this measure would immediately engage her in open hostilities with Philip; yet was she not terrified with the view of the present greatness of that ambitious monarch. The continent of Spain was at that time rich and populous; and the late addition of Portugal, besides securing internal tranquillity, had annexed an opulent kingdom to Philip's dominions, had made him master of many settlements in the East-Indies, and of the whole commerce of those regions, and had mightily increased his naval power, in which he was before chiefly deficient. All the princes of Italy, even the pope and the court of Rome, were

were reduced to a kind of subjection under him, and seemed to possess their sovereignty on very precarious and uncertain terms. The Austrian branch in Germany, with their dependant principalities, was closely connected with him, and was ready to supply him with troops for every enterprize. All the treasures of the West-Indies were in his possession; and the present scarcity of the precious metals in every country of Europe, rendered the influence of his riches the more forcible and extensive. The Netherlands seemed on the point of relapsing into servitude; and small hopes were entertained of their withstanding those numerous and veteran armies which, under the command of the most experienced generals, he employed against them. Even France, which was wont to counterballance the Austrian greatness, had lost all her force from intestine commotions; and as the catholics, the ruling party, were closely connected with him, he rather expected thence an augmentation, than a diminution, of his power. Upon the whole, such prepossessions were every where entertained concerning the force of the Spanish monarchy, that the King of Sweden, when he heard that Elizabeth had openly embraced the defence of the revolted Flemings, scrupled not to say, that she had now taken the diadem from her head, and had adventured it upon the doubtful chance of war^s. Yet was this princess rather cautious than enterprizing in her natural temper: She ever needed more to be impelled by the vigour, than restrained by the prudence of her ministers: But when she saw an evident necessity, she braved danger with magnanimous courage; and trusting to her own consummate wisdom, and to the affections, however divided, of her people, she prepared herself to resist, and even to assault, the whole force of the catholic monarch.

CHAP.
XLI.

1585.

^s Camden, p. 508.

CHAP.
XLI.

1585.

THE earl of Leicester was sent over to Holland, at the head of the English auxiliary forces. He carried with him a splendid retinue; being accompanied with the young earl of Essex, his son-in-law, the lords Audley and North, Sir William Russell, Sir Thomas Shirley, Sir Arthur Bassett, Sir Walter Waller, Sir Gervase Clifton, and a select troop of five hundred gentlemen. He was received on his arrival at Flushing, by his nephew, Sir Philip Sidney, the governor; and every town thro' which he passed, expressed their joy by acclamations, and triumphal arches, as if his presence, and the Queen's protection, had brought them the most certain deliverance. The States, desirous of engaging Elizabeth still farther in their defence, and knowing the interest which Leicester possessed with her, conferred on him the title of governor and captain-general of the United Provinces, appointed a guard to attend him, and treated him, in some respects, as their sovereign. But this step had a contrary effect to what they expected. The Queen was displeased with the artifice of the States, and the ambition of Leicester. She reprimanded both of them very severely by letters; and it was with some difficulty, that, after many humble submissions, they were able to appease her.

Hostilities with Spain.

AMERICA was regarded as the chief source of Philip's power, as well as the most defenceless part of his dominions; and Elizabeth finding that an open breach with that monarch was unavoidable, resolved not to leave him unmolested on that quarter. The great success of the Spaniards and Portuguese in both Indies had excited a spirit of emulation in England; and as the success of commerce, still more of planting colonies, is slow and gradual, it was happy, that a war, in this critical age, had opened a more flattering prospect to the avarice and ambition of the English, and had tempted them, by the view of sudden and exorbitant profit, to engage

engage in naval enterprizes. A fleet of twenty sail was equipped to attack the Spaniard in the West-Indies: Two thousand three hundred volunteers, besides seamen, engaged on board of it: Sir Francis Drake was appointed admiral; Christopher Carlisle commander of the land forces. They took St. Jago, near Cape Verde, by surprize, and found in it plenty of provisions but no riches. They sailed to Hispaniola: and easily making themselves masters of St. Domingo by assault, obliged the inhabitants to ransom their houses by a sum of money. Carthagena fell next into their hands, after some more resistance, and was treated in the same manner. They burned St. Anthony and St. Helens, two towns on the coast of Florida. Sailing along the coast of Virginia, they found the small remains of a colony which had been planted there by Sir Walter Raleigh, and which had gone extremely to decay. This was the first attempt of the English to form such settlements; and tho' they have since surpassed all European nations, both in the situation of their colonies, and in the noble principles of liberty and industry, on which they are founded; they had here been so unsuccessful, that the miserable planters abandoned their settlements, and prevailed on Drake to carry them with him to England. He returned with so much riches as encouraged the volunteers, and with such accounts of the Spanish weakness in those countries as served extremely to inflame the spirits of the nation to future enterprizes. The great mortality which the climate had produced in his fleet, was as is usual, but a feeble restraint on the avidity and sanguine hopes of young adventurers*. It is thought that Drake's fleet first introduced the use of tobacco into England.

THE enterprizes of Leicester were much less successful than those of Drake. This man possessed neither courage nor capacity, equal to the trusts reposed in

CHAP.
XLI.

1585.

1586.

January.

* Camden, p. 509.

CHAP.
XLI.

1586.

in him by the Queen; and as he was the only bad choice she made for any considerable employment, men naturally believed, that she had here been influenced by an affection still more partial than that of friendship. He gained at first some advantage in an action against the Spaniards; and threw succours into Grave, by which that place was enabled to make a vigorous defence: But the cowardice of the governor, Van Hemert, rendered all those efforts useless. He capitulated after a very feeble resistance; and being tried for his conduct, suffered a capital punishment from the sentence of a court martial. The Prince of Parma next undertook the siege of Venlo, which was surrendered to him, after some resistance. The fate of Nuys was more dismal; being taken by assault, while the garrison was treating of a capitulation. Rhimberg, which was garrisoned by twelve hundred English, under the command of colonel Morgan, was afterwards besieged by the Spaniards; and Leicester, thinking himself too weak to attempt raising the siege, endeavoured to draw off the prince of Parma by forming some other enterprize. He first attacked Doesberg, and succeeded; He then sat down before Zutphen, which the Spanish general thought so important a place, that he hastened to its relief. He made the marquis of Guasto advance with a convoy which he intended to throw into the place. They were favoured by a fog; but falling by chance on a body of English cavalry, a furious action ensued, in which the Spaniards were worsted, and the marquis of Gonzaga, an Italian nobleman of great reputation and family, was slain. The pursuit was stopped by the advance of the prince of Parma with the main body of the Spanish army; and the English cavalry, on their return from the field, found their advantage more than compensated by the loss of Sir Philip Sidney, who, being mortally wounded in the action, was carried off by the soldiers and soon after died. This person is described

described by the writers of that age as the most perfect model of an accomplished gentleman which was ever formed even by the wanton imagination of poetry or fiction. Virtuous conduct, polite conversation, heroic valour, and elegant erudition, all concurred to render him the ornament and delight of the English court; and as the credit which he possessed with the Queen and the earl of Leicester, was wholly employed in the encouragement of genius and literature, his praises have been transmitted with advantage to posterity. No person was so low as not to become an object of his humanity. After this last action, while he was lying on the field, mangled with wounds, a bottle of water was brought him to relieve his thirst; but observing a soldier near him in a like miserable condition, he said, *This man's necessity is still greater than mine*: And resigned to him the bottle of water. The King of Scots, struck with admiration of Sidney's virtue, celebrated his memory by a copy of Latin verses, which he composed on occasion of the death of that young hero.

THE English, tho' a long peace had deprived them of all experience, were strongly possessed of military genius; and the advantages gained by the prince of Parma were not attributed to the superior bravery and discipline of the Spaniards, but solely to the misconduct of Leicester. The States were much discontented with his management of the war; but still more with his arbitrary and imperious conduct; and at the end of the campaign, they applied to him for a redress of all their grievances. But Leicester, without giving them any satisfaction, departed soon after for England^a.

THE Queen, while she provoked so powerful an enemy as the King of Spain, was not forgetful to secure herself on the side of Scotland; and she endeavoured both to cultivate the friendship and alliance of

^a Camden, p. 512. Bentivoglio, part 2. lib. iv.

CHAP.

XLI.

1586.

her kinsman, James, and to remove all grounds of quarrel between them. An attempt which she had made some time before, was not well calculated to gain the confidence of that prince. She dispatched Wotton as her ambassador to Scotland; but tho' she gave him private instructions with regard to her affairs, she informed James, that when she had any political business to discuss with him, she would employ another minister; that this man was not fitted for serious negotiations; and that her chief purpose in sending him, was to entertain the King with witty and facetious conversation, and to partake without reserve of his pleasures and amusements. Wotton was master of profound dissimulation, and knew how to cover, under the appearance of a careless gaiety, the deepest designs, and most dangerous artifices. When but a youth of twenty, he had been employed by his uncle Dr. Wotton, ambassador in France during the reign of Mary, to ensnare the constable, Montmorency; and had not his purpose been frustrated by pure accident, his cunning had prevailed over all the caution and experience of that aged minister. It is no wonder, that, after years had so much improved him in all arts of deceit, he should gain an ascendant over a young prince, of so open and unguarded a temper as James, especially when the Queen's recommendation prepared the way for his artifices. He was admitted into all the pleasures of the King; made himself master of his secrets; and had so much the more authority with him in political transactions, as he did not seem to pay the least attention or regard to these matters. The Scots ministers, who observed the growing interest of this man, endeavoured to acquire his friendship; and scrupled not to sacrifice to his intrigues the most essential interests of their master. Elizabeth's usual jealousies

lousies with regard to her heirs began now to be levelled against James; and as that prince had attained the years proper for marriage, she was apprehensive, lest, by being strengthened with children and alliances, he should acquire the greater interest and authority with her English subjects. She directed Wotton to form a secret concert with some Scots noblemen, and to procure their promise, that James, during three years, should not, on any account, be permitted to marry. In consequence of this view, they endeavoured to embroil him with the King of Denmark, who had sent ambassadors to Scotland, on pretence of demanding the restitution of the Orkneys, but really with a view of opening a proposal of marriage between James and his daughter. Wotton is said to have employed his intrigues to purposes still more dangerous. He formed a conspiracy with some malecontents, to seize the person of the King, and to deliver him into the hands of Elizabeth, who would probably have denied all concurrence in the design, but who would have been careful to retain him in perpetual thralldom, if not captivity. The conspiracy was discovered, and Wotton fled hastily from Scotland, without taking leave of the King^x.

JAMES's situation obliged him to dissemble his resentment of this traiterous attempt, and his natural temper inclined him soon to forgive and forget it. The Queen found no difficulty to renew the negotiations for a strict alliance between Scotland and England; and the more effectually to gain the prince's affections, she granted him a pension, equivalent to his claim on the inheritance of his grandmother the countess of Lenox, lately deceased^y. A league was formed between Elizabeth and James, for the mutual defence of their dominions, and of their religion, now me-

^x Melvil.^y Spotswood, p. 351.

CHAP.

XLI.

1586.

naced by the open combination of all the catholic powers of Europe. It was stipulated, that if Elizabeth was invaded, James should aid her with a body of two thousand horse and five thousand foot; that Elizabeth, in a like case, should send to his assistance, three thousand horse and six thousand foot; that the charge of these armies should be defrayed by the prince who demanded assistance; that if the invasion should be made upon England, within sixty miles of the frontiers of Scotland, this latter kingdom should march its whole force to the assistance of the former; and that the present league should supersede all former alliances of either state with any foreign kingdom, so far as religion was concerned^z.

By this league James secured himself against all attempts from abroad, opened a way for acquiring the confidence and affection of the English, and might entertain some prospect of domestic tranquillity, which, so long as he lived on bad terms with Elizabeth, he could never expect long to enjoy. Besides the turbulent disposition, and inveterate feuds of the nobility, antient maladies of the Scots government, the spirit of fanaticism had introduced a new disorder; so much the more dangerous, as religion, when corrupted by false opinion, is not restrained by any rules of morality, and is even scarcely to be accounted for in its operations, by any principles of ordinary conduct and policy. The insolence of the Scots preachers, who triumphed in their dominion over the populace, had, at this time, reached an extreme height; and they carried their arrogance so far, not only against the King, but against the Parliament, and the whole civil power, that they dared to excommunicate the archbishop of St. Andrews, because he had been active for promoting a law which restrained their seditious ser-

^z Ibid. p. 349. Camden, p. 513. Rymer, tom. xv. p. 803.

mons^a: Nor could that prelate save himself any way from this terrible sentence, but by renouncing all pretensions to ecclesiastical authority. One Gibson said in the pulpit, that captain James Stuart (meaning the late earl of Arran) and his wife, Jezabel, had been deemed the chief persecutors of the church; but it was now seen, that the King himself was the great offender: And for this crime the preacher denounced against him, the curse which fell on Jeroboam, that he should die childless, and be the last of his race^b.

CHAP.
XLI.

1586.

THE secretary, perceiving the King so much molested with ecclesiastical affairs, and with the refractory disposition of the clergy, advised him to leave them to their own courses: For that in a short time they would become so intolerable, that the people would rise against them, and chase them out of the country. "True," replied the King: "If I purposed to undo the church and religion, your counsel were good: But my intention is to maintain both; therefore cannot I suffer the clergy to follow such a conduct, as will in the end bring religion into contempt^c."

^a Spotswood, p. 345, 346:

^b Ibid. p. 344.

^c Ibid. p. 348.

C H A P. XLII.

Zeal of the Catholics.—Babington's conspiracy.—Mary assents to the conspiracy.—The conspirators seized and executed.—Resolution to try the Queen of Scots.—The commissioners prevailed on her to submit to the trial.—The trial.—Sentence against Mary.—Interposition of King James.—Reasons for the execution of Mary.—The execution.—Mary's character.—The Queen's affected sorrow.—Drake destroys the Spanish fleet at Cadiz.—Philip projects the invasion of England.—The Invincible Armada.—Preparations in England.—The Armada arrives in the Channel.—Defeated—A Parliament.—Expedition against Portugal.—Scots affairs.

CHAP.
XLII.

1586.

THE dangers which arose from the character, principles, and pretensions of the Queen of Scots, had engaged, very early, Elizabeth to consult, in her treatment of that unfortunate princess, the dictates of jealousy and politics, rather than of friendship or generosity: Resentment of this usage had pushed Mary into enterprizes, which had very nearly threatned the repose and authority of Elizabeth: The rigour and restraint, which were thence redoubled upon the captive Queen^d, still impelled her to attempt greater extremities; and while her impatience of confinement, her revenge^e, and her high spirit concurred with religious zeal,

^d Digges, p. 139. Haynes, p. 607.

^e Mary's extreme animosity against Elizabeth may easily be conceived, and broke out, about this time in an incident, which may appear curious. While the former Queen was kept in custody by the earl of Shrewsbury, she lived during a long time in great intimacy with the countess; but that lady entertaining jealousy of an amour between her and the earl, their friendship was converted into enmity; and Mary took a method of revenge, which at once gratified her spite against the countess and that against Elizabeth. She wrote to the Queen informing her of all the ma-
and

and the suggestions of desperate bigots, she was at CHAP.
last engaged in designs, which afforded her enemies, XLII.
who waited for the opportunity, a pretence or reason
for effectuating her final ruin. 1586.

licious scandalous stories, which, she said, the countess of Shrewsbury had reported of her: That Elizabeth had given a promise of marriage to a certain person, whom she afterwards often admitted to her bed: That she had been equally indulgent to Simier, the French agent, and to the duke of Anjou: That Hatton was also one of her paramours, who was even disgusted with her excessive love and fondness: That tho' she was on other occasions avaricious to the last degree, as well as ungrateful, and kind to very few, she spared no expence in gratifying her amorous passions: That notwithstanding her licentious amours, she was not made like other women; and all those who courted her marriage would in the end be disappointed: That she was so conceited of her beauty, as to swallow the most extravagant flattery from her courtiers, who could not, on these occasions, forbear even sneering at her for her folly: That it was usual for them to tell her, that the lustre of her beauty dazzled them like that of the sun, and they could not behold it with a fixed eye: She added, that the countess had said, that Mary's best policy would be to engage her son to make love to the Queen; nor was there any danger that such a proposal would be taken for mockery; so ridiculous was the opinion which she had entertained of her own charms. She pretended, that the countess had represented her as no less odious in her temper than profligate in her manners, and absurd in her vanity: That she had so beaten a young woman of the name of Scudamore as to break that lady's finger; and in order to cover over the matter, it was pretended, that the accident had proceeded from the fall of a candlestick: That she had cut another across the hand with a knife, who had been so unfortunate as to offend her. Mary added, that the countess had informed her, that Elizabeth had suborned Rolstone to pretend friendship to her, in order to debauch her, and thereby throw infamy on her rival. See Murden's State Papers, p. 558. This imprudent and malicious letter was wrote a very little before the detection of Queen Mary's conspiracy; and contributed, no doubt, to render the proceedings against her more rigorous. How far all these imputations against Elizabeth can be credited, may perhaps appear doubtful: But her extreme fondness for Leicester, Hatton, and Essex, not to mention Mountjoy and others, with the curious passages between her and admiral Seymour, contained in Haynes, render her chastity very suspicious. Her self-conceit with regard to beauty, we know from other undoubted authority, to have been extravagant. Even when she was a very old woman, she allowed her courtiers to flat-

THE

CHAP.

XLII.

1586.

Zeal of
the catho-
lics.

THE English seminary at Rheims had wrought themselves up to a high pitch of rage and animosity against the Queen. The recent persecutions, from which they had escaped: The new rigours, which they knew, awaited them in the course of their missions: The liberty which for the present they enjoyed of declaiming against that princess: And the contagion of religious fury, which every where surrounded them in France: All these causes had obliterated with them every maxim of common sense, and every principle of morals or humanity. Intoxicated with admiration of the omnipotence and infallibility of the pope, they revered his bull by which he excommunicated and deposed the Queen; and some of them had gone to that height of extravagance, as to assert, that that performance had been immediately dictated by the Holy Ghost. The assassination of heretical sovereigns, and of that princess in particular, was represented as the most meritorious of all enterprizes; and they taught, that whoever perished in such pious attempts enjoyed without dispute the glorious and never-fading crown of martyrdom. By such doctrines, they instigated John Savage, a man of desperate courage, who had served some years in the Low Countries, under the prince of Parma, to attempt the life of Elizabeth; and this assassin having made a vow to persevere in his design, was sent over to England, and recommended to the confidence of the more zealous catholics.

ter her with regard to her *excellent beauties*. Birch, vol. ii. p. 442, 443. Her passionate temper may also be proved from many lively instances; and it was not unusual with her to beat her maids of honour. See the Sydney Papers, vol. ii. p. 38. The blow she gave to Essex before the privy council is another instance. Had this Queen been born in a private station, she would not have been very amiable: But her absolute authority, at the same time that it gave an uncontrouled swing to her violent passions, enabled her to compensate for her infirmities by many great and signal virtues.

ABOUT

ABOUT the same time, John Ballard, a priest of that seminary, had returned to Paris from his mission in England and Scotland; and as he had discovered a spirit of mutiny and rebellion to be very prevalent among the catholic devotees in these countries, he had founded on that disposition, the project of dethroning Elizabeth, and of restoring by force of arms the exercise of the antient religion in England^f. The situation of affairs abroad seemed favourable to this enterprize: The pope, the Spaniard, the duke of Guise, the prince, created by the pope duke, of Parma, concurring in interests, had formed a resolution to make some attempt upon the Queen: And Mendoza, the Spanish ambassador at Paris, strongly encouraged Ballard to hope for succours from these princes. Charles Paget alone, a zealous catholic and a devoted partizan of the Queen of Scots, being well acquainted with the prudence, vigour, and general popularity of Elizabeth, always maintained, that so long as that princess was allowed to live, it was in vain to expect any success from an enterprize upon England. Ballard, persuaded of this truth, saw more clearly the necessity of executing the design, formed at Rheims: He came over to England in the disguise of a soldier, and assumed the name of captain Fortescue: And he bent his endeavours to effectuate at once the project of an assassination, an insurrection and an invasion^g.

CHAP.
XLII.

1586.

THE first person, to whom he addressed himself, was Anthony Babington of Dethic in the county of Derby. This young gentleman was of a good family, possessed a plentiful fortune, had discovered an excellent capacity, and was accomplished in literature beyond most of his years or station. Being zealously devoted to the catholic communion, he had secretly made a journey to Paris some time before; and had fallen into intimacy with Thomas Morgan, a bigotted

Babington's Conspiracy.

^f Murden's State Papers, p. 517.

^g Camden, p. 515.

CHAP.

XLII.

1586.

fugitive from England, and with the bishop of Glasgow, Mary's ambassador to the court of France. By continually extolling the amiable accomplishments and heroical virtues of that princess, they inflamed the unguarded mind of young Babington to make some attempt for her service; and they employed every principle of ambition, gallantry, and religious zeal to give him a contempt of those dangers, which attended any enterprize against the vigilant government of Elizabeth. Finding him well disposed for their purpose, they sent him back to England, and secretly, unknown to himself, recommended him to the Queen of Scots, as a person worth engaging in her service. She wrote him a letter, full of friendship and confidence; and Babington, sanguine in his temper and zealous in his principles, thought, that these advances now bound him in honour to devote himself entirely to the service of that unfortunate princess. During some time, he had found means of conveying to her all her foreign correspondence; but after she was put under the custody of Sir Amias Paulet, and reduced to a more rigorous confinement, he experienced so much difficulty and danger in rendering her this service, that he had desisted from every attempt of that nature.

WHEN Ballard began to open his intentions to Babington, he found his zeal suspended, not extinguished: His former ardour revived on the mention of any enterprize, which seemed to promise success in the cause of Mary or of the catholic religion. He had entertained sentiments conformable to those of Paget, and represented the folly of all attempts, which, during the life-time of Elizabeth, could be formed against the established religion and government of England. Ballard, encouraged by this hint, proceeded to discover to him the design undertaken by Savage^b; and was pleased to observe, that, instead of being shocked with that project, Babington only thought it not secure

^b Ibid. State Trials, p. 114.

secure enough, when entrusted to one single hand, and proposed to join four others with Savage in this desperate and bloody enterprize.

CHAP.
XLII.

1586.

IN prosecution of these views, Babington employed himself in encreasing the number of his associates; and he secretly drew into the conspiracy many catholic gentlemen, discontented with the present government. Barnwel, of a noble family in Ireland, Charnoc, a gentleman of Lancashire, and Abbington, whose father had been cofferer to the household, readily undertook the assassination of the Queen. Charles Tilney the heir of a very antient family, and Titchborne of Southampton, when the design was proposed to them, expressed some scruples, which were at last removed by the arguments of Babington and Ballard. Savage alone refused for some time to share the glory of the enterprize with any others¹; he challenged the whole to himself; and it was with some difficulty he was induced to depart from this preposterous ambition.

THE delivery of the Queen of Scots at the very same instant, when Elizabeth should be assassinated, was requisite for effecting the purpose of the conspirators; and Babington undertook, with a party of an hundred horse, to attack her guards, while she should be taking the air on horseback. In this enterprize, he engaged Edward Windsor, brother to the lord of that name, Thomas Salisbury, Robert Gage, John Travers, John Jones, and Henry Donne; most of them men of family and interest. The conspirators much wanted, but could not find, any nobleman of name, whom they might place at the head of their enterprize; but they trusted, that the great events, of the Queen's death and Mary's delivery, would rouse all the zealous catholics to arms; and that foreign forces, taking advantage of the general confusion, would easily fix

¹ State Trials, vol. i. p. 111.

CHAP. the Queen of Scots on the throne, and re-establish
XLII. the antient religion.

1586.

THESE desperate projects had not escaped the vigilance of Elizabeth's council, particularly of Walsingham, secretary of state. That artful minister had engaged Maud, a catholic priest, whom he retained in pay, to attend Ballard in his journey to France, and had thereby got a hint of the designs, entertained by the fugitives. Polly, another of his spies, had found means to insinuate himself among the conspirators in England; and tho' not entirely trusted, had obtained some insight into their dangerous secrets. But the bottom of the conspiracy was never fully known, till Gifford, a seminary priest, came over, and made a tender of his service to Walsingham. By his means, the discovery became of the utmost importance, and involved the fate of Mary, as well as of those zealous partizans of that princess.

BABINGTON and his associates, having laid such a scheme, as, they thought, promised infallible success, were impatient to communicate the design to the Queen of Scots, and to obtain her approbation and concurrence. For this service, they employed Gifford, who immediately applied to Walsingham, that the interest of that minister might forward his secret correspondence with Mary. Walsingham proposed the matter to Paulet, and desired him to connive at Gifford's corrupting one of his servants: But Paulet was averse to the introducing such a pernicious precedent into his family, and desired, that they would rather think of some other expedient. Gifford found a brewer, who supplied the family with ale; and bribed him to convey letters to the captive Queen. The letters, by Paulet's connivance, were thrust thro' a chink in the wall; and answers were returned by the same conveyance.

BALLARD

BALLARD and Babington were at first diffident of Gifford's fidelity; and to make trial of him, they gave him only blank papers made up like letters: But finding by the answers, that these had been faithfully delivered, they laid aside all farther scruple, and conveyed by his hands the most criminal and dangerous parts of their conspiracy. Babington informed Mary of the design laid for a foreign invasion, the plan of an insurrection at home, the scheme for her delivery, and the conspiracy for assassinating the usurper, by six noble gentlemen, as he termed them, all of them his private friends, who, from the zeal, which they bore to the catholic cause and her majesty's service, would undertake the *tragical execution*. Mary replied, that she approved highly of the design, that the gentlemen might expect all the rewards, which it should ever be in her power to confer, and that the death of Elizabeth was a necessary circumstance, before any attempts were made either for her own delivery or an insurrection.

CHAP. XLII.

1586.

Mary assents to the conspiracy.

These letters, with others to Mendoza, Charles Paget, the archbishop of Glasgow, and Sir Francis Ingelfield, were carried by Gifford to secretary Walsingham; were decyphered by the art of Philips, his clerk; and copies taken of them. Walsingham employed a new artifice, in order to obtain full insight into the plot: He subjoined to a letter of Mary's a postscript in the same cypher; in which he made her desire Babington to inform her of the names of the six conspirators. The indiscretion of Babington furnished Walsingham with still another means of detection as well as of defence. That gentleman had made a picture be drawn, where he himself was represented standing amidst the six assassins; and a motto was subjoined, expressing, that their common perils were the band of their confederacy. A copy of this picture was brought to Elizabeth, that she might know the assassins

* State Trials, vol. i. p. 135. Camden, p. 515.

and

CHAP. and guard herself against their approach to her person.
XLII.

1586.

MEANWHILE, Babington, anxious to ensure and hasten the foreign succours, resolved to dispatch Ballard into France; and he procured for him, under a feigned name, a licence to travel. In order to remove from himself all suspicion, he applied to Walsingham, pretended great zeal for the Queen's service, offered to go abroad, and promised to employ that confidence, which he had gained among the catholics, to the detection and disappointment of their conspiracies. Walsingham commended his loyal purposes; and promising his own council and assistance in the execution of them, still fed him with hopes, and maintained a close correspondence with him. A warrant meanwhile, was issued for seizing Ballard; and this incident joined to the consciousness of guilt, begot in all the conspirators the utmost anxiety and concern. Some advised that they should immediately make their escape: Others proposed, that Savage and Charnoc should without delay execute their purpose against Elizabeth; and Babington, in prosecution of this scheme, furnished Savage with money, that he might buy good cloaths, and have thereby the more easy access to the Queen's person. Next day, they began to apprehend, that they had taken the alarm too hastily; and Babington, having renewed his correspondence with Walsingham, was persuaded by that subtle minister, that the seizure of Ballard had proceeded entirely from the usual diligence of informers in the detection of popish and seminary priests. He even consented to take secretly lodgings in Walsingham's house, that they might have more frequent conferences together, before his intended departure for France: But observing, that he was watched and guarded, he made his escape, and gave the alarm to the other conspirators. They all took to flight, covered themselves with several disguises,

guises, and lay concealed in woods or barns; but were soon discovered and thrown into prison. In their examinations, they contradicted each other and the leaders were obliged to make a full confession of the truth. Fourteen were condemned and executed: Of whom, seven acknowledged the crime on their trial; the rest were convicted by evidence.

CHAP.
XLII.

1586.
The conspirators
seized and
executed.

THE lesser conspirators being dispatched, measures were taken for the trial and conviction of the Queen of Scots; on whose account, and by whose concurrence, all these attempts had been made against the life of the Queen, and the tranquillity of the kingdom. Some of Elizabeth's counsellors were averse to this procedure; and thought that the close confinement of a woman, who was become very sickly, and who would probably put a speedy end to their anxiety by her natural death, might give sufficient security to the government, without attempting a measure of which there scarcely remains any example in history. Leicester advised, that Mary should be secretly dispatched by poison; and he sent a divine to convince Walsingham of the lawfulness of that action: But Walsingham declared his abhorrence of it; and insisted still in conjunction with the majority of the counsellors, for the open trial of the Queen of Scots. The situation of England, and of the English ministers had, indeed, been hitherto not a little dangerous. No successor of the crown was declared; but the heir of blood, to whom the people in general were likely to adhere, was, by education, an enemy to the national religion; was, from multiplied injuries, an enemy to the ministers and principal nobility: And their personal safety, as well as the security of the government, seemed to hang alone on the Queen's life, who was now somewhat advanced in years. No wonder, therefore, that Elizabeth's counsellors knowing themselves to be so obnoxious to the Queen of Scots, endeavoured to push every measure to extremity

CHAP. extremity against her; and were even more anxious
 XLII. than the Queen herself, to prevent her from ever
 mounting the throne of England.

1586.

THO' all England was acquainted with the detection of Babington's conspiracy, every avenue to the Queen of Scots was so strictly guarded, that she remained in utter ignorance of the whole matter; and it was a great surprize to her, when Sir Thomas Gorges, by Elizabeth's orders, informed her that all her accomplices were discovered and arrested. He chose the time for giving her this intelligence, when she was mounted on horseback to go a hunting; and she was not permitted to return to her former place of abode, but was conducted from one gentleman's house to another, till she was lodged in Fotheringay castle in the county of Northampton, which it was determined to make the last stage of her trial and sufferings. Her two secretaries, Nau, a Frenchman, and Curle, a Scot, were immediately arrested: All her papers were seized, and sent up to the council: Above sixty different keys to cyphers were discovered: There were also found many letters from persons beyond sea; and several too from English noblemen, containing expressions of respect and attachment. The Queen took no notice of this last discovery; but the persons themselves, knowing their correspondence to be detected, thought that they had no other method of making atonement for their imprudence, than declaring themselves thenceforth the most inveterate enemies to the Queen of Scots¹.

Resoluti-
 on to try
 the Queen
 of Scots.

It was resolved to try Mary not by the common statutes of treason, but by the act which had passed the former year, with a view to this very event; and the Queen, in terms of that act, appointed a commission, consisting of forty noblemen and privy-counsellors, and empowered them to examine and pass

¹ Camden, p. 518.

sentence on Mary, whom she denominated the late Queen of Scots, and heir to James the fifth of Scotland. The commissioners came to Fotheringay castle, and sent to her Sir Walter Mildmay, Sir Amias Paulet, and Edward Barker, who delivered her a letter from Elizabeth informing her of the commission, and of the approaching trial. Mary received the intelligence without any emotion or astonishment. She said, however, that it seemed strange to her that the Queen should command her, as a subject, to submit to a trial and examination before subjects: That she was an absolute, independant princess, and would yield to nothing which might derogate either from her royal majesty, from the state of sovereign princes, or from the dignity and rank of her son: That, however oppressed by misfortunes and calamities, her spirits were not yet so much broke, as her enemies flattered themselves; nor would she, on any account, be accessary to her own degradation and dishonour: That she was ignorant of the laws and statutes of England; was utterly destitute of council; and could not conceive who were intitled to be called her peers, or could legally sit as judges on her trial: That tho' she had lived in England for many years, she had lived in captivity; and not having received the protection of the laws, she could not, merely by her involuntary residence in the country, be supposed to have subjected herself to their jurisdiction and authority: That notwithstanding the superiority of her rank, she was willing to give an account of her conduct before an English Parliament; but could not view these commissioners in any other light, than as men appointed to justify, by some colour of legal proceeding, her condemnation and execution: And that she warned them to look to their conscience and their character, in trying an innocent person; and to reflect, that these transactions would somewhere be subject to

CHAP. XLII. revision, and that the theatre of the whole world was much wider than the kingdom of England.

1586. IN return, the commissioners sent a new deputation, informing her that her plea, either from her royal dignity or from her imprisonment, could not be admitted; and that they were empowered to proceed against her, even though she should refuse to appear before them. Burleigh, the treasurer, and Bromley, the chancellor, employed much reasoning to make her submit to the trial; but the person whose arguments had the chief influence, was Sir Christopher Hatton, vice-chamberlain. His speech was to this purpose. "You are accused, Madam," said he, "but not condemned, of having conspired the destruction of our Lady and Queen anointed. You say, you are a Queen: But, in such a crime as this, and such a situation as yours, the royal dignity itself, neither by the civil nor canon law, nor by the law of nature or of nations, is exempt from judgment. If you be innocent, you wrong your reputation in avoiding a trial. We have been present at your protestations of innocence; but Queen Elizabeth thinks otherwise; and is heartily sorry for the appearances which lie against you. To examine, therefore, your cause, she has appointed commissioners, honourable persons, prudent and upright men, who are ready to hear you with equity, and even with favour, and will rejoice if you can clear yourself of the imputations which have been thrown upon you. Believe me, Madam, the Queen herself will rejoice, who affirmed to me at my departure, that nothing which ever befel her, had given her so much uneasiness, as that you should be suspected of a concurrence in these criminal enterprizes. Laying aside, therefore, the fruitless claim of privilege from your royal dignity, which can now avail you nothing, trust to the better defence of your innocence, make it

The commissioners prevail on her to submit to the trial.

“ it appear in open trial, and leave not upon your C H A P.
 “ memory that stain of infamy which must attend XLII.
 “ your obstinate silence on this occasion^m.” 1586.

By this artful speech, Mary was persuaded to appear before the court; and thereby gave an appearance of legal procedure to the trial, and prevented those difficulties, which the commissioners must have fallen into, had she persevered in maintaining so specious a plea as that of her sovereign and independant character. Her conduct in this particular must be regarded as the more imprudent, because formerly, when Elizabeth's commissioners pretended not to exercise any jurisdiction over her, and only entered into her cause by her own consent and approbation, she declined justifying herself, when her honour, which ought to have been dearer to her than life, seemed absolutely to require it.

ON her first appearance before the commissioners, Mary either sensible of her imprudence, or still unwilling to degrade herself by submitting to a trial, The trial. renewed her protestation against the authority of her judges: The chancellor answered her by pleading the supreme authority of the English laws over every one who resided in England: And the commissioners accommodated matters, by ordering both her protestation and his answer to be recorded.

THE lawyers of the crown then opened the charge against the Queen of Scots. They proved, by intercepted letters, that she had allowed cardinal Allen and others to treat her as Queen of England; and that she had kept a correspondence with lord Paget and Charles Paget, in a view of engaging the Spaniards to invade the kingdom. Mary seemed not anxious to clear herself from either of these imputations. She only said, that she could not hinder others from using what

^m Camden, p. 523.

CHAP. style they pleased in writing to her; and that it was
 XLII. lawful for her to try every expedient for the recovery
 of her liberty.

1586.

AN intercepted letter of her's to Mendoza was next produced in which she promised to transfer to Philip her right to the kingdom of England, if her son should refuse to be converted to the catholic faith; an event, she said, of which there was no expectation, while he remained in the hands of his Scots subjectsⁿ. Even this part of the charge, she took no pains to deny, or rather she seemed to acknowledge it. She said, that she had no kingdoms to dispose of; yet was it lawful for her to give at her pleasure what was her own, and she was not accountable to any for her actions. She added, that she had formerly rejected that proposal from Spain, but now, since all her hopes in England were gone, she was fully determined not to refuse foreign assistance. There was also produced evidence to prove, that Allen and Parsons were at that very time negotiating by her orders in Rome the conditions of transferring her English crown to the King of Spain, and of disinheriting her heretical son^o.

It is remarkable, that Mary's prejudices against her son were, at this time, carried so far, that she had even entered into a conspiracy against him, had appointed lord Claude Hamilton regent of Scotland, and had instigated her adherents to seize James's per-

ⁿ State Trials, vol. i. p. 138.

^o Camden, p. 525. This evidence was that of Curle, her secretary, whom she allowed to be a very honest man; and who, as well as Nau, had given proofs of his integrity, by keeping so long such important secrets, from whose discovery he could have reaped the greatest profit. Mary, after all, thought that she had so little reason to complain of Curle's evidence, that she took care to have him paid a considerable sum by her testament, which she wrote the day before her death, Goodal, vol. i. p. 413. Neither did she forget Nau, tho' less satisfied with his conduct. Id. *ibid*.

son and deliver him into the hands of the pope or the King of Spain; whence he was never to be delivered but on the condition of his becoming catholic^P.

CHAP.
XLII.
1586.

^P The detail of this conspiracy is to be found in a letter of the Queen of Scots to Charles Paget, her great confident. This letter is dated the 20th of May 1586, and is continued in Dr. Forbes's manuscript collections, at present in the possession of lord Royston. It is a copy attested by Curle, Mary's secretary, and indorsed by lord Burleigh. What proves its authenticity beyond question is that we find in Murden's Collection, p. 516, that Mary actually wrote that very day a letter to Charles Paget: And farther, she mentions, in the manuscript letter, a letter of Charles Paget's of the 10th of April: Now we find by Murden, p. 506. that Charles Paget did actually write her a letter of that date.

This violence of spirit is very consistent with Mary's character. Her maternal affection was too weak to oppose the gratification of her passions, particularly her pride, her ambition, and her bigotry. Her son, having made some fruitless attempts to associate her with him in the title, and having found this scheme impracticable, on account of the prejudices of his protestant subjects, at last desisted from that design, and entered into an alliance with England, without comprehending his mother. She was in such a rage at this undutiful behaviour, as she imagined it, that she wrote to Queen Elizabeth, that she no longer cared what became of him or her in the world; the greatest satisfaction she could have before her death was to see him and all his adherents become a signal example of tyranny, ingratitude and impiety, and undergo the vengeance of God for their wickedness. She would find in Christendom other heirs, and doubted not to put her inheritance in such hands as would retain the firmest hold of it. She cared not, after taking this revenge, what became of her body: The quickest death would then be the most agreeable to her. And she assured her that, if he persevered, she would disown him for her son, would give him her malediction, would disinherit him, as well of his present possessions as of all he could expect by her; abandoning him not only to her subjects to treat him as they had done her, but to all strangers to subdue and conquer him. It was in vain to employ menaces against her: The fear of death or other misfortune would never induce her to make one step or pronounce one syllable beyond what she had determined: She would rather perish with honour, in maintaining the dignity, to which God had raised her, than degrade herself by the least pusillanimity, or act what was unworthy of her station and of her race. Murden, p. 566, 567.

James said to Courcelles, the French ambassador, that he had seen a letter under her own hand, where she threatened to disinherit him, and said that he might betake him to the lordship of Darnley: For that was all he had by his father. *Courcelles' Letter, a MS. of Dr. Campbell's.* There is in Jebb, vol. ii. p. 573, a letter of her's where she throws out the same menace against him.

THE

CHAP.
XLII.
1586.

THE only part of the charge, which Mary positively denied, was her concurrence in the design of assassinating Queen Elizabeth: This article indeed was the most heavy, and the only one, which could fully justify the Queen in proceeding to extremities against her. In order to prove the accusation, there were produced the following evidence: Copies taken in secretary Walsingham's office of the intercepted letters between her and Babington, in which her approbation of the murder was clearly expressed; the evidence of her two secretaries, Nau and Curle, who had sworn without being put to any torture, that she both received these letters from Babington, and that they had wrote the answers by her order; the confession of Babington, that he had wrote the letters and received the answers^a; and the confession of Ballard and Savage, that Babington had showed them these letters of Mary, wrote in the cypher, which had been settled between them.

It is evident, that this seeming complication of evidence resolves itself finally into the testimony of the two secretaries, who alone were acquainted with their mistress's concurrence in Babington's conspiracy, and who knew themselves exposed to all the rigours of imprisonment, torture and death, if they refused to give any evidence, which might be required of them. In the case of an ordinary criminal, this proof, with all its disadvantages, would be esteemed legal, and even satisfactory, if not opposed by some other circumstances, which shake the credit of the witnesses: But on the present trial, where the absolute power of the prosecutor concurred with such important interests and such a strong inclination to have the princess condemned;

We find this scheme of seizing the King of Scots, and delivering him into the hands of the pope or the King of Spain, proposed by Morgan to Mary. See Murden, p. 525.

^a State Trials, vol. i. p. 113.

the

the testimony of two witnesses, even tho' men of CHAP.
 character, ought to be supported by very strong cir- XLII.
 cumstances, in order to remove all suspicion of tyr- 1586.
 anny and injustice. The proof against Mary, it must
 be confessed, is not destitute of this advantage; and
 it is very difficult, if not impossible to account for
 Babington's receiving an answer, wrote in her name,
 and in the cypher concerted between them, without
 allowing, that the matter had been communicated
 to that princess. Such is the light in which this mat-
 ter appears, even after time has discovered every
 thing, which could guide our judgment with regard
 to it: No wonder, therefore, that the Queen of Scots,
 unassisted by council, and confounded by so extraor-
 dinary a trial, found herself incapable of making a
 satisfactory defence before the commissioners. Her
 reply consisted chiefly in her own denial: Whatever
 force may be in that denial was much weakened, by
 her positively affirming, that she never had had any
 correspondence of any kind with Babington; a fact,
 however, of which there remains not the least questi-
 on*. She asserted, that as Nau and Curle had taken
 an oath of secrecy and fidelity to her, their evidence
 against her ought not to be credited. She confessed,
 however, that Nau had been in the service of her uncle,
 the cardinal of Lorraine, and had been recommended

* The volume of State Papers collected by Mr. Murden, prove beyond controversy, that Mary was long in close correspondence with Babington, p. 513, 516, 532, 533. She entertained a like correspondence with Ballard, Morgan, and Charles Paget, and laid a scheme with them for an insurrection, and for the invasion of England by Spain, p. 528, 531. The same papers show, that there had been a discontinuance of Babington's correspondence agreeable to Camden's narration. See State Papers, p. 513, where Morgan recommends it to Queen Mary to renew the correspondence with Babington. The former letters, which passed between that Queen and Babington, seem to have been destroyed by some accident. These circumstances prove, that no weight can be laid on Mary's denial of guilt, and that her correspondence with Babington contained particulars, which could not be avowed.

C H A P.
XLII.

1586.

to her by the King of France, as a man in whom she might safely confide. She also acknowledged Curle to be a very honest man, but simple, and easily imposed on by Nau. If these two men had received any letters, or had wrote any answers, without her knowledge; the imputation, she said, could never lie on her. And she was the more inclined, she added, to entertain this suspicion against them, because Nau had, in other instances, been guilty of a like temerity, and had ventured to transact business in her name, without communicating the matter to her^s.

* There are three suppositions, by which the letter to Babington may be accounted for, without allowing Mary's concurrence in the conspiracy for assassinating Elizabeth. The first is, that which she seems herself to have embraced, that her secretaries had received Babington's letter, and had ventured of themselves to answer it, without communicating the matter to her: But it is utterly improbable, that a princess of that sense and spirit would, in an affair of that importance, be so treated by her servants who lived in the house with her, and who had every moment an opportunity of communicating the secret to her. If the conspiracy failed, they must expect to suffer the severest punishment from the court of England; if it succeeded the lightest punishment, which they could hope for from their own mistress, must be disgrace, on account of their temerity. Not to mention, that Mary's concurrence was in some degree requisite for effectuating the design of her escape: It was proposed to attack her guards, while she was employed in hunting: She must therefore concert the time and place with the conspirators. The second supposition is, that these two secretaries were previously traitors; and being gained by Walsingham, had made such a reply in their mistress's cypher, as might involve her in the guilt of the conspiracy. But these two men had lived long with the Queen of Scots, had been entirely trusted by her, and had never fallen under suspicion either with her or her partizans. Camden tells us, that Curle afterwards claimed a reward from Walsingham on pretence of some promise; but Walsingham told him, that he owed him no reward, and that he had made no discoveries on his examination, which were not known with certainty from other quarters. The third supposition is, that neither the Queen nor the two secretaries, Nau and Curle, ever saw Babington's letter, or made any answer; but that Walsingham, having decyphered the former, forged a reply. But this supposition implies the falshood of the whole story, told by Camden, of Gifford's access to the Queen of Scots's family, and Paulet's refusal to concur in allowing his servants to be bribed. Not to mention, that as Nau's and Curle's evidence must, on this supposition, have been extorted by violence and terror, they would necessa-

THE

THE sole circumstance of her defence, which to us CHAP. XLII.
 may appear to have some force, was her requiring that Nau and Curle should be confronted with her, and 1586.

rily have been engaged, for their own justification, to have told the truth afterwards; especially upon the accession of James. But Camden informs us, that Nau, even after that event, persisted still in his testimony.

We must also consider, that the two last suppositions imply such a monstrous criminal conduct in Walsingham, and consequently in Elizabeth (for the matter could be no secret to her) as exceeds all credibility. If we consider the situation of things and the prejudices of the times, Mary's consent to Babington's conspiracy appears much more natural and probable. She believed Elizabeth to be an usurper and a heretic: She regarded her as a personal and a violent enemy: she knew that schemes of assassinating heretics were very familiar in that age, and generally approved of by the zealous catholics: Her own liberty and sovereignty were connected with the success of this enterprize. And it cannot appear strange, that where men of so much merit as Babington could be engaged, by bigotry alone, in so criminal an enterprize, Mary, who was actuated by the same motive, joined to so many others, should have given her consent to a scheme projected by her friends. We may be previously certain, that, if such a scheme was ever communicated to her, with any probability of success, she would assent to it: And it served the purpose of Walsingham and the English ministry to facilitate the communication of these schemes, as soon as they had got an expedient for intercepting her answer, and detecting the conspiracy. Now Walsingham's knowledge of the matter is a supposition necessary to account for the letter delivered to Babington.

As to the not punishing of Nau and Curle by Elizabeth, it never is the practice to punish lesser criminals, who had given evidence against the principal.

But what ought to induce us to reject these three suppositions, is, that they must, all of them, be considered as bare possibilities; The partizans of Mary can give no reason for preferring one to the other: Not the slightest evidence ever appeared to support any one of them: Neither at that time, nor at any time after, was any reason discovered, by the numerous zealots at home and abroad who had embraced Mary's defence, to lead us to the belief of any of these three suppositions: and even her apologists at present seem not to have fixed on any choice among these supposed possibilities. The positive proof of two credible witnesses, supported by the other very strong circumstances, still remains unimpeached. Babington, who had an extreme interest to have communication with the Queen of Scots, believed he had found a means of correspondence with her, and had received an answer from her: He, as well as the other conspirators, died in that belief: There has not occurred, since that time, the least argument

CHAP.
XLII.

1586.

affirming that they never would to her face persist in their evidence. But that demand, however equitable, was not supported by law in trials of high treason, and was often refused even in other trials where the crown was prosecutor. The clause, contained in an act of the 13th of the Queen, was a novelty; that the species of treason there enumerated must be proved by two witnesses, confronted with the criminal. But Mary was not tried upon that act; and the ministers and crown lawyers of this reign were always sure to refuse every indulgence beyond what the strict letter of the law and the settled practice of the courts of justice required of them. Not to mention that these secretaries were not probably at Fotheringay during the time of the trial, and could not, upon Mary's demand, be produced by the commissioners†.

THERE passed two incidents in this trial, which may be worth observing. A letter between Mary and Babington was read, in which mention was made of the earl of Arundel and his brothers: On hearing their names she broke into a sigh, "Alas," said she, "what to prove they were mistaken: Can there be any reason at present to doubt of the truth of their opinion? Camden, tho' a profest apologist for Mary, is constrained to tell the story in such a manner as evidently supposes her guilt. Such was the impossibility of finding any other consistent account, even by a man of parts, who was a contemporary!

In this light might the question have appeared even during Mary's trial. But what now puts her guilt beyond all controversy is the following passage of her letter to Thomas Morgan, dated the 27th of July 1586. "As to Babington, he hath both kindly and honestly offered himself and all his means to be employed any way I would. Whereupon I hope to have satisfied him by two of my several letters, since I had his; and the rather, for that I opened him the way, whereby I received his with your aforesaid." Murden, p. 533. Babington confessed, that he had offered her to assassinate the Queen: It appears by this, that she had accepted the offer: So that all the suppositions of Walsingham's forgery, or her secretary's temerity or treachery, fall to the ground.

† Queen Elizabeth was willing to have allowed Curle and Nau to be produced in the trial, and writes to that purpose, to Burleigh and Walsingham, in her letter of the 7th of October, in Forbes's MS. collections. She only says, that she thinks it needless, tho' she was willing to agree to it. The not confronting the witnesses was not the result of design, but the practice of the age.

"has

“ has that noble house of the Howards suffered for
 “ my sake!” She affirmed, with regard to the same
 letter, that it was easy to forge the hand-writing and
 cypher of another; she was afraid, that this was too
 familiar a practice with Walsingham, who, she also
 heard, had frequently practised both against her life
 and her son’s. Walsingham, who was one of the
 commissioners, rose up. He protested, that in his
 private capacity, he had never acted any thing a-
 gainst the Queen of Scots: In his public capacity,
 he owned, that his concern for his sovereign’s safety
 had made him very diligent in searching out, by e-
 very expedient, all designs against her sacred per-
 son or her authority. For attaining that end he
 would not only make use of the assistance of Ballard
 or any other conspirator: He would also reward
 them for betraying their companions. But if he
 had tampered in any manner, unworthy of his cha-
 racter and office, why did none of the late criminals
 either at their trial or execution, accuse him of such
 practices? Mary endeavoured to pacify him by
 saying that she spoke from information; and she
 begged him, that he would thenceforth give no more
 credit to such as slandered her, than she would to
 such as accused him. The great character indeed,
 which Sir Francis Walsingham bears for probity and
 honour, should remove from him all suspicion of such
 base arts as forgery and subornation; arts, which e-
 ven the most corrupt ministers in the most corrupt
 times would scruple to employ.

HAVING finished the trial, the commissioners ad-
 journed from Fotheringay, and met in the Star
 chamber at London; where, after taking the oaths
 of Mary’s two secretaries, who, voluntarily, with-
 out hope or reward, vouched the authenticity of
 those letters before produced, they pronounced
 sentence of death upon the Queen of Scots, and
 confirmed it by their seals and subscriptions.
 The same day, a declaration was published by

CHAP.

XLII.

1586.

Sentence

against

Mary.

CHAP. the commissioners and the judges, "that the sentence
 XLII. "did no wise derogate from the title and honour of
 1586. "James, King of Scotland; but that he was in the
 "same place, degree, and right, as if the sentence
 "had never been pronounced".

THE Queen had now brought her affairs with Mary to that situation, which she had long ardently desired; and had found a plausible reason for executing vengeance on a competitor, whom, from the beginning of her reign, she had ever equally dreaded and hated. But she was restrained from gratifying instantly her resentment, by several important considerations. She foresaw the invidious colours in which this example of uncommon jurisdiction would be represented by the numerous partizans of Mary, and the reproach, to which she herself might be exposed with all foreign princes, perhaps with all posterity. The rights of hospitality, of kindred, and of royal majesty, seemed in one signal instance to be all violated; and this sacrifice of generosity to interest, of clemency to revenge, might appear equally unbecoming a sovereign and a woman. Elizabeth, therefore, who was an excellent hypocrite, pretended the utmost reluctance to proceed to the execution of the sentence, affected the most tender sympathy with her prisoner, displayed all her scruples and difficulties, rejected the solicitations of her courtiers and ministers, and affirmed, that, were she not moved by the deepest concern for her people's safety, she would not hesitate a moment in pardoning all the injuries, which she herself had received from the Queen of Scots.

THAT the voice of her people might be more audibly heard in the demand of justice upon Mary, she summoned a new Parliament; and she knew, both from the usual dispositions of that assembly, and from the influence of her ministers over them, that she should not want the most earnest solicitation to consent to

29th October.

Camden, p. 526.

that

that measure, which was so agreeable to her secret CHAP.
inclinations. She did not open this assembly in per- XLII.
son, but appointed for that purpose three commis-
sioners, the chancellor Bromley, the treasurer Bur- 1586.
leigh, and the earl of Derby. The reason assigned
for this measure, was, that the Queen, foreseeing
that the affair of the Queen of Scots would be tried
in Parliament, found her tenderness and delicacy so
much hurt by that melancholy incident, that she had
not the courage to be present while it was under de-
liberation, but withdrew her eyes from what she could
not behold without the utmost reluctance and uneasi-
ness. She was also willing, that, by this unusual cau-
tion, the people should see the danger, to which her
person was hourly exposed; and should thence be
more strongly incited to take vengeance on the cri-
minal, whose restless intrigues and bloody conspiracies
had so long exposed her to the most imminent perils*.

THE Parliament answered the Queen's expecta-
tions: The sentence against Mary was unanimously
ratified by both houses; and an application was a-
greed on to obtain Elizabeth's consent to its publi-
cation and execution^y. She gave them an answer
ambiguous, embarrassed; full of real artifice, and
seeming irresolution. She mentioned the extreme
danger to which her life was continually exposed; she
declared her willingness to die, did she not foresee
the great calamities, which would thence fall upon
the nation; she made professions of the greatest ten-
derness to her people; she displayed the clemency
of her temper, and expressed her violent reluctance
to proceed to extremities against her unhappy kins-
woman; she affirmed, that the late law, by which
that princess was tried, so far from being made to
ensnare her, was only intended to give her warning
beforehand, not to engage in such attempts, as might
expose her to the penalties, with which she was thus

* D'Ewes, p. 375.

^y Ibid. p. 379.

openly menaced; and she begged them to think once again, whether it was possible to find any other expedient besides the death of the Queen of Scots for securing the public tranquillity^z. The Parliament, in obedience to her commands, took the affair again under consideration; but could find no other possible expedient. They reiterated their solicitations, and entreaties, and arguments: They even remonstrated, that mercy to the Queen of Scots was cruelty to them, her subjects and children: And they affirmed, that it were injustice to deny the execution of the law to any individual; much more, to the whole body of the people, now unanimously and earnestly suing for this pledge of her parental care and tenderness. This second address set the pretended doubts and scruples of Elizabeth anew in agitation: She complained of her own unfortunate situation; expressed her uneasiness from their importunity; renewed the professions of affection to her people; and dismissed the committee of Parliament in an uncertainty, what, after all this deliberation, might be her final resolution^z.

^z D'Ewes, p. 402, 403.

^a This Parliament granted the Queen a supply of a subsidy and two fifteenths. They adjourned, and met again after the execution of the Queen of Scots; when there passed some remarkable incidents, which it may be proper not to omit. We shall give them in the words of Sir Simon D'Ewes, p. 410, 411, which are almost wholly transcribed from Townsend's Journal. On Monday the 27th of February, Mr. Cope, first using some speeches touching the necessity of a learned ministry and the amendment of things amiss in the ecclesiastical estate, offered to the house a bill and a book written; the bill containing a petition, that it might be enacted, that all laws now in force touching ecclesiastical government should be void: And that it might be enacted that that book of common prayer now offered, and none other, might be received into the church to be used. The book contained the form of prayer and administration of the sacraments, with divers rights and ceremonies to be used in the church; and he desired that the book might be read. Whereupon Mr. Speaker in effect used this speech: For that her majesty before this time had commanded the house not to meddle with this matter, and that

BUT tho' the Queen affected reluctance to execute the sentence against Mary, she complied with the Parliament's request to publish it; and the proclamation

C H A P.
XLII.
1586.

her majesty had promised to take order in those causes, he doubted not but to the good satisfaction of all her people, he desired that it would please them to spare the reading of it. Notwithstanding the house desired the reading of it. Whereupon Mr. Speaker desired the clerk to read. And the court being ready to read it, Mr. Dalton made a motion against the reading of it; saying, that it was not meet to be read, and it did appoint a new form of administration of the sacraments and ceremonies of the church, to the discredit of the book of common prayer and of the whole state; and thought that this dealing would bring her majesty's indignation against the house, thus to enterprize this dealing with those things which her majesty especially had taken into her own charge and direction. Whereupon Mr. Lewkenor spake, shewing the necessity of preaching and of a learned ministry, and thought it very fit that the petition and book should be read. To this purpose spake Mr. Hurleston and Mr. Bainbrigg; and so, the time being passed, the house broke up, and neither the petition nor book read. This done, her majesty sent to Mr. Speaker, as well for this petition and book as for that other petition and book for the like effect, that was delivered the last session of Parliament, which Mr. Speaker sent to her majesty. On Tuesday the 28th of February, her Majesty sent for Mr. Speaker, by occasion whereof the house did not sit. On Wednesday the first day of March, Mr. Wentworth delivered to Mr. Speaker certain articles, which contained questions touching the liberties of the house, and to some of which he was to answer, and desired they might be read. Mr. Speaker desired him to spare his motion, until her Majesty's pleasure was farther known touching the petition and book lately delivered into the house; but Mr. Wentworth would not be so satisfied, but required his articles might be read. Mr. Wentworth introduced his queries by lamenting, that he as well as many others were deterred from speaking, by their want of knowlege and experience in the liberties of the house; and the queries were as follow: Whether this council were not a place for any member of the same here assembled, freely and without controulment of any person or danger of laws, by bill or speech to utter any of the griefs of this commonwealth whatsoever touching the service of God, the safety of the prince and this noble realm? Whether that great honour may be done unto God, and benefit and service unto the prince and state, without free speech in this council that may be done with it? Whether there be any council which can make, add, or diminish from the laws of the realm but only this council of Parliament? Whether it be not against the orders of this council to make any secret or matter of weight, which is here in hand, known to the prince or any other, concerning the high service of God, prince or state, without the consent of the house? Whether the speaker or any other may interrupt any member of this council in his speech used in this house tending to any of the forenamed services? Whether the speaker may rise when he will, any matter being propounded

seemed

CHAP. seemed to be attended with the unanimous and hearty rejoicings of the people. The lord Buckhurst, and

XLII.
1586.

ed, without consent of the house or not? Whether the Speaker may overrule the house in any matter or cause there in question, or whether he is to be ruled or over-ruled in any matter or not? Whether the prince and state can continue, and stand, and be maintained, without this council of Parliament, not altering the government of the state? At the end of these questions, says Sir Simon D'Ewes, I found set down this short note or memorial ensuing: By which it may be perceived, both what serjeant Puckering, the Speaker, did with the said questions after he had received them, and what became also of this business, viz. "These questions Mr. Puckering pocketed up and shewed Sir Thomas Heneage, who so handled the matter, that Mr. Wentworth went to the Tower, and the questions not at all moved. Mr. Buckler of Essex herein brake his faith in forsaking the matter, &c. and no more was done." After setting down, continues Sir Simon D'Ewes, the said business of Mr. Wentworth in the original journal book, there follows only this short conclusion of the day itself, viz. "This day, Mr. Speaker being sent for to the Queen's majesty, the house departed." On Thursday the second of March, Mr. Cope, Mr. Lewkenor, Mr. Hurlston, and Mr. Bainbrigg were sent for to my lord chancellor and by divers of the privy council, and from thence were sent to the Tower. On Saturday, the fourth day of March, Sir John Higham made a motion to this house, for that divers good and necessary members thereof were taken from them, that it would please them to be humble petitioners to her Majesty for the restitution of them again to the house. To which speeches Mr. Vice-chamberlain answered, that if the gentlemen were committed for matter within the compass of the privilege of this house, then there might be a petition; but if not, then we should give occasion to her Majesty's farther displeasure: And therefore advised to stay until they heard more, which could not be long: And farther, he said, touching the book and the petition, her majesty had, for diverse good causes best known to herself, thought fit to suppress the same, without any farther examination thereof; and yet thought it very unfit for her majesty to give any account of her doings.-----But whatsoever Mr. Vice-chamberlain pretended, it is most probable these members were committed for intermeddling with matters touching the church, which her Majesty had often inhibited, and which had caused so much disputation and so many meetings between the two houses the last Parliament."

This is all we find of the matter in Sir Simon D'Ewes and Townsend; and it appears that those members, who had been committed, were detained in custody till the Queen thought fit to release them. These questions of Mr. Wentworth are curious; because they contain the first faint dawning of the present English constitution; tho' suddenly eclipsed by the arbitrary government of Elizabeth. Wentworth was indeed, by his puritanism, as well as his love of liberty (for these two characters, of such unequal merit, arose and advanced together) the true forerunner of the Hambens, the

Beale,

Beale, clerk to the Council, were sent to the Queen of Scots, and notified to her the sentence pronounced against her, its ratification by Parliament, and the earnest applications made for its execution by that assembly, who thought, that their religion could never, while she was alive, attain a full settlement and security. Mary was no wise dismayed at this intelligence: On the contrary, she joyfully laid hold of the last circumstance mentioned to her; and insisted, that since her death was demanded by the protestants for the establishment of their faith, she was really a martyr to her religion, and was intitled to all the merits, attending that glorious character. She added, that the English had often imbrued their hands in the blood of their sovereigns: No wonder, they exercised cruelty towards her, who derived her descent from these monarchs^b. Paulet her keeper, received orders to take down her canopy, and to serve her no longer with that respect, due to sovereign princes. He told her, that she was now to be considered as a dead person; and incapable of any dignity^c. This insult she received without any seeming emotion. She only replied, that she received her royal character from the hands of the Almighty, and no earthly power was ever able to bereave her of it.

THE Queen of Scots wrote her last letter to Elizabeth; full of dignity, without departing from that spirit of meekness and of charity, which appeared suitable to this concluding scene of her unfortunate life. She preferred no petition for averting the fatal sentence: On the contrary, she expressed her gratitude to

Pyms, and the Hollises, who, in the next age, with less courage, because with less danger, rendered their principles so triumphant. I shall only ask, whether it be not sufficiently clear from all these transactions, that in the two succeeding reigns it was the people who encroached upon the sovereign, not the sovereign, who attempted, as is pretended, to usurp upon the people.

^b Camden, p. 528.

^c Jebb, vol. ii. p. 293.

heaven for thus bringing to a speedy period her sad and lamentable pilgrimage. She requested some favours of Elizabeth, and intreated her, that she might be beholden for them to her own goodness alone, without making applications to those ministers, who had discovered such an extreme antipathy to her person and her religion. She desired, that, after her enemies should be satiated with her innocent blood, her body, which, it was determined, should never enjoy rest, while her soul was united to it, might be consigned to her servants, and be conveyed by them into France, there to repose in a catholic land, with the sacred relicts of her mother. In Scotland, she said, the sepulchres of her ancestors were violated, and the churches either demolished or prophaned; and in England, where she might be interred among the antient kings, her own and Elizabeth's progenitors, she could entertain no hopes of being accompanied to the grave with those rites and ceremonies, which her religion required. She desired that no one might have the power of inflicting a private death upon her, without Elizabeth's knowledge; but that her execution should be public, and attended by her antient servants, who might bear testimony of her perseverance in the faith, and of her submission to the will of heaven. She begged, that these servants might afterwards be allowed to depart whither they pleased, and might enjoy those legacies which she should bequeath them. And she conjured her to grant these favours, by their near kindred, by the soul and memory of Henry the seventh, the common ancestor of both, and by the royal dignity of which they equally participated.^a Elizabeth made no answer to this letter; being unwilling to give Mary a refusal in her present situation, and foreseeing inconveniencies from granting some of her requests.

^a Camden, p. 529. Jebb, vol. ii. p. 295.

1586.

WHILE the Queen of Scots thus prepared herself to meet her fate, great efforts were made by foreign powers with Elizabeth to prevent the execution of the sentence, pronounced against her. Besides employing L'Aubespine, the French resident at London, a man devoted to the house of Guise, Henry sent over Bellievre, with a professed intention of interceding for the life of Mary. The duke of Guise and the league, at that time, threatened very nearly the King's authority; and Elizabeth knew, that, tho' that monarch might, from decency and policy, think himself obliged to interpose publicly in behalf of the Queen of Scots, he could not secretly be much displeased with the death of a princess, on whose fortune and elevation his mortal enemies had always founded so many daring and ambitious projects. It is even pretended, that Bellievre had orders, after making public and vehement remonstrances against the execution of Mary, to exhort privately the Queen, in his master's name, not to defer an act of justice, so necessary for their common interests^e. But whether the French King's intercession was sincere or not, it had no weight with the Queen; and she still persisted in her former resolution.

THE interposition of the young King of Scots, tho' it was not able to change Elizabeth's determination, seemed, on every account, to merit more attention. So soon as James heard of the trial and condemnation of his mother, he sent Sir William Keith, gentleman of his bed-chamber, to London; and wrote a letter to the Queen, in which he remonstrated, in very severe terms, against the indignity of the procedure. He said, that he was astonished to hear of the presumption of English noblemen and counsellors, who had dared to sit in judgment and pass sentence upon a Queen of Scotland, descended from the royal

Interposi-
on of King
James.^e Camden, p. 494.^f Du Maurier.

blood of England; but was still more astonished to hear, that thoughts were seriously entertained of putting that sentence in execution: That he entreated Elizabeth to reflect on the dishonour, which she would draw on her name by embruing her hands in the blood of her near kinswoman, a person of the same royal dignity and of the same sex with herself: That in this unparalleled attempt, she offered an affront to all diadems, and even to her own; and by reducing sovereigns to a level with other men, taught the people to neglect all duty towards those whom Providence had appointed to rule over them: That for his part, he must esteem the injury and insult so enormous, as to be incapable of all atonement; nor was it possible for him thenceforth to remain on any terms of correspondence with a person, who, without any pretence of legal authority, had deliberately inflicted an ignominious death upon his parent: And that even if the sentiments of nature and duty did not inspire him with this purpose of vengeance, his own honour required it of him; nor could he ever acquit himself in the eyes of the world, if he did not use every effort, and endure every hazard, to revenge so great an indignity[§]. Soon after, James sent the master of Gray and Sir Robert Melvil to enforce the remonstrances of Keith; and to employ with the Queen every expedient of argument and menaces. Elizabeth was at first offended with the sharpness of these applications; and she replied in a like strain to the Scots ambassadors. When she afterwards reflected, that this earnestness was no more than what duty required of James, she was pacified; but retained still her resolution of proceeding to extremities against Mary^h. It is believed, that the master of Gray, gained by the enemies of that princess, gave secretly his advice not to spare

§ Spotswood, p. 351.

^h Ibid. p. 353.

her, and undertook, in all events, to pacify his master. The Queen also, from many circumstances, was induced to pay small attention to the applications of James, and to disregard all the efforts, which he could employ in behalf of his mother. She was well acquainted with his character and interests, the factions which prevailed among his people, and the inveterate hatred, which the zealous protestants, particularly the preachers, bore to the Queen of Scots. The present incidents put these dispositions of the clergy in a full light. James, observing the fixed purpose of Elizabeth, ordered prayers to be offered up for his mother in all the churches; and knowing the captious humour of the ecclesiastics, he took care that the form of the petition should be most cautious, as well as humane and charitable: "That it might please God to illuminate Mary with the light of his truth, and save her from the apparent danger with which she was threatned." But excepting the King's own chaplains, and one clergyman more, all the preachers refused to pollute their churches by prayers for a papist, and would not so much as prefer a petition for her conversion. James, unwilling or unable to punish this disobedience, and desirous of giving the preachers an opportunity of amending their fault, appointed a new day when prayers should be said for his mother; and that he might at least secure himself from any insult in his own presence, he desired the archbishop of St. Andrews to preach before him. In order to disappoint this purpose, the clergy instigated one Couper, a young man, who had not yet received holy orders, to take possession of the pulpit early in the morning, and to exclude the prelate. When the King came to church, and saw the pulpit occupied by Couper, he called to him from his seat, and told him, that the place was destined for another; yet since he was there, if he

CHAP.

XLII.

1586.

CHAP. he would obey the charge given, and remember the
 XLII. Queen in his prayers, he might proceed to divine
 1586. service. The preacher replied, that he would do
 as the spirit of God should direct him. This answer, sufficiently instructed James in his purpose; and he commanded him to leave the pulpit. As Couper seemed not disposed to obey, the captain of the guard went to pull him from his place; upon which the young man cried aloud, that this day would be a witness against the King in the great day of the Lord; and he denounced a woe upon the inhabitants of Edinburgh for permitting him to be treated in that manner. The audience at first appeared desirous to take part with him; but the sermon of the prelate brought them over to a more dutiful and more humane disposition.

Reasons
 for the
 execution
 of Mary.

ELIZABETH, when solicited, either by James or by foreign princes, to pardon the Queen of Scots, seemed always determined to proceed to extremities against her: But when her ministers urged her to interpose no more delays in the execution, her scruples and her hesitation returned; her humanity could not allow her to embrace such violent and sanguinary measures; and she was touched with compassion for the misfortunes, and with respect for the dignity, of the unhappy prisoner. The courtiers, sensible that they could do nothing more acceptable to her, than to employ persuasion on this head, failed not to enforce every motive for the punishment of Mary, and to combat all the objections urged against that act of justice. They said, that the treatment of that princess in England had been, on her first reception, such as sound reason and policy required; and if she had been governed by principles of equity, she would not have refused willingly to acquiesce in it: That the obvious

inconveniencies, either of allowing her to retire into France, or of restoring her by force to her throne, in opposition to the protestants, and the English party in Scotland, had obliged the Queen to detain her in England, till time should offer some opportunity of serving her, without danger to the kingdom, or to the protestant religion: That her usage there had been such as became her rank; her own servants, in considerable numbers, had been permitted to attend her; exercise had been allowed her for her health, and all access of company for amusement; and these indulgencies would in time, have been carried farther, if by her subsequent conduct she had appeared worthy of them: That after she had instigated the rebellion of Northumberland, the conspiracy of Norfolk, the bull of excommunication of pope Pius, an invasion from Flanders; after she had seduced the Queen's friends, and incited every enemy, foreign or domestic, against her; it became necessary to treat her as a most dangerous rival, and to render her confinement more strict and rigorous: That the Queen, notwithstanding these repeated provocations, had, in her favour, rejected the importunity of her Parliaments, and the advice of her sagest ministers; and was still, in hopes of her amendment, determined to delay coming to the last extremity against her: That Mary, even in this forlorn condition, retained so high and unconquerable a spirit, that she acted as competitor to the crown, and allowed her partizans every where, and in their very letters, addressed to herself, to treat her as Queen of England: That she had carried her animosity so far as to encourage the atrocious design of assassinating the Queen; and this crime was unquestionably proved upon her, by her own letters, by the evidence of her secretaries, and by the dying confession

CHAP.
XLII.
1586.

* Digges, p. 276. Strype, vol. ii. p. 48, 135, 136, 139.
of

CHAP. of her accomplices: That she was but a titular
 XLII. Queen, and at present possessed no where any right of
 1586. sovereignty; much less in England, where every one
 was subject to the laws, and to Elizabeth, the only true
 sovereign: That even allowing her to be still the
 Queen's equal in rank and dignity, self-defence was
 permitted by a law of nature, which could never be
 abrogated; and every one, still more a Queen, had
 sufficient jurisdiction over an enemy, who by open
 violence, and still more, who by secret treachery
 threatened the utmost danger against her life: That
 the general combinaton of the catholics to exterminate
 the protestants, was no longer a secret; and as
 the sole resource of the latter persecuted sect lay in
 Elizabeth, so the chief hope which the former entertained
 of final success, consisted in the person, and
 in the title of the Queen of Scots: That this very
 circumstance brought matters to extremity between
 these princesses, and rendering the life of the one
 the death of the other, pointed out to Elizabeth the
 path, which either regard to self preservation, or to
 the happiness of her people, should direct her to follow:
 And that necessity, more powerful than policy, thus
 demanded of the Queen, that resolution which equity
 would authorize, and which duty prescribed¹.

1587. WHEN Elizabeth thought that as many importunities
 had been used, and as much delay interposed, as decency
 required, she at last determined to carry the sentence
 into execution: But even in this last resolution she
 could not proceed without displaying a new scene of
 duplicity and artifice. In order to alarm the vulgar,
 rumours were previously dispersed, that the Spanish
 fleet was arrived in Milfold Haven; that the Scots
 had made an irruption into England; that the duke of
 Guise was landed in Suffex with a strong army; that
 the Queen of Scots was escaped from prison,

¹ Camden, p. 533.

and had raised an army; that the northern counties had begun an insurrection; that there was a new conspiracy on foot to assassinate the Queen, and set the city of London on fire; nay, that the Queen was actually assassinated^m. A criminal attempt of this nature was even imputed to L'Aubespine, the French ambassador; and that minister was obliged to leave the kingdom. The Queen, affecting to be in great terror and perplexity, was observed to sit much alone, pensive and silent, and sometimes to mutter to herself half sentences, importing the difficulty and distress to which she was reducedⁿ. She at last called Davison, a man of parts, but easy to be imposed on, and who had lately, for that very reason, been made secretary; and she ordered him, to draw out secretly a warrant for the execution of the Queen of Scots; which, she afterwards said, she intended to keep by her, in case any attempt should be made for the delivery of that princess. She signed the warrant; and then commanded Davison to carry it to the chancellor, in order to have the seal affixed to it. Next day she sent Killigrew to Davison, enjoining him to forbear some time executing her former orders; and when Davison came and told her, that the warrant had already passed the seals, she seemed to be somewhat moved, and blamed him for his precipitation. Davison, being in some perplexity, acquainted the council with this whole transaction; and they endeavoured to persuade him to send off Beale, clerk of the council, with the warrant: If the Queen should be displeased, they promised to justify his conduct, and to take on themselves the whole blame of this measure.

^m Camden, p. 533:

ⁿ Ibid. p. 534.

° It appears by some letters published by Strype, vol. iii. book ii. c. 1. that Elizabeth had not expressly communicated her intention to any of her ministers, not even to Burleigh: They were such experienced courtiers, that they knew they could not gratify her more than by serving her without waiting till she desired them.

CHAP. XLII. The secretary, not perceiving their intention, complied with the advice, and the warrant was dispatched to the earls of Shrewsbury and Kent, and some others, ordering them to see the sentence executed upon the Queen of Scots.

7th Feb. The execution. THE two earls came to Fotheringay; and being introduced to Mary, informed her of their commission, and told her to prepare for death next morning at eight o'clock. She seemed not terrified, tho' somewhat surprized, with the intelligence. She said, with a chearful, and even a smiling countenance, that she did not think the Queen, her sister, would have consented to her death, or have executed the sentence against a person who was not subject to the laws and jurisdiction of England. "But as such is her will," said she, "death, which puts an end to all my miseries, shall be to me most welcome; nor can I esteem that soul worthy the felicities of heaven, which cannot support the body under the horrors of the last passage to these blissful mansions." She then requested the two noblemen, that they would permit some of her servants, and particularly her confessor, to attend her: But they told her, that compliance with this last demand was contrary to their conscience, and that Dr. Fletcher, dean of Peterborow, a man of great learning, should be present, to instruct her in the principles of true religion. Her refusal to have any conference with this divine inflamed the earl of Kent's zeal; and he bluntly told her, that her death would be the life of their religion; as, on the contrary, her life would have been the death of it. Mention being made of Babington, she constantly denied his conspiracy to have been at all known to her; and the revenge of her wrong, she resigned into the hands of the Almighty.

^p Camden, p. 534. Jebb, vol. ii. p. 301. MS. in the Advocate's library, p. 2. from the Cott. Lib. Calig. c. 9.

^a Jebb, vol. ii. p. 302.

WHEN the earls had left her she ordered supper to be hastened, that she might have the more leisure to finish the few affairs which remained to her in this world, and to prepare for her passage to another. It was necessary for her, she said, to take some sustenance, lest a failure of her bodily strength should depress her spirits on the morrow, and lest her behaviour should thereby betray a weakness unworthy of herself^r. She supped sparingly, as her manner usually was; and her wonted cheerfulness did not even desert her on this occasion. She comforted her servants under the affliction which overwhelmed them, and which was too powerful for them to conceal from her. Turning to Burgoin, her physician, she asked him, whether he did not remark the great and invincible force of truth. "They pretend," said she, "that I must die, because I conspired against the Queen's life: But the earl of Kent avowed, that there was no other cause of my death, but the apprehensions, which, if I should live, they entertain for their religion. My constancy in the faith is my real crime: The rest is only a colour invented by interested and designing men." Towards the end of supper, she called in all her servants, and drank to them: They pledged her, in order, on their knees; and craved her pardon for any past neglect of their duty: She deigned, in return, to ask their pardon for her offences towards them; and a plentiful effusion of tears attended this last solemn farewell, and exchange of mutual forgiveness^s.

HER care of her servants was the sole remaining affair which employed her concern in this world. She perused her will, in which she had provided for them by legacies: She ordered the inventory of her goods, cloaths, and jewels to be brought her; and

^r Jebb, p. 489.
den, p. 534.

^s Ibid. vol. II. p. 302, 626. Cam-

she wrote down the names of those to whom she bequeathed each particular: To some she distributed money with her own hands; and she adapted the recompence to their different degrees of rank and merit. She wrote also letters of recommendation for her servants to the French King, and to her cousin the duke of Guise, whom she made the chief executor of her testament. At her wonted time she went to bed, slept some hours; and then rising, spent the rest of the night in prayer. Having foreseen the difficulty of exercising the rites of her religion, she had had the precaution to obtain a consecrated hoste from the hands of Pope Pius, and she had reserved the use of it for this last period of her life. By this expedient she supplied, as much as she could, the want of a priest and confessor, who was refused her^t.

TOWARDS the morning she dressed herself in a rich habit of silk and velvet, the only one which she had reserved to herself. She told her maids, that she would willingly have left them this dress rather than the plain garb which she wore the day before: But it was necessary for her to appear at the ensuing solemnity in a decent habit.

THOMAS Andrews, sheriff of the county, entered the room, and informed her, that the hour was come, and that he must attend her to the place of execution. She replied, that she was ready; and bidding adieu to her servants, she leaned on two of Sir Amias Paulet's guards, because of an infirmity in her limbs; and she followed the sheriff with a serene and composed aspect. In passing thro' a hall adjoining to her chamber, she was met by the earls of Shrewsbury and Kent, Sir Amias Paulet, Sir Drue Drury, and many other gentlemen of distinction. Here she also found Sir Andrew Melvil, her steward, who flung himself

on his knees before her; and, wringing his hands, CHAP.
cried aloud: "Ah! madam! unhappy me! What XLII.

"man was ever before the messenger of such hea-
"vy tidings as I must carry, when I shall return to
"my native country, and shall report, that I saw
"my gracious Queen and Mistress beheaded in Eng-
"land?" his tears prevented further speech; and
Mary too felt herself moved, more from sympathy
than affliction. "Cease, my good servant," said she,
"cease to lament: Thou hast cause rather to rejoice
"than to mourn: For now shalt thou see the trou-
"bles of Mary Stuart receive their long expected
"period and completion." "Know," continued she,
"good servant, that all the world at best is vanity,
"and subject still to more sorrow than a whole
"ocean of tears is able to bewail. But I pray
"thee, carry this message from me, that I die a
"true woman to my religion, and unalterable in
"my affections to Scotland and to France. Hea-
"ven forgive them, that have long desired my
"end, and have thirsted for my blood as the hart
"panteth after the water brooks." "O God," ad-
ded she, "thou that art the author of truth and
"truth itself, thou knowest the inmost recesses
"of my heart: Thou knowest, that I was ever
"desirous, to preserve an entire union between
"Scotland and England, and to obviate the source
"of all these fatal discords. But recommend me,
"Melvil, to my son, and tell him, that, notwith-
"standing all my distresses, I have done nothing
"prejudicial to the state and kingdom of Scot-
"land." After these words, reclining herself, with
weeping eyes, and face bedewed with tears, she
kissed him. "And so," said she, "good Melvil;
"farewell: Once again, farewell, good Melvil;
"and grant the assistance of thy prayers to thy
"Queen and mistress."

1587.

CHAP.

XLII.

1587.

SHE then turned to the noblemen who attended her, and made a petition in behalf of her servants, that they might be well treated, that they might be allowed to enjoy the presents which she had made them, and be sent safely into their own country. Having received a favourable answer, she moved another request, that they might be permitted to attend her at her death: In order, said she, that their eyes may behold, and their hearts bear witness, how patiently their Queen and mistress can bear her execution, and how constantly she perseveres in her attachments to her religion. The earl of Kent opposed this desire, and told her, that they would be apt, by their speeches and cries, both to disturb herself and the spectators: He was also apprehensive, lest they should practise some superstition, unmeet for him to suffer; such as dipping their handkerchiefs in her blood: For that was the instance which he made use of. "My lord," said the Queen of Scots, "I will give my word (altho' it be but dead) that they shall not incur any blame in any of the actions which you have named. But alas! poor souls! it would be a great consolation to them to bid their mistress, farewell. And I hope," added she, "that your mistress, being a maiden Queen, would vouchsafe, in regard of womanhood, that I should have some of my own people about me at my death. I know, that her majesty hath not given you any such strict command, but that you might grant me a request of far greater courtesy, even tho' I were a woman of much inferior rank to that which I bear." Finding that the earl of Kent persisted still in his refusal, her mind, which had fortified itself against the terrors of death, was affected by this circumstance of indignity, for which she was not prepared. "I am cousin to your Queen," cried she, "and descended from the blood-royal of Henry the seventh, and a married Queen of France, and an anointed Queen of Scotland." The commissioners perceiving how invidious

invidious their obstinacy would appear, conferred a CHAP.
XLII.
little together, and agreed, that she might carry a
few of her servants along with her. She made
choice of four men, and two maid-servants, for that
purpose. 1587.

SHE then passed into another hall, where was erected the scaffold, covered with black; and she saw, with an undismay'd countenance, the two executioners, and all the preparations of death. The room was crowded with spectators, and no one was so steeled against all sentiments of humanity, as not to be moved, when he reflected on her royal dignity, considered the surprising train of her misfortunes, beheld her mild but inflexible constancy, recalled her amiable accomplishments, or surveyed her beauties, which, tho' faded by years, and yet more by her afflictions, still discovered themselves in this fatal moment. Here the warrant for her execution was read to her; and during this ceremony she was silent, but shewed, in her behaviour, an indifference and unconcern, as if the business had no wise regarded her. Before the executioners performed their office, the dean of Peterborow stepped forth; and tho' the Queen frequently told him, that he needed not concern himself about her, that she was settled in the antient catholic and Roman religion, and that she meant to lay down her life in defence of that faith; he still thought it his duty to persist in his lectures and exhortations, and to endeavour her conversion. The terms, which he employed, were, under colour of pious instructions, very cruel insults on her unfortunate situation; and, besides their own absurdity, may be regarded as the most mortifying indignities, to which she was ever yet exposed. He told her, that the Queen of England had in this moment shewn a tender care of her; and notwithstanding the punishment justly to be inflicted on her, for her manifold trespasses, was determined to use every expedient for saving her soul from that destruction
with

CHAP.
XLII.

1587.

with which it was so nearly threatened: That she was now standing upon the brink of eternity, and had no other means of escaping endless perdition, but by repenting her of her former wickedness, by justifying the sentence pronounced against her, by acknowledging the Queen's favours, and by exerting a true and lively faith in Christ Jesus: That the scriptures were the only rule of doctrine, the merits of Christ the only means of salvation; and, if she trusted in the inventions or devices of men, she must expect in a moment to fall into utter darkness, into a place where shall be weeping, howling, and gnashing of teeth: That the hand of death was upon her, the ax was laid to the root of the tree, the throne of the great judge of heaven was erected, the book of her life was spread wide, and the particular sentence and judgment was ready to be pronounced upon her: And that it was now, during this important moment, in her choice, either to rise to the resurrection of life, and hear that joyful salutation *Come ye blessed of my Father*, or to share the resurrection of condemnation, replete with sorrow and grief; and to suffer that dreadful denunciation, *Go, ye cursed, into everlasting fire* *.

DURING this discourse the Queen could not forbear sometimes betraying her impatience, by interrupting the preacher; and the dean, finding that he had profited nothing by his lecture, at last bid her change her opinion, repent her of her former wickedness, and settle her faith upon this ground, that only in Christ Jesus could she hope to be saved. She answered, again and again, with great earnestness: "Trouble not yourself any more about the matter: For I was born in this religion, I have lived in this religion, and in this religion I am resolved to die." Even the two earls perceived, that it was fruitless to harass her any further with theological disputes; and they order-

* MS. p. 8. 9. 10. 11. Strype, vol. iii. p. 385.

ed the dean to desist from his unseasonable exhorta-
 tions, and to pray for her conversion. During the
 dean's prayer, she employed herself in private devotion
 from the office of the Virgin; and after he had finish-
 ed, she pronounced aloud some petitions in English,
 for the afflicted church, for an end of her own trou-
 bles, for her son, and for Queen Elizabeth; and pray-
 ed God, that that princess might long prosper, and
 be employed in his service. The earl of Kent ob-
 serving, that in her devotions she made frequent
 use of the crucifix, could not forbear reproving
 her, for her attachment to that popish trumpery,
 as he termed it; and he exhorted her to have
 Christ in her heart, not in her hand^y. She re-
 plied with presence of mind, that it was difficult
 to hold such an object in her hand, without
 feeling her heart touched with some compuncti-
 on^z.

CHAP.
 XLII.

1587.

SHE now began, with the aid of her two women,
 to disrobe herself; and the executioner also lent his
 hand, to assist them. She smiled, and said, that she
 was not accustomed to undress herself before so large
 a company, nor to be served by such valets. Her
 servants, seeing her in this condition, ready to lay her
 head upon the block, burst into tears and lamentati-
 ons: She turned about to them; put her finger upon
 her lips, as a sign of imposing silence upon them^a;
 and having given them her blessing, desired them to
 pray for her. One of her maids, whom she had ap-
 pointed for that purpose, covered her eyes with a
 handkerchief; she laid herself down, without any sign
 of fear or trepidation; and her head was severed from
 her body at two strokes by the executioner. He in-
 stantly held it up to the spectators, streaming with
 blood and agitated with the convulsions of death:

^y MS. p. 15. Jebb, vol. ii. p. 307, 491, 637.

^z Jebb. *ibid.*

^a Jebb, p. 307, 492.

CHAP. The dean of Peterborow alone exclaimed, "So
 XLII. "perish all Queen Elizabeth's enemies": The earl
 of Kent alone reply'd "Amen": The attention
 1587. of all the other spectators was fixed on the melancholy Scene before them; and zeal and flattery alike gave place to present pity and admiration of the expiring Princess.

Mary's
 character.

THUS died, in the forty fifth year of her age, and the nineteenth of her captivity in England, Mary Queen of Scots; a princess of great accomplishments both of body and mind, natural as well as acquired, but unfortunate in her life, and during one period, very unhappy in her conduct. The beauties of her person, and graces of her air, combined to make her the most amiable of women; and the charms of her address and conversation aided the impression which her lovely figure made on the hearts of all beholders. Ambitious and active in her temper, yet inclined to cheerfulness and society; of a lofty spirit, constant and even vehement in her purpose; yet polite, and gentle, and affable in her demeanor; she seemed to partake only so much of the male virtues as to render her estimable, without relinquishing those soft graces which compose the proper ornaments of her sex. In order to form a just idea of her character, we must set aside one part of her conduct, while she abandoned herself to the guidance of a profligate man; and must consider these faults, whether we admit them to be imprudences or crimes, as the result of an inexplicable, tho' not uncommon inconstancy in the human mind, of the frailty of our nature, of the violence of passion, and of the influence which situations, and sometimes momentary incidents, have on persons, whose principles are not thoroughly confirmed by experience and reflection. Enraged by the ungrateful conduct of her husband, seduced by the treacherous councils of one in whom she reposed confidence,

confidence, transported by the violence of her own temper, which never lay sufficiently under the guidance of discretion; she was betrayed into actions, which may, with some difficulty, be accounted for, but which admit of no apology, nor even of alleviation. An enumeration of her qualities might carry the appearance of a panegyric; an account of her conduct must, in some parts, wear the aspect of a severe satire and invective.

CHAP.
XLII.
1587.

HER numerous misfortunes, the solitude of her long and tedious captivity, and the persecutions to which she had been exposed on account of her religion, had wrought her up to a degree of bigotry during her latter years; and such was the prevalent spirit and principles of that age, that it is the less wonder, if her zeal, her resentment, and her interest uniting, induced her to give consent to a design, which conspirators, actuated only by the first of these motives, had formed against the life of Elizabeth.

WHEN the Queen heard of Mary's execution, she affected the utmost surprize and indignation. Her countenance changed, her speech faltered and failed her, and for a long time, her sorrow was so deep that she could not express it, but stood fixed, like a statue, in silence and mute astonishment. After her grief was able to find vent, it burst out in loud wailings and lamentations; she put herself into deep mourning for this deplorable event; and she was seen perpetually bathed in tears, and surrounded only by her maids and women. None of her ministers or counsellors dared to approach her; or if any assumed such temerity, she chaced them from her, with the most violent expressions of rage and resentment: They had all of them been guilty of an unpardonable crime, in putting to death her dear sister and kinswoman, contrary to her fix-

The
Queen's
affected
sorrow.

CHAP.
XLII.

1587.

ed purpose and intention^b, of which they were sufficiently apprized and acquainted.

No sooner was her sorrow so much abated as to leave room for reflection, than she wrote a letter of apology to the King of Scots, and sent it by Sir Robert Cary, son to lord Hunfdon. She there told him, that she wished he knew, but not felt, the unutterable grief of mind, she experienced, on account of that lamentable accident, which, without her knowledge, much less concurrence, had happened in England: That as her pen trembled, when she attempted to write it, she found herself obliged to commit the relation of it to the messenger, her kinsman; who would likewise inform his majesty of every circumstance, which attended this dismal and unlooked for misfortune: That she appealed to the Supreme Judge of heaven and earth for her innocence; and was also so happy, amidst her other afflictions, as to find, that many persons in her court could bear witness to her veracity in this protestation: That she abhorred hypocrisy and dissimulation, deemed nothing more worthy of a prince than a sincere and open conduct, and could never surely be esteemed so base and poor-spirited, as that, if she had really given orders for this fatal execution, she could, on any consideration, be induced to deny them: That tho' she was sensible of the justice of the sentence, she determined from clemency never to carry it into execution; and could not but resent the temerity of those, who on this occasion had disappointed her intention: And that as no one loved him more dearly than herself, or bore a more anxious concern for his welfare; she hoped, that he would consider every one as his enemy, who endeavoured, on account of the present incident, to excite any animosity between them^c.

^b Camden, p. 535. Strype, vol. iii. Appendix, p. 145. Jebb, vol. ii. p. 608.

^c Camden, p. 536. Spotswood, p. 358.

1587.

IN order the better to appease James, she committed Davison to prison, and ordered him to be tried in the Star-Chamber for his misdemeanour. The secretary was confounded; and being sensible of the danger, which must attend his entering into a contest with the Queen, he expressed penitence for his error, and submitted very patiently to be railed at by those very counsellors, whose persuasion had induced him to incur the guilt, and who had promised to countenance and protect him. He was condemned to imprisonment during the Queen's pleasure, and to pay a fine of ten thousand pounds. He remained a long time in custody; and the fine, tho' it reduced him to want and beggary, was rigorously levied upon him. All the favour, which he could obtain from the Queen, was the sending him small supplies from time to time, to keep him from perishing in necessity^d. He privately wrote an apology to his friend Walsingham, which contains many curious particulars: The French and Scots ambassadors, he said, had been remonstrating with the Queen in Mary's behalf; and immediately after their departure, she commanded him, of her own accord, to deliver her the warrant for the execution of that princess. She signed it readily and ordered it to be sealed with the great seal of England. She appeared in such good humour on the occasion, that she said to him in a jocular manner, "Go tell all this to Walsingham, who is now sick. Tho' I fear he will die for sorrow, when he hears it." She added, that, tho' she had so long delayed the execution, lest she should seem to be actuated by malice or cruelty, she was all along sensible of the necessity of it." In the same conversation, she blamed Drury and Paulet, that they had not before eased her of this trouble; and she expressed her desire that Walsingham would bring them to a

^d Camden, p. 538.

compliance in that particular. She was so bent on this purpose that, some time after, she asked Davison, whether any letter had come from Paulet with regard to the service expected of him. Davison showed her Paulet's letter; in which that gentleman flatly refused to act any thing inconsistent with the principles of honour and justice. The Queen fell into a passion, and accused Paulet, as well as Drury, of perjury, that having taken the oath of association, in which they had bound themselves to avenge her wrongs, they had yet refused to lend their hand on this occasion. "But others," she said, "will be found less scrupulous." Davison adds, that nothing but the consent and exhortations of the whole council could have engaged him to send off the warrant. He was well aware of his danger; and remembered, that the Queen, after having ordered the execution of the duke of Norfolk, had endeavoured, in like manner, to throw the whole blame and odium of that action upon lord Burleigh*.

ELIZABETH's dissimulation was so gross, that it could deceive no body who was not previously resolved to be blinded; but as James's concern for his mother was certainly more sincere and cordial, he discovered the highest resentment, and refused to admit Cary into his presence. He recalled his ambassadors from England; and seemed to breathe nothing but war and vengeance. The States of Scotland, being assembled, entered into the quarrel, and professed, that they were ready to spend their lives and fortunes in revenge of his mother's death, and in defence of his title to the crown of England. Many of his nobility instigated him to take arms: Lord Sinclair, when the courtiers appeared in deep mourning, presented himself to the King arrayed in compleat armour, and said, that that was the pro-

* Camden, p. 538. Strype, vol. iii. p. 375, 376. MS. in the Advocate's library, A. 3. 28. p. 17. from the Cott. Lib. Calig. c. 9. Biogr. Brit. p. 1625, 1627.

per mourning for the Queen. The catholics took the opportunity of exhorting James to ally himself with the King of Spain, to lay immediate claim to the crown of England, and to prevent the danger, which, from his mother's example, he might conclude, would certainly, if Elizabeth's power prevailed, overwhelm his person and his kingdom. The Queen was sensible of the danger attending these councils; and, after allowing James some decent interval to vent his grief and anger, she employed her emissaries to pacify him, and to set before him every motive of hope or fear, which might induce him to live in peace and friendship with her.

C H A P.
XLII.

1587.

WALSINGHAM wrote to lord Thirlstone, the Scots secretary of state, a very judicious letter to the same purpose. He said, that he was much surprized to hear of the violent resolutions taken in Scotland, and of the passion discovered by a prince of so much judgment and temper as James: That a war, founded merely on the principle of revenge, and that too on account of an act of Justice, which necessity had extorted, would for ever be exposed to blame, and could not be excused by any principles of equity or reason: That if these views were deemed less momentous among princes, policy and interest ought certainly to be attended to; and these motives did still more evidently oppose all thoughts of a rupture with England, and all revival of exploded claims and pretensions to the English throne: That the inequality between the two kingdoms deprived James of any hopes of success, if he trusted merely to the force of his own state, and had no recourse to foreign powers for assistance: That the objections, attending the introduction of succours from a more powerful monarch, appeared so evident from all the transactions of history, that they could not escape a person of the King's extensive knowlege; but there were, in the present

CHAP.

XLII.

1587.

present case, several peculiar circumstances, which ought for ever to prevent him from having recourse to so dangerous an expedient: That the French monarch, the antient ally of Scotland, might willingly use the assistance of that kingdom against England; but would be displeased to see the union of these two crowns on the head of James; an union, which would ever after exclude him from all hopes of practicing that policy, formerly so useful to France and so pernicious to the Scottish nation: That Henry, besides, infested with faction and domestic war, was not in a condition of supporting distant allies; much less, would he undergo any hazard or expence, in order to aggrandize a near kinsman to the house of Guise, the most determined enemies of his repose and authority: That the extensive power and exorbitant ambition of the Spanish monarch rendered him a still more dangerous ally to James; and as he evidently aspired to an universal monarchy in the west, and had in particular advanced some claims on England, as if he were descended from the house of Lancaster, he was at the same time the common enemy of all princes, who desired to maintain their liberty and independance; and the immediate rival and competitor of the King of Scots: That the Queen, by her own naval power, and her alliance with the Hollanders, would probably intercept all succours which might be sent James from abroad, and be enabled to decide the controversy in this island with the superior forces of her own kingdom, opposed to those of Scotland: That if the King revived his mother's pretensions to the crown of England, he must also embrace her religion, by which alone they could be justified; and must thereby undergo the infamy of abandoning those principles, in which he had been strictly educated, and to which he had hitherto religiously adhered: That as he would, by such an apostasy, totally alienate all the protestants in
Scotland

Scotland and England, he could never gain the confidence of the catholics, who would still entertain a very reasonable doubt of his honour and sincerity: That by advancing a present claim to the crown, he forfeited the certain prospect of his succession; and revived that national animosity, which the late peace and alliance between the kingdoms had happily extinguished: That the whole gentry and nobility of England had openly declared themselves for the execution of the Queen of Scots; and if James showed such violent resentment against that act of justice, they would be obliged, for their own security, to prevent for ever so implacable and revengeful a prince from ruling over them: And that, however some persons might represent his honour as engaged to seek vengeance for the present affront and injury, the true honour of a prince consisted in wisdom and moderation and justice, not in following the dictates of blind passion, or in pursuing revenge at the expence of every motive and every interest^f. These considerations, joined to the peaceable, unambitious temper of the young prince, prevailed over his resentment; and he fell gradually into a good correspondence with the court of England. It is probable, that the Queen's chief object in her dissimulation with regard to the execution of Mary, was, that she might thereby afford James a decent pretence for renewing his amity with her, on which their mutual interests so much depended.

CHAP. XLII.

1587.

WHILE Elizabeth ensured tranquillity from the attempts of her nearest neighbour, she was not negligent of more distant dangers. Hearing that Philip, while he seemed to dissemble the daily insults and injuries, which he received from the English, was secretly preparing a great navy to attack her; she sent Sir Francis Drake with a fleet to intercept his supplies, to pillage his coast, and to destroy his shipping. Drake

^f Strype, vol. iii. p. 377. Spotswood.

CHAP.

XLII.

1587.
Drake de-
stroys the
fleet at
Cadiz.

carried out four capital ships of the Queen's, and twenty-six, great and small, with which the London merchants in hopes of sharing in the plunder, had supplied him. Having learned from two Dutch ships, which he met in his passage, that a Spanish fleet, richly laden, was lying at Cadiz, ready to set sail for Lisbon, the rendezvous of the intended Armada; he bent his course to the former harbour, and boldly, as well as fortunately, made an attack on the enemy. He obliged six gallies, which made head against him, to take shelter under the forts; he burned about an hundred vessels, laden with ammunition and naval stores; and he destroyed a great ship of the marquis of Santa Croce. Thence he set sail for Cape St. Vincent, and took by assault the castle situated on that promontory, with three other strong holds. He next insulted Lisbon; and finding, that the merchants, who had engaged entirely in expectation of profit, were discontented with these military enterprizes, he set sail for the Tercera Islands, with an intention of lying in wait for a rich Carrack, which was expected in these quarters. He was so fortunate as to meet with his prize; and in this short expedition, where the public bore so small a share, the adventurers were encouraged to attempt farther enterprizes, the English seamen learned to despise the great unwieldy ships of the enemy, the naval preparations of Spain were destroyed, the intended expedition against England was retarded a twelvemonth, and the Queen had thereby leisure to take more secure measures against that formidable invasion^z.

THIS year Thomas Cavendish, a gentleman of Devonshire, who had dissipated a good estate by living at court, being resolved to repair his fortune at the expence of the Spaniards, fitted out three ships at Plymouth, one of an hundred and twenty tons, another

^z Camden, p. 540. Sir William Monson's Naval Tracts in Churchill's Voyages, vol. iii. p. 156.

of sixty, and a third of forty ; and with these small vessels he adventured into the South Seas, and committed great depredations on the Spaniards. He took nineteen vessels, some of which were richly laden : and returning by the Cape of Good Hope, he came to England, and entered the river in a kind of triumph. His mariners and soldiers were cloathed in Silk, his sails were of damask, his top-sail cloth of gold ; and his prizes were esteemed the richest that ever had been brought into England^b.

CHAP.
XLII.

1587.

THE land enterprizes of the English were not, during this campaign, so advantageous or honourable to the nation. The important place of Deventer was intrusted by Leicester to William Stanley, with a garrison of twelve hundred English ; and this gentleman, being a catholic, was alarmed with the discovery of Babington's conspiracy, and became apprehensive, lest every one of his religion should thenceforth be treated with distrust in England. He entered into a correspondence with the Spaniards, betrayed the city to them for a sum of money, and engaged the whole garrison to desert with him to the Spanish service. Roland York, who commanded a fort near Zutphen, imitated his example ; and the Hollanders, formerly disgusted with Leicester, and suspicious of the English, broke out into loud complaints against the improvidence, if not the treachery of his administration. Soon after, he himself arrived in the Low Countries ; but his conduct was no-wise calculated to give them satisfaction, or to remove the suspicions, which they had entertained against him. The prince of Parma having besieged Sluys, he attempted to relieve the place, first by sea, then by land ; but failed in both enterprizes ; and as he ascribed his bad success to the ill behaviour of the Hollanders, they were equally free in reflections upon his conduct. The breach between them became wider

^b Birch's Memoirs, vol. i. p. 57.

CHAP.

XLII.

1587.

every day : They slighted his authority, opposed his measures, and neglected his counsels; while he endeavoured, by an imperious behaviour, and by violence, to recover that influence, which he had lost by his imprudent and ill concerted measures. He was even suspected by the Dutch of a design to usurp upon their liberties; and the jealousy entertained against him, began to extend towards the Queen herself. That princess had made some advances towards a peace with Spain : A congress had been opened at Bourbourg, a village near Graveline : And tho' the two courts, especially that of Spain, had no other intention than to amuse each of them its enemy by negotiation, and mutually relax the preparations for defence or assault, the Dutch, who were determined, on no condition, to return under the Spanish yoke, became apprehensive lest their liberty should be sacrificed to the political interests of England¹. But the Queen, who knew the importance of her alliance with the States in the present conjuncture, was resolved to give them entire satisfaction by recalling Leicester, and commanding him to resign his government. Maurice, son to the prince of Orange, a youth of twenty years of age, was elected by the states, governor in his place; and Peregrine lord Willoughby, was appointed by the Queen commander of the English forces. The measures of these two generals were much retarded by the malignity of Leicester, who had left a faction behind him, and who still attempted, by means of his emissaries, to disturb all the operations of the states. So soon as Elizabeth got intelligence of these disorders, she took care to redress them, and she obliged all the partizans of England to fall into unanimity with prince Maurice². But tho' her good sense so far prevailed over her partiality to Leicester, she never could be made fully sensible of his vi-

¹ Bentivoglio, part 2. lib. iv. Strype, vol. iv. N^o 246.

² Rymer, tom. xv. p. 86.

ces and incapacity: The submissions, which he made CHAP.
 her, restored him to her wonted favour; and the lord XLII.
 Buckhurst, who had accused him of misconduct in
 Holland, lost for sometime her confidence, and was 1587.
 even committed to custody.

SIR Christopher Hatton was another favourite, who, at this time, received some marks of her partiality. Tho' he had never followed the profession of the law, he was made chancellor in the place of Bromley, deceased; but notwithstanding all the expectations, and wishes of the lawyers, he behaved in a manner not unworthy that high station: His good natural capacity supplied the place of experience and study; and his decisions were not found deficient either in point of equity or judgment. His enemies had contributed to this promotion, in hopes that his absence from court, while he attended the business of chancery would gradually estrange him from the Queen and give them an opportunity of undermining him in her favour.

THESE little intrigues and cabals of the court were silenced by the account, which came from all quarters, of the vast preparations made by the Spaniards 1588.
 for the invasion of England, and for the entire conquest of that kingdom. Philip, tho' he had not yet
 declared war, on account of the hostilities, which Philip projects the invasion of England.
 Elizabeth every where committed upon him, had long
 harboured a secret and violent desire of revenge against her. His ambition also and the hopes of extending his empire were much encouraged by the present prosperous situation of his affairs; by the conquest of Portugal, the acquisition of the Indian commerce and settlements, and the yearly importation of vast treasures from America. The point on which he rested his highest glory, the perpetual object of his policy, was to support orthodoxy and exterminate heresy; and as the power and credit of Elizabeth were the chief bulwark of the protestants, he hoped, if he could subdue that princess, to acquire the
eternal

CHAP.

XLII.

1588.

eternal renown, of being able to re-unite the whole christian world in the catholic communion. Above all, his indignation against his revolted subjects in the Netherlands, instigated him to attack the English, who had encouraged that insurrection, and who, by their near neighbourhood, were so well enabled to support the Hollanders, that he could never hope to reduce these rebels, while the power of that kingdom remained entire and unbroken. To subdue England seemed a necessary preparative to the re-establishment of his authority in the Netherlands; and notwithstanding all appearances, the former was in itself, as a more important, so a more easy, undertaking than the latter. That kingdom lay nearer Spain than the Low Countries, and was more exposed to invasions from that quarter; after an enemy had once obtained entrance, it was neither fortified by art nor nature; a long peace had deprived it of all military discipline and experience; and the catholics, in which it still abounded, would be ready, it was hoped, to join any invader, who should free them from those grievous persecutions, at present exercised against them, and revenge the death of the Queen of Scots, on whom they had fixed all their affections. The fate of England must be decided in one battle at sea, and another at land; and what comparison between the English and Spaniards, either in point of naval force, or in the numbers, reputation, and veteran bravery of their armies? Besides the acquisition of so great a kingdom, success against England ensured the immediate subjection of the Hollanders, who, attacked on every hand, and deprived of all support, must yield their stubborn necks to that yoke, which they had so long resisted. Happily this conquest, as it was of the utmost importance to the grandeur of Spain, would not at present be opposed by the jealousy of the neighbouring powers, naturally so much interested to prevent the success of that enterprize. A truce was lately concluded

ed with the Turks; the empire was in the hands of a friend and near ally; and France the perpetual rival of Spain, was so torn with intestine commotions, that she had no leisure to pay attention to her foreign interests. This favourable opportunity, therefore, which might never again present itself, must be seized; and one bold effort made for acquiring that ascendant in Europe, to which the present greatness and prosperity of the Spaniards seemed so fully to intitle them¹.

CHAP.
XLII.
1588.

THESE hopes and motives engaged Philip, notwithstanding his cautious temper, to undertake this hazardous enterprize; and tho' the duke of Parma, when consulted, opposed the attempt, at least represented the necessity of previously getting possession of some seaport town in the Netherlands, which might afford a retreat to the Spanish navy^m, it was determined by the catholic monarch, to proceed immediately to the execution of his ambitious projects. During some time he had been secretly making preparations; but so soon as the resolution was fully taken, every part of his vast empire resounded with noise of armaments, and all his ministers, generals and admirals, were employed in forwarding the design. The marches of Santa Croce, a sea officer of great reputation and experience, was destined to command the fleet; and by his counsel were the naval equipments conducted. In all the ports of Sicily, of Naples, of Spain and Portugal, artizans were employed in building vessels of uncommon size and force; naval stores were bought at a prodigious expence; provisions amassed; armies levied and quartered in the maritime towns of Spain; and plans laid for fitting out such a fleet and embarkation as had never before had its equal in Europe. The military preparations in Flanders were no less formidable. Troops from all quarters were every moment assembling, to reinforce the duke of Parma. Capizuchi and Spinelli, con-

The invincible Armada.

¹ Camden. Strype, vol. iii. p. 512. ^m Bentivoglio, part ii. lib. 4. ducted

CHAP.

XLII.

1588.

ducted forces from Italy: The marquess of Borgau, a prince of the house of Austria, levied troops in Germany: The Walloon and Burgundian regiments were compleated or augmented: The Spanish infantry was supplied with recruits; and an army of thirty four thousand men were assembled in the Netherlands, and kept in a readiness to be transported into England. The duke of Parma employed all the carpenters whom he could procure, either in Flanders or in Lower Germany, and the coasts of the Baltic; and he built at Dunkirk, and Newport, but especially at Antwerp, a great number of boats and flat bottomed vessels, for the transportation of his infantry and cavalry into England. The most renowned nobility and princes of Italy and Spain were ambitious of sharing in the honour of this great enterprize. Don Amadæus of Savoy, Don John of Medicis, Vespasian Gonzaga, duke of Sabionetta, and the duke of Pastrana, hastened to join the army under the duke of Parma. About two thousand volunteers, many of them men of family, had enlisted in the service in Spain. No doubt was entertained, but such vast preparations, conducted by officers of such consummate skill, must finally be successful. And the Spaniards, ostentatious of their power, and elevated with vain hopes, had already denominated their navy the *Invincible Armada*.

Preparati-
ons in
England.

News of these extraordinary preparations soon reached England; and notwithstanding the secrecy of the Spanish council, and their pretending to employ this force in the Indies, it was easily concluded, that they meant to make some effort against England. The Queen had foreseen the invasion; and finding that she must now contend for her crown with the whole force of Spain, she made preparations for resistance; nor was she terrified with that power, by which all Europe apprehended she must of necessity be overwhelmed. Her force indeed seemed very

very unequal to resist so potent an enemy. All the sailors in England amounted at that time only to fourteen thousand two hundred and ninety-five menⁿ. The size of the English shipping was, in general, so small, that, except a few of the Queen's ships of war, there were not four vessels belonging to the merchants which exceeded four hundred tons^o. The royal navy consisted only of twenty-eight vessels^p, many of which were of very small size; none of them exceeding the bulk of our largest frigates, and most of them deserving rather the name of pinnaces than of ships. The only advantage of the English fleet, consisted in the dexterity and courage of the seamen, who being accustomed to sail in tempestuous seas, and expose themselves to all dangers, as much exceeded in this particular the Spanish mariners, as their vessels were inferior in size and force to those of that nation^q. All the commercial towns of England were required to furnish ships for reinforcing this small navy; and they discovered, on the present occasion, great alacrity in defending their liberty and religion against those imminent perils with which they were menaced. The citizens of London, in order to shew their vigour in the common cause, instead of fifteen vessels which they were commanded to equip, voluntarily fitted out double the number^r. The gentry and nobility hired, and armed, and manned, forty-three ships at their own charge^s; and all the loans of money which the Queen demanded, were frankly granted by the persons applied to. Lord Howard of Effingham, a man of great courage and capacity, was lord admiral, and took on him the command of the navy: Drake, Hawkins, and Frobisher, the most renowned seamen in Europe, served under him. The main fleet was stationed at Plymouth. A smaller squadron, consisting of forty vessels, English and Flemish, was commanded by the

CHAP.
XLII.

1588.

ⁿ Monson, p. 256. ^o Ibid. p. 268. ^p Ibid. p. 157.
^q Ibid. p. 321. ^r Ibid. p. 267. ^s Lives of the Admirals, vol. i. p. 451.

CHAP. lord Seymour, second son of protector Somerset; and
 XLII. lay off Dunkirk, in order to intercept the duke of
 Parma.

1588.

THE land forces of England, compared to those of Spain, possessed contrary qualities to its naval power: They were more numerous than the enemy, but much inferior in discipline, reputation, and experience. An army of twenty thousand men was disposed in different bodies along the south coast; and orders were given them, if they could not hinder the Spaniards from landing, to retire backwards, to waste the country around, and to wait for reinforcement from the neighbouring counties, before they approached the enemy. A body of twenty-two thousand foot, and a thousand horse, under the command of the earl of Leicester, was stationed at Tilbury, in order to defend the capital. The main army, consisted of thirty-four thousand foot, and two thousand horse, and was commanded by lord Hunsdon. These forces were reserved for the guard of the Queen's person; and were appointed to march whithersoever the enemy should appear. The fate of England, if all the Spanish armies should be able to land, seemed to depend on the issue of a single battle; and men of reflection entertained the most dismal apprehensions, when they considered the force of fifty thousand veteran Spaniards, commanded by experienced officers, under the duke of Parma, the most consummate general of the age; and compared this formidable armament with the military power, which England, not enervated by peace, but long disused to war, could muster up against it.

THE chief support of the kingdom seemed to consist in the vigour and prudence of the Queen's conduct; who, undismay'd by the present dangers, issued all her orders with tranquillity, animated her people to a steady resistance, and employed every resource, which either her domestic situation or her foreign alliances could afford her. She sent Sir Robert Sydney
 into

into Scotland; and exhorted the King to remain attached to her, and to consider the danger which at present menaced his sovereignty no less than her own, from the ambition of the Spanish tyrant^t: The ambassador found James sufficiently disposed to cultivate an union with England, and he even kept himself prepared to march with the force of his whole kingdom to the assistance of Elizabeth. Her authority with the King of Denmark, and the tie of their common religion, engaged this prince, upon her application, to seize a squadron of ships which Philip had bought or hired in the Danish harbours^u: the Hanse Towns, tho' not at that time on good terms with Elizabeth, were induced by the same motives, to retard so long the equipment of some vessels in their ports, that they became useless to the purpose of invading England. All the protestants throughout Europe, regarded this enterprize as the critical event which was to decide for ever the fate of their religion; and tho' unable, by reason of their distance, to join their force to that of Elizabeth, they kept their eyes fixed on her conduct and fortune, and beheld with anxiety, mixed with admiration, the intrepid countenance with which she encountered that dreadful tempest, which was every moment approaching towards her.

THE Queen also was sensible, that, next to the general popularity which she enjoyed, and the confidence which her subjects reposed in her prudent government, the firmest support of her throne consisted in the general zeal of the people for the protestant religion, and the strong prejudices which they had imbibed against popery. She took care, on this occasion, to revive in the nation this attachment to their own sect, and this abhorrence of the opposite. The English were remind-

^t She made him some promises which she never fulfilled, to give him a dukedom in England with suitable lands and revenue. to settle 5000 l. a year on him, and pay him a guard, for the safety of his person. From a MS. of lord Royston.

^u Strype. vol. iii. p. 524.

CHAP.

XLII.

1588.

ed of their former danger from the tyranny of Spain: All the barbarities exercised by Mary against the protestants, were ascribed to the counsel of that bigotted and imperious nation: The bloody massacres in the Indies, the unrelenting executions in the Low Countries, the horrid cruelties and iniquities of the inquisition, were set before men's eyes: A list and description was published, and pictures dispersed, of the several instruments of torture, with which, it was pretended, the Spanish Armada was loaded: And every artifice, as well as reason, was employed, to animate the people to a vigorous defence of their religion, their laws, and their liberties.

BUT while the Queen, in this critical emergence, roused the animosity of the nation against popery, she treated the partizans of that sect with moderation, and gave not way to an undistinguishing fury against them. Tho' she knew, that Sixtus Quintus, the present pope, famous for his capacity and his tyranny, had fulminated a new bull of excommunication against her, had deposed her from the throne, had absolved her subjects from their oaths of allegiance, had published a crusade against England, and had granted plenary indulgences to every one engaged in the present invasion; she would not believe, that all her catholic subjects could be so blinded, as to sacrifice to bigotry their duty to their sovereign, and the liberty and independency of their native country. She rejected all violent counsels, by which she was prompted to seek pretences for dispatching the leaders of that party: She would not even confine any considerable number of them: And the catholics, sensible of this good usage, generally expressed the highest zeal for the public defence. Some gentlemen of that sect, conscious that they could not justly expect any trust or authority, entered themselves as volunteers in the fleet or army*: Some equipped ships at their own charge, and

* Stowe, p. 747.

gave the command of them to protestants: Others were active in animating their tenants and vassals, and neighbours, to the defence of their country: And every rank of men, burying for the present all party distinctions, seemed to prepare themselves, with order as well as vigour, to resist the violence of these invaders.

CHAP.
XLII.
1588.

THE more to excite the martial spirit of the nation, the Queen appeared on horseback in the camp at Tilbury; and riding thro' the lines, discovered a chearful and animated countenance, exhorted the soldiers to remember their duty to their country and their religion, and professed her intention, tho' a woman, to lead them herself into the field against the enemy, and rather to perish in battle than survive the ruin and slavery of her people. By this spirited behaviour she revived the tenderness and admiration of the soldiery: An attachment to her person became a species of enthusiasm a-

The Queen's speech in the camp of Tilbury was in these words: My loving people, We have been persuaded by some, that are careful of our safety, to take heed how we commit ourselves to armed multitudes, for fear of treachery; but assure you, I do not desire to live to distrust my faithful and loving people. Let tyrant's fear: I have always so behaved myself, that, under God, I have placed my chiefest strength and safeguard in the loyal hearts and good-will of my subjects. And therefore I am come amongst you at this time, not as for my recreation or sport, but being resolved in the midst and heat of the battle, to live or die amongst you all; to lay down, for my God, and for my kingdom, and for my people, my honour and my blood, even in the dust. I know I have but the body of a weak and feeble woman, but I have the heart of a King, and of a King of England too; and think foul scorn, that Parma or Spain, or any prince of Europe, should dare to invade the borders of my realms: To which, rather than any dishonour shall grow by me, I myself will take up arms; I myself will be your general, judge, and rewarder of every one of your virtues in the field. I know already, by your forwardness, that you have deserved rewards and crowns; and we do assure you, on the word of a prince, they shall be duly paid you. In the mean time, my lieutenant-general shall be in my stead; than whom never prince commanded more noble and worthy subject; not doubting, but by your obedience to my general, by your concord in the camp, and your valour in the field, we shall shortly have a famous victory over those enemies of my God, of my kingdom, and of my people.

mong

CHAP.
XLII.

1588.

mong them; And they asked one another, whether it were possible that Englishmen could abandon this glorious cause, could display less courage than appeared in the female sex, or could ever, by any dangers, be induced to relinquish the defence of their heroic princess.

THE Spanish Armada was ready in the beginning of May; but the moment it was preparing to sail, the marquis of Santa Croce, the admiral, was seized with a violent fever, of which he soon after died. The vice-admiral, the duke of Paliano, by a strange concurrence of accident, at the very same time, suffered the same fate; and the King appointed for admiral the duke of Medina Sidonia, a nobleman of the greatest family in Spain, but unexperienced in action, and utterly unacquainted with sea affairs. Alcarede was appointed vice-admiral. This misfortune, besides the loss of so great an officer as Santa Croce, retarded the sailing of the Armada, and gave the English more time for their preparations to oppose them. At last, the fleet, full of hopes and alacrity, set sail from Lisbon; but next day met with a violent tempest, which scattered the ships, sunk some of the smallest, and forced the rest to take shelter in the Groyne, where they waited till they could be refitted. When the news of this event was carried to England, the Queen concluded, that the design of an invasion was disappointed for this summer; and being always ready to lay hold of every pretence for saving money, she made Walsingham write to the admiral directing him to lay up some of the larger ships, and to discharge the seamen: But lord Effingham, who was not so sanguine in his hopes, used the freedom to disobey these orders; and he begged leave to retain all the ships in service, tho' it should be at his own expence^z. He took advantage of a north wind, and sailed towards the coast of Spain, with an intention of attacking the enemy in their harbours; but the

29th May.

^z Camden, p. 545.

wind changing to the south, he became apprehensive, lest they might have set sail, and by passing him at sea, invade England, now exposed by the absence of the fleet. He returned, therefore, with the utmost expedition to Plymouth, and lay at anchor in that harbour.

CHAP.
XLII.

1588.

MEANWHILE, the Armada had repaired all her damages; and with fresh hopes set out again to sea, in prosecution of her enterprize. The fleet consisted of a hundred and thirty vessels, of which near a hundred were galleons, and were of greater size than any which had ever before been used in Europe. It carried on board nineteen thousand two hundred and ninety-five soldiers, eight thousand four hundred and fifty-six mariners, two thousand and eighty-eight galley slaves, and two thousand six hundred and thirty great pieces of brass ordnance. It was victualled for six months; and was attended with twenty lesser ships, called caravals, and ten salves with six oars apiece^a.

THE plan formed by the King of Spain, was, that the Armada should sail to the coast opposite to Dunkirk and Newport; and having chased away all English or Flemish vessels which might obstruct the passage, (for it was never supposed they could make opposition) should join themselves with the duke of Parma, should thence make sail to the Thames, and having landed the whole Spanish army, thus compleat at one blow the entire conquest of England. In prosecution of this plan, Philip gave orders to the duke of Medina, that, in passing along the channel, he should sail as near the coast of France as he could with safety; that he should by this policy avoid meeting with the English fleet; and keeping in view the main enterprize, should neglect all smaller successes, which might prove an obstacle, or even interpose a delay, to the acquisition of a kingdom^b. After the Armada was under sail, they took

^a Strype, vol. iii. Appen. p. 221.

^b Monson, p. 157.

a fisher-

CHAP.
XLII.

1588.

a fisherman, who informed them, that the English admiral had been lately at sea, had heard of the tempest which scattered the Armada, had retired back into Plymouth, and no longer expecting an invasion this season, had laid up his ships, and discharged most of his seamen. From this false intelligence the duke of Medina conceived the great facility of attacking and destroying the English ships, in harbour; and he was tempted, by the prospect of so decisive an enterprize, to break his orders, and make sail directly for Plymouth: A resolution which proved the safety of England. The Lizard 19th July. was the first land made by the Armada, about sunset; and as the Spaniards took it for the Ram-head near Plymouth, they bore out to sea, with an intention of returning next day, and attacking the English navy. They were descried by Fleming, a Scottish pyrate, who was roving in these seas, and who immediately set sail, to inform the English admiral of their approach: Another fortunate event, which contributed extremely to the safety of the fleet. Es-fingham had just time to get out of port, when he saw the Spanish Armada coming full sail towards him, disposed in the form of a half-moon, and stretching the distance of seven miles from the extremity of one division to that of the other.

The Ar-
mada ar-
rives in
the Chan-
nel.

THE writers of that age raise their stile by a pompous description of this spectacle; the most magnificent which had ever appeared upon the ocean, infusing equal terror and admiration into the minds of all beholders. The lofty masts, the swelling sails, and the towering prows of the Spanish galleons, seem impossible to be justly painted, otherwise than by assuming the colours of poetry; and an eloquent historian of Italy, in imitation of Camden, has asserted, that the Armada, tho' the ships bore every sail, yet ad-

vanced with a slow motion; as if the ocean groaned with supporting, and the winds were tired with impelling, so enormous a weight^d. The truth, however, is, the largest of the Spanish vessels would scarce pass for third rates in the present navy of England; yet were they so ill framed, or so ill governed, that they were quite unwieldy, and could not sail upon a wind, nor tack on occasion, nor be managed in stormy weather by the seamen. Neither the mechanics of ship-building, nor the experience of mariners, had attained so great perfection as could serve for the security and government of such bulky vessels; and the English, who already had experience how unserviceable they commonly were, were not dismayed with their tremendous appearance.

EFFINGHAM gave orders not to come to a close fight with the Spaniards, where the size of the ships, he suspected, and the numbers of the soldiers, would be a disadvantage to the English; but to cannonade them at a distance, and to wait the opportunity which winds, currents, or various chances must afford them, of intercepting some scattered vessels of the enemy. Nor was it long before the event answered expectation. A great ship of Biscay, on board of which was a considerable part of the Spanish money, was set on fire by accident; and while all hands were employed in extinguishing it, she fell behind the rest of the Armada: The great galleon of Andalusia was detained by the springing of her mast: and both these vessels were taken, after some resistance, by Sir Francis Drake. As the Armada advanced up the channel, the English hung upon the rear, and still infested them with skirmishes. Each trial abated the confidence of the Spaniards, and added courage to the English; and the latter soon found, that even in close fight the size of the Spanish ships was no advantage to them. Their bulk exposed

^d Bentivoglio, part ii. lib. 4.

them the more to the fire of the enemy; while their cannon, placed too high, shot over the heads of the English. The alarm having now reached the coast of England, the nobility and gentry hastened out with their vessels from every harbour, and reinforced the admiral. The earls of Oxford, Northumberland, and Cumberland, Sir Thomas Cecil, Sir Robert Cecil, Sir Walter Raleigh, Sir Thomas Vavasor, Sir Thomas Gerrard, Sir Charles Blount; with many others, distinguished themselves by this generous and disinterested service of their country. The English fleet, after the conjunction of these ships, amounted to an hundred and forty sail.

THE Armada had now reached Calais, and cast anchor before that place, in expectation, that the duke of Parma, who had got intelligence of their approach, would put to sea, and join his forces to them. The English admiral practised here a very successful stratagem upon the Spaniards. He took eight of his smaller ships, and filling them with all combustible materials, sent them one after another, into the midst of the enemy. The Spaniards fancied, that they were fireships of the same contrivance with a famous vessel which had lately done so much execution in the Schelde near Antwerp; and they immediately cut their cables, and took to flight with the greatest disorder and precipitation. The English fell upon them next morning, while in confusion; and besides doing great damage to other ships, they took or destroyed about twelve of the enemy.

By this time, it was become apparent, that the intention, for which these great preparations were made by the Spaniards, was entirely frustrated. The vessels, provided by the duke of Parma, were made for transporting soldiers not for fighting; and that general, when urged to leave the harbour, utterly refused to expose his flourishing army to such apparent hazard, as it must incur; while

1588.

while the English, not only were able to keep the sea, but seemed even to triumph over their enemy. The Spanish admiral found, in many rencounters, that while he lost so considerable a part of his own navy, he had destroyed only one small vessel of the English; and he foresaw, that, by continuing so unequal a combat, he must draw inevitable destruction on all the remainder. He prepared therefore to return homewards; but as the winds were contrary to his passage thro' the channel, he resolved to sail northward, and making the tour of the whole island, reach the Spanish harbours by the ocean. The English fleet followed him during some time; and had not their ammunition fallen short, by the negligence of the offices in supplying them, they had obliged the whole Armada to surrender at discretion. The duke of Medina had once taken that resolution; but was diverted from it by the advice of his confessor. This conclusion of the enterprize would have been more glorious to the English; but the event proved equally fatal to the Spaniards. A violent tempest overtook the Armada after it passed the Orkneys: The ships had already lost their anchors and were obliged to keep to sea: The mariners, unaccustomed to such hardships, and not able to govern such unwieldy vessels, yielded to the fury of the storm, and allowed their ships to drive either on the western isles of Scotland, or on the coast of Ireland, where they were miserably wrecked. Not a half of the navy returned to Spain; and the seamen, as well as soldiers, who remained were so overcome with hardship and fatigue, so dispirited by their discomfiture, that they filled all Spain with accounts of the valour of the English, and of the tempestuous violence of that ocean which surrounds them.

SUCH was the miserable and dishonourable conclusion of an enterprize, which had been preparing

CHAP.
XLII.

1588.

for three years, which had exhausted the revenue and force of Spain, and which had long filled all Europe with anxiety or expectation. Philip, who was a slave to his ambition, but had an entire command over his countenance, no sooner heard of the mortifying event, which blasted all his schemes, than he fell on his knees, and rendering thanks for that gracious dispensation of providence, expressed his joy that the calamity was not greater. The Spanish priests, who had so often blest this holy crusade, and foretold its infallible success, were somewhat at a loss to account for the victory gained over the catholic monarch by excommunicated heretics and an execrable usurper: But they at last discovered, that all the calamities of the Spaniards had proceeded from their allowing the infidel Moors to live among them^e.

A D.

1589.

4th Fe-
bruary.

Soon after the defeat and dispersion of the Spanish Armada, the Queen summoned a new Parliament; and received from them a supply of two subsidies and four fifteenths payable in four years. This is the first instance that subsidies were doubled in one supply; and

^e Strype, vol. iii. p. 525. On the fourth of September, soon after the dispersion of the Spanish Armada, died the earl of Leicester, the Queen's great, but unworthy, favourite. Her affection to him continued to the last. He had discovered no conduct in any of his military enterprizes; and was suspected of cowardice: Yet she entrusted him with the command of her armies during the danger of the Spanish invasion; a partiality which might have proved fatal to her, had the duke of Parma been able to land his troops in England. She had even ordered a commission to be drawn for him, constituting him her lieutenant in the kingdoms of England and Ireland; but Burleigh and Hatton represented to her the danger of entrusting such unlimited authority in the hands of any subject, and prevented the execution of that design. No wonder, that a conduct, so unlike the usual jealousy of Elizabeth, gave reason to suspect, that her partiality was founded on some other passion than friendship. But Elizabeth seemed to carry her affection to Leicester no farther than the grave: She ordered his goods to be disposed of at a public sale, to reimburse herself of some money which he owed her; and her usual attention to money was observed to prevail over her regard to the memory of the deceased. This earl was a great hypocrite, a pretender to the strictest religion, an encourager of the puritans, and a founder of hospitals.

so unusual a concession was probably obtained from the C H A P.
joy of the present success, and from the general sense XLII.
of the Queen's necessities. Some members objected
to this heavy charge, on account of the great burthen of 1589.
loans, which had lately been imposed upon them^f.

ELIZABETH foresaw, that this house of commons, A Parlia-
like all the foregoing, would be governed by the pu- ment.
ritans; and therefore, to obviate their enterprizes, she
renewed, at the beginning of the session, her usual in-
junction, that the parliament should not, on any ac-
count, presume to treat of matters ecclesiastical. Not-
withstanding this strict inhibition, the zeal of one
Dampont moved him to present a bill to the commons

^f Strype, vol. iii. p. 542. Id. appen. p. 239. There are some
singular passages in this last speech, which may be worth taking
notice of; especially as they came from a member who was no
courtier: For he argues against the subsidy. "And first," says he,
"for the necessity thereof, I cannot deny, but if it were a charge
"imposed upon us by her majesty's commandment, or a demand
"proceeding from her majesty by way of request, that I think
"there is not one among us all, either so disobedient a subject in
"regard of our duty, or so unthankful a man in respect of the in-
"estimable benefits which, by her or from her, we have received,
"which would not, with frank consent, both of voice and heart,
"most willingly submit himself thereunto, without any unreve-
"rend enquiry into the causes thereof. For it is continually in
"the mouth of us all, that our lands, goods, and lives are at our
"prince's disposing. And it agreeth very well with that position
"of the civil law, which sayeth, *Quod omnia regis sunt*. But how?
"*Ita tamen, ut omnium sint. Ad regem enim potestas omnium per-*
"*tinet; ad singulos proprietas*. So that altho' it be most true, that
"her majesty hath over ourselves and our goods, *potestatem impe-*
"*randi*; yet it is true, that until that power command (which, no
"doubt, will not command without very just cause) every subject
"hath his own *proprietatem possidendi*. Which power and com-
"mandment from her majesty, which we have not yet received, I
"take it (saving reformation) that we are freed from the cause of
"necessity. And the cause of necessity, is the dangerous estate of
"the common wealth, &c." The tenor of the speech pleads rather
for a general benevolence than a subsidy: For the law of Richard
the third against benevolence was never conceived to have any
force. The member even proceeds to assert, with some precaution,
that it was in the power of a Parliament to refuse the King's de-
mand of a subsidy. And that there was an instance of that liberty in
Henry the third's time near four hundred years before. *Sub fine*.

for

1589.

for remedying the grievances, and restraining the tyranny, of the ecclesiastical commission, which were certainly enormous: But when Mr. secretary Woley reminded the house of her majesty's commands, no one durst second the motion; the bill was not so much as read; and the speaker returned it back to Dampport, without taking the least notice of it^g. Some members of the house, notwithstanding the general submission, were even committed to custody on account of this attempt^h.

THE imperious conduct of Elizabeth appeared still more clearly in another parliamentary transaction. The right of purveyance was an antient prerogative, by which the officers of the crown could at pleasure take provisions for the household from all the neighbouring counties, and could make use of carts and carriages; and the price of these services was fixed and stated. The payment of the money was often distant and uncertain; and the rates were always much inferior to the market price; so that purveyance, besides the slavery of it, was always regarded as a great burthen, and being arbitrary and casual, was liable to great abuses. We may fairly presume, that the hungry courtiers of Elizabeth, supported by her unlimited power, would be sure to render this prerogative very oppressive to the people; and the commons had, last session, found it necessary to pass a bill for regulating these exactions: But the bill was lost in the house of peersⁱ. The continuance of the abuses begot a new attempt for redress; and the same bill was now revived, and sent up again to the house of peers, together with a bill for some new regulations in the court of Exchequer. Soon after, the commons received a message from the upper house, desiring them to appoint a committee for a conference. At this conference, the peers

^g D'Ewes, p. 438.
Neal, vol. i. p. 500.

^h Strype's Life of Whitgift, p. 280.
ⁱ D'Ewes, p. 434.

informed them, that the Queen, by a message, delivered by lord Burleigh, had expressed her displeasure, that the commons should presume to touch on her prerogative. If there were any abuses, she said, either in imposing purveyance, or in the practice of the court of Exchequer, her majesty was both able and willing to provide due reformation; but would not permit the Parliament to intermeddle in these matters^k. The commons, alarmed at this intelligence, appointed a new committee to attend the Queen, and endeavour to satisfy her of their humble and dutiful intentions. Elizabeth gave a gracious reception to the committee: She expressed her great *inestimable loving care* towards her loving subjects; which, she said, was greater than of her own self, or even than any of them could have of themselves. She told them, that she had already given orders for an enquiry into the abuses attending purveyance, but the dangers of the Spanish invasion had retarded the progress of that design; that she had as much skill, will, and power to rule her own household as any subjects whatsoever to govern theirs, and needed as little the assistance of her neighbours; that the Exchequer was her chamber, consequently more near to her than even her household, and therefore the less proper for them to intermeddle with; and that she would of herself, with the advice of her council and the judges, redress every grievance in these matters, but would not permit *them*, by laws moved without her privity, to bereave her of the honour attending these regulations^l. The issue of this matter was the same that attended all contests between Elizabeth and her Parliaments^m. She seems even to have been more imperious, in this particular, than her predecessors; at least, her more remote ones: For they often permitted the abuses of

CHAP.
XLII.

1589.

^k D'Ewes, p. 440.^l Ibid. p. 444.^m *Si rixa est, ubi tu pulsas, ego vapulo tantum.* Juven.

CHAP. purveyanceⁿ to be redressed by law^o. Edward the
 XLII. third, a very arbitrary Prince, allowed ten several
 statutes to be enacted for that purpose.

1589.

ⁿ We may judge of the extent and importance of these abuses by a speech of Bacon's against purveyors, delivered in the first Session of the first Parliament of the subsequent reign. "First," says he, "they take in hand what they ought not to take; secondly, they take in quantity a far greater proportion than cometh to your majesty's use; thirdly, they take in an unlawful manner, in a manner, I say, directly and expressly prohibited by several laws. For the first, I am a little to alter their name: For instead of takers, they become taxers: Instead of taking provisions for your majesty's service, they tax your people *ad redimendam vexationem*; imposing upon them and extorting from them divers sums of money, sometimes in gross, sometimes in the nature of stipends annually paid, *ne noceant*, to be freed and eased of their oppression. Again, they take trees, which by law they cannot do; timber trees, which are the beauty, countenance and shelter of men's houses; that men have long spared from their own purse and profit; that men esteem, for their use and delight, above ten times the value; that are a loss which men cannot repair or recover. These do they take, to the defacing and spoiling of your subjects' mansions and dwellings, except they may be compounded with to their own appetites. And if a gentleman be too hard for them while he is at home, they will watch their time when there is but a bailiff or a servant remaining, and put the ax to the root of the tree, ere ever the master can stop it. Again, they use a strange and most unjust exaction in causing the subjects to pay poundage of their own debts, due from your majesty unto them: So as a poor man, when he has had his hay or his wood, or his poultry (which perchance he was full loath to part with, and had for the provision of his own family and not to put to sale) taken from him, and that not at a just price, but under the value, and cometh to receive his money, he shall have after the rate of twelve pence in the pound abated for poundage of his due payment upon so hard conditions. Nay farther they are grown to that extremity (as is affirmed, tho' it be scarce credible, save that in such persons all things are credible) that they will take double poundage, once when the debenture is made, and again the second time, when the money is paid. For the second point, most gracious sovereign, touching the quantity which they take far above that which is answered to your majesty's use; it is affirmed unto me by divers gentlemen of good report, as a matter which I may safely avouch unto your majesty, that there is no pound profit, which redoundeth unto your majesty in this course but induceth and begetteth three pound damage upon your subjects, beside the discontentment. And to the end they may make their spoil more securely, what do they? Whereas divers statutes do strictly provide, that whatsoever

In so great awe did the commons stand of every CHAP. courtier, as well as of the crown, that they durst use XLII. no freedom of speech, which, they thought, would give the least offence to any of them. Sir Edward Hobby

1589.

“ they take shall be registered and attested, to the end that by making a collation of that which is taken from the country and that which is answered above, their deceits might appear, they, to the end to obscure their deceits, utterly omit the observation of this, which the law prescribeth. And therefore to descend, if it may please your majesty, to the third sort of abuse, which is of the unlawful manner of their taking, whereof this question is a branch; it is so manifold, as it rather asketh an enumeration of some of the particulars than a prosecution of all. For their price, by law they ought to take as they can agree with the subject; by abuse they take at an imposed and enforced price: By law they ought to make but one apprizement by neighbours in the country; by abuse, they make a second apprizement at the court gate, and when the subjects’ cattle come up many miles lean and out of plight by reason of their travel, then they prize them a new at an abated price: By law, they ought to take between sun and sun; by abuse, they take by twilight and in the night-time, a time well chosen for malefactors: By law, they ought not to take in the high-ways (a place by her majesty’s high prerogative protected, and by statute by special words excepted) by abuse, they take in the high-ways: By law, they ought to show their commission, &c. A number of other particulars there are, &c.” Bacon’s works, vol. iv. p. 305, 306.

Such were the abuses, which Elizabeth would neither permit her Parliaments to meddle with, nor redress herself. I believe it will readily be allowed, that this slight prerogative alone, which has passed almost unobserved amidst other branches of so much greater importance, was sufficient to extinguish all regular liberty. For what elector, or member of Parliament, or even juryman, durst oppose the will of the court, while he lay under the lash of such an arbitrary prerogative? For a farther account of the grievous and incredible oppressions of purveyors, see the journals of the house of commons, vol. i. p. 190. There is a story of a carter, which may be worth mentioning on this occasion. “ A carter had three times been at Windsor with his cart to carry away, upon summons of a remove, some part of the stuff of her Majesty’s wardrobe; and when he had repaired thither once, twice, and the third time, and that they of the wardrobe had told him the third time that the remove held not, the carter, clapping his hand on his thigh, said, *Now I see, that the Queen is a woman as well as my wife.* Which words being overheard by her majesty who then stood at the window, she said, *What a villain is this?* and so sent him three angels to stop his mouth. Birch’s Memoirs, vol. i. p. 155.

° See the statutes under this head of purveyance.

CHAP.
XLII.

1589.

shewed in the house his extreme grief, that by some great personage, not a member of the house, he had been sharply rebuked for speeches delivered in Parliament: He craved the favour of the house and desired that some of the members might inform that great personage of his true meaning and intention in these speeches^p. The commons, to obviate these inconveniencies, passed a vote, that no one should reveal the secrets of the house^q.

Expedition
against
Portugal.

THE discomfiture of the Armada had begot in the nation a kind of enthusiastic passion for enterprizes against Spain; and nothing seemed now impossible to be atchieved by the valour and fortune of the English. Don Antonio, prior of Crato, was a natural son of the royal family of Portugal, who, trusting to the aversion of his countrymen against the Castilians, had advanced a claim to the crown, and flying first to France, thence to England, had been encouraged both by Henry and Elizabeth in his pretensions. A design was formed by the people, not the court, of England to conquer the kingdom for Don Antonio: Sir Francis Drake and Sir John Norris were the leaders of this romantic enterprize: near twenty thousand voluntiers^r enlisted themselves in the service: and ships were hired, as well as arms provided, at the sole charge of the adventurers. The Queen's frugality kept her from contributing more than sixty thousand pounds to the expence; and she only allowed six of her ships of war to attend the expedition^s. There was more spirit and bravery, than foresight or prudence, in the conduct of this enterprize. The small stock of the adventurers could not enable them to buy either provisions or ammunition sufficient

^p D'Ewes, p. 432. 433.

^q An act was passed this session, enforcing the former statute, which imposed twenty pounds a month on every one absent from public worship: But the penalty was restricted to two thirds of the income of the recusant. 29 Eliz. cap. 6.

^r Birch's Memoirs of Queen Elizabeth, vol. i. p. 61. Monson, p. 267, says, that there were only fourteen thousand soldiers and four thousand seamen in the whole on this expedition: But the account contained in Dr. Birch, is given by one of the most considerable of the adventurers.

^s Monson, p. 267.

1589.

for such an undertaking: They even wanted vessels to stow the numerous volunteers, who crowded to them; and they were obliged to seize by force some ships of the Hanse Towns, which they met with at sea: An expedient, which set them somewhat more at ease in point of room for their men, but remedied not the deficiency of their provisions^t. Had they sailed directly to Portugal, it is believed, that the good will of the people, joined to the defenceless state of the kingdom, might have ensured them of success: But hearing, that great preparations were making at the Groine, for the invasion of England, they were induced to go thither, and destroy this new armament of Spain. They broke into the harbour; burned some ships of war, particularly one commanded by Recalde, vice admiral of Spain; they defeated an army of four or five thousand men, which was assembled to oppose them; they assaulted the Groine, and took the lower town, which they pillaged; and they would have taken the higher, tho' well fortified, had they not found their ammunition and provisions beginning to fall short. The young earl of Essex, a nobleman of very promising hopes, who, fired with the thirst of military honour, had secretly, unknown to the Queen, stole from England, here joined the adventurers; and it was then agreed by common consent to make sail for Portugal, the main object of their enterprise.

THE English landed at Paniche, a sea-port town, twelve leagues from Lisbon; and Norris led the army to that capital, while Drake undertook to sail up the river, and attack the city with united forces. By this time, the court of Spain had got leisure to prepare against the invasion of the English. Forces were thrown into Lisbon: The Portuguese were disarmed: All suspected persons were taken into custody: And thus, tho' the inhabitants bore great affection to

^t Monson, p. 159.

CHAP.

XLII.

1589.

Don Antonio, none of them dared to declare in favour of the invaders. The English army, however, made themselves masters of the suburbs, which abounded with riches of all kinds; but as they desired to conciliate the affections of the Portugueze, and were more intent on honour than profit, they observed a strict discipline, and abstained from all plunder. Meanwhile they found their ammunition and provisions totally exhausted; they had not a single cannon to make a breach in the walls; the admiral had not been able to pass some fortresses, which guarded the river; there was no appearance of any insurrection in their favour; sickness, from fatigue, hunger, and intemperance in wine and fruits had seized the army; So that it was found requisite to make all haste possible to reembark. They were not pursued by the enemy; and finding, at the mouth of the river, sixty ships laden with naval stores, they seized them as lawful prize; tho' they belonged to the Hanse Towns, a neutral power. They sailed thence to Vigo, which they took and burned; and having ravaged the country round, they set sail and arrived safely in England. Above the half of these gallant adventurers perished by sickness, famine, fatigue, and the sword^u; and England reaped much more honour than profit from this extraordinary expedition. It is computed, that eleven hundred gentlemen embarked on board this fleet, and that only three hundred and fifty survived these multiplied disasters^x.

WHEN these ships were on their voyage homewards, they met with the earl of Cumberland, who was outward bound, with a fleet of seven sail, all equipped at his own charge, except one ship of war, which the Queen had lent him. That nobleman supplied Sir Francis Drake with some provisions; a generosity, which saved the lives of many of Drake's men, but which the others suffered severely for afterwards.

^u Birch's Memoirs, vol. i. p. 61.

^x Birch. Ibid.

Cumberland

Cumberland failed towards the Terceras, and took several prizes from the enemy; but the richest, valued at an hundred thousand pounds, perished in her return, with all her cargo, near St. Michael's Mount in Cornwall. Many of these adventurers were killed in a rash attempt at the Terceras: A destructive mortality seized the rest: And it was with difficulty that the few hands, which remained, were able to steer the ships home into harbour.

CHAP.
XLII.

1589.

THO' the signal advantages, gained over the Spaniards, and the spirit, which they infused into the English, gave Elizabeth great security during the rest of her reign, she could not forbear keeping an anxious eye on Scotland, whose situation rendered the revolutions of that kingdom always of importance to her. It might have been expected, that this high-spirited princess, who knew so well how to brave danger, would not have retained that suspicious jealousy towards Scotland, with which, during the life-time of Mary, she had been so much agitated. James had indeed succeeded to all his mother's claims; but he had not succeeded to the favour of the catholics, which could alone render these claims dangerous^z: And as the Queen was now well advanced in years, and enjoyed the most uncontrouled authority over her subjects, it was not likely, that the King of Scots, who was of an indolent unambitious temper, would ever give her any disturbance in the possession of her throne. Yet all these circumstances could not remove her timorous suspicions: And so far from satisfying the nation by a settlement of the succession, or a declaration of James's title, she was as anxious to prevent every incident, which might raise his credit or procure him the regard of the English, as if he had been her immediate rival and competitor. Most of his ministers and favourites were her pensioners; and as she was desirous to hinder him from marry-

⁷ Monson, p. 161.

^z Winwood, vol. i. p. 51.

ing

ing and having children, she obliged them to throw obstacles in the way of their alliance, even the most reasonable, which could be offered him; and during some years, she succeeded in this malignant policy^a. He had fixed on the eldest daughter of the King of Denmark, who being a remote prince and not very powerful, could give her no umbrage; yet did she so artfully cross this negotiation, that the Danish monarch, impatient of delay, married his daughter to the Duke of Brunswic. James then renewed his suit to the younger princess; and still found obstacles from the intrigues of Elizabeth, who, merely with a view of interposing delay, proposed to him the sister of the King of Navarre, a princess much older than himself, and entirely destitute of fortune. The young King, besides the desire of securing himself by the prospect of issue, from those traitorous attempts, too frequent among his subjects, had been so watched by the rigid austerity of the ecclesiastics, that he had another inducement to marriage, which is not so usual with monarchs. His impatience therefore broke thro' all the politics of Elizabeth: The articles of marriage were settled: The ceremony was performed by proxy: And the princess embarked for Scotland; but was drove by a storm into a port of Norway. This tempest, and some others, which happened near the same time, were universally believed in Scotland and Denmark to have proceeded from a combination of the Scottish and Danish witches; and the dying confession of the criminals was supposed to place the accusation beyond all controversy^b. James, however, tho' a great believer in sorcery, was not deterred by this incident from taking a voyage, in order to conduct his bride home: He arrived in Norway; carried the Queen thence to Copenhagen; and having passed the winter in that city, he brought her next spring to Scotland, where they were joyfully re-

^a Melvil, p. 166, 177.^b Ibid. p. 180.

ceived by the people. The clergy alone, who never
neglected an opportunity of vexing him, made op-
position to the Queen's coronation, on account of the
ceremony of anointing her, which, they alledged,
was either a Jewish or a popish rite; and therefore
utterly antichristian and unlawful. But James was
as much bent on the ceremony, as they were averse
to it; and after much controversy and many intrigues,
his authority, which had not often happened, at last
prevailed over their opposition^c.

CHAP.
XLII.

1589.

^c Spotfwood, p. 381.

C H A P. XLIII.

French affairs.—Murder of the duke of Guise.—Murder of Henry the third.—Progress of Henry the fourth.—Naval enterprizes against Spain.—A Parliament.—Henry the fourth embraces the catholic religion.—Scotch affairs.—Naval enterprizes.—A Parliament.—Peace of Vervins.—The earl of Essex.

CHAP.
XLIII.

1590.

AFTER a state of great anxiety and many difficulties, Elizabeth had at length reached a situation, where, tho' her affairs still required attention, and found employment for her active temper, she was removed from all danger of any immediate revolution, and might regard the efforts of her enemies with some degree of confidence and security. Her successful and prudent administration had gained her, together with the admiration of foreigners, the affections of her own subjects; and after the death of the Queen of Scots, even the catholics, however discontented, pretended not to dispute her title, or adhere to any other person as her rival and competitor. James, curbed by his factious nobility and ecclesiastics, possessed at home very little authority; and was solicitous to remain on good terms with Elizabeth and the English nation, in hopes that time, aided by his patient tranquillity, would secure him that rich succession, to which his birth entitled him. The Hollanders, tho' overmatched in their contest with Spain, still made an obstinate resistance; and such was their unconquerable antipathy to their old masters, and such the prudent conduct of young Maurice, their governor, that the subduing that small territory, if at all possible, must be the work of years, and the result of many and great successes. Philip, who in his powerful effort against England, had been transported

transported by resentment and ambition beyond his usual cautious maxims, was now disabled, and still more discouraged, from adventuring again on such hazardous enterprizes. The situation also of affairs in France, began chiefly to employ his attention; but notwithstanding all his artifice, and force, and expence, the events in that kingdom proved every day more contrary to his pretensions, and more favourable to the friends and confederates of England.

C H A P.

XLIII.

1590.

THE violence of the League having constrained French Henry to declare war against the Hugonots, these religionists seemed exposed to the utmost danger; and Elizabeth, sensible of the intimate connexion between her own interests and those of that party, had supported the King of Navarre by her negotiations in Germany, and still more by large sums of money, which she remitted for levying forces in that country. That heroic prince, not discouraged by the great superiority of his enemies, took the field; and in the year 1587 gained, at Coutras, a compleat victory over the army of the French King; but as his allies, the Germans, were at the same time discomfited by the army of the League, under the duke of Guise, his situation, notwithstanding his victory, seemed still as desperate as ever. The chief advantage which he reaped from this diversity of success, was the divisions which, by that means, took place among his enemies. The inhabitants of Paris, intoxicated with admiration of Guise, and strongly prejudiced against their King, whose intentions had become suspicious to them, took to arms, and obliged Henry to fly for his safety. That prince, dissembling his resentment, entered into a negotiation with the League; and having conferred many high offices on Guise and his partizans, summoned an assembly of the states at Blois, on pretence of finding means and expedients to support the intended war against the Hugonots. The various scenes of perfidy and cruelty which

CHAP.
XLIII.

1590.

Murder of
the duke
of Guise

had been exhibited in France, had justly begot a mutual diffidence among all parties; yet Guise, trusting more to the timidity than honour of the King, rashly put himself into the hands of that monarch, and expected, by the ascendant of his own genius, to make him submit to all his exorbitant pretensions. Henry, tho' of an easy disposition, not steady to his resolutions, nor even to his promises, wanted neither courage nor capacity; and finding all his subtilities eluded by the vigour of Guise, and even his throne exposed to the most imminent danger, he embraced more violent counsels than were natural to him, and ordered that duke and his brother, the cardinal of Guise, to be assassinated in his palace.

THIS cruel execution, which the necessity of it could alone excuse, had nearly proved fatal to the author, and seemed at first to plunge him into greater dangers than those which he sought to avoid, by taking vengeance on his enemy. The partizans of the League were enflamed with the utmost rage against him: The populace every where, particularly at Paris, renounced all allegiance to him: The ecclesiastics and the preachers filled all places with execrations against his name: And the most powerful cities, and most opulent provinces, appeared to combine in a resolution of renouncing monarchy, or of changing their monarch. Henry, finding slender resources among his catholic subjects, was constrained to enter into a confederacy with the Hugonots and the King of Navarre: He enlisted large bodies of Swiss infantry and German cavalry: And being still supported by his chief nobility, he assembled, by all these means, an army of near forty thousand men, and advanced to the gates of Paris, ready to crush the League, and subdue all his enemies. The desperate resolution of one man diverted the course of these great events. Jaques Clement, a Dominican monk, inflamed by that bloody spirit of bigotry which distinguished

tinguished this century and a great part of the fol-
 lowing beyond all other ages of the world, embraced
 the resolution of sacrificing his own life, in order to
 save the church from the persecutions of an heretical
 tyrant; and being admitted, under some pretext, to
 the King's presence, he gave that prince a mortal
 wound with a knife, and was immediately put to
 death, by the courtiers, who hastily revenged the
 murder of their sovereign. This remarkable inci-
 dent happened on the first of August, 1589.

CHAP:
XLIII.

1590.

Murder of
Henry the
third.

THE King of Navarre, next heir to the crown, as-
 sumed the government, under the title of Henry the
 fourth; but succeeded to much greater difficulties
 than those which surrounded his predecessor. The
 prejudices entertained against his religion, made a
 great part of the nobility desert him; and it was only
 by his promise of hearkening to conferences and in-
 struction, that he could engage any of the catho-
 lics to adhere to his undoubted title. The League,
 governed by the duke of Mayenne, brother to Guise,
 gathered new force; and the King of Spain entertain-
 ed views, either of dismembering the monarchy, or of
 annexing the whole to his own dominions. In these
 distressful circumstances, Henry addressed himself to
 Elizabeth, and found her well disposed to contribute
 to his assistance, and to oppose the progress of the
 catholic League, and of the King of Spain, her in-
 veterate and dangerous enemies. To prevent the
 desertion of his Swiss and German troops, she made
 him a present of twenty-two thousand pounds; a lar-
 ger sum than, as he declared, he had ever seen be-
 fore: And she sent him a reinforcement of four thou-
 sand men, under lord Willoughby, an officer of repu-
 tation, who joined the French at Dieppe. Strength-
 ened by these supplies, Henry marched directly to
 Paris and having taken the suburbs, sword in hand,
 he abandoned them to be pillaged by his soldiers. He
 employed this body of English troops in many other

CHAP. XLIII. enterprizes; and found still great reason to praise their courage and fidelity. The time of their service being elapsed, he dismissed them with many high commendations. Sir William Drury, Sir Thomas Baskerville, and Sir John Boroughs, acquired reputation on this campaign, and revived in France the antient fame of English valour.

Progress
of Henry
the fourth

THE army which Henry next campaign led into the field, was much inferior to that of the League; but as it was composed of the chief nobility of France, he feared not to encounter his enemies in a pitched battle at Yvrée, and he gained a compleat victory over them. The success enabled him to blockade Paris, and he reduced that capital to the last extremity of famine: When the duke of Parma, in consequence of orders from Philip, marched to the relief of the League, and obliged Henry to raise the blockade. Having performed this important service, he retired back to the Low Countries: and by his consummate skill in the art of war, performed these long marches in the face of the enemy, without affording the French monarch that opportunity which he sought, of giving him battle, or so much as putting his army once in disorder. The only loss which he sustained, was in the low Countries; where prince Maurice took advantage of his absence, and recovered some towns which Parma had formerly conquered from the States^d.

1591.

THE situation of Henry's affairs, tho' promising, was not so well advanced or established as to make the Queen discontinue her succours; and she was still

^d This year the nation suffered a great loss, by the death of Sir Francis Walsingham, secretary of state; a man equally celebrated for his ability and his integrity. He had passed thro' many employments, had been very frugal in his expences yet died so poor, that his family was obliged to give him a private burial. He left only one daughter, first married to Sir Philip Sidney, then to the earl of Essex, favourite to Queen Elizabeth, and lastly to the earl of Clanricarde of Ireland. The same year died Thomas Randolph, who had been employed by the Queen in several embassies to Scotland; as did also the earl of Warwick, elder brother of Leicester.

1591.

more confirmed in the resolution of supporting him, by some advantages gained by the King of Spain. The duke of Mercœur, governor of Brittany, a prince of the house of Lorraine, had declared for the League; and finding himself hard pressed by Henry's forces, he had been obliged, in order to his security, to introduce some Spanish troops into the sea-port towns of that province. Elizabeth was alarmed with the danger; and foresaw, that the Spaniards, besides infesting the English commerce by privateers, might employ these harbours as the seat of their naval preparations, and might more easily, from that near neighbourhood, than from Spain or Portugal, project an invasion of England. She concluded, therefore a new treaty with Henry, in which she engaged to send over three thousand men, to be employed in the reduction of Brittany, and stipulated, that her charges should, in a twelve month, or so soon as the enemy was expelled, be refunded her*. These forces were commanded by Sir John Norris; and under him by his brother Henry, and by Anthony Shirley. Sir Roger Williams was at the head of a small body which garrisoned Dieppe: And a squadron of ships, under the command of Sir Henry Palmer, lay upon the coast of France, and intercepted all the vessels belonging to the Spaniards or the Leaguers.

THE events of war can very little be regulated beforehand by any treaty or agreement; and Henry, who found it necessary to lay aside the projected enterprize against Brittany, persuaded the English commanders to join his army, and to take a share in the war which he carried on in Picardy†. Notwithstanding the disgust which Elizabeth received from this disappointment, he laid before her a plan for expelling the Leaguers from Normandy, and persuaded her to send over a new body of four thousand men, to assist him in that

* Camden, p. 561.

† Rymer, tom. xiv. p. 116.

CHAP.
XLIII.

1591.

enterprize. The earl of Essex was appointed general of these forces; a young nobleman, who, by many exterior accomplishments, and still more real merit, was daily advancing in favour with Elizabeth, and seemed to occupy that place in her affections which Leicester, who was now deceased, had so long enjoyed. Essex, impatient for military fame, was extremely uneasy to lie some time at Dieppe unemployed; and had not the orders which he received from his mistress been so positive, he would gladly have accepted of Henry's invitation, and have marched to join the French army now in Campagne. This plan of operations was also proposed to Elizabeth by the French ambassador; but she rejected it with great displeasure; and she threatened immediately to recall her troops, if Henry should persevere any longer in his present practice, of breaking all concert with her, and attending to nothing but his own interests^a. Urged by these motives, the French King, at last, led his army into Normandy, and laid siege to Rouën, which he reduced to great difficulties. But the League, who were unable of themselves to take the field against him, had again recourse to the duke of Parma, who received orders to march to their assistance. He executed this enterprize with his usual ability and success; and, for the present, frustrated all the projects of Henry and Elizabeth. This princess, who kept still in view the interests of her own kingdoms in all her foreign transactions, was impatient under these disappointments, blamed Henry for his negligence in the execution of treaties, and complained, that the English forces were thrust forward in every hazardous enterprize^b. It is probable, however, that their own ardent courage, and their desire of distinguishing themselves in so celebrated a

^a Birch's Negociations, p. 5. Rymer, tom. xiv. p. 123, 140.

^b Camden, p. 562.

theatre for war, were the cause why they so often enjoyed this perilous honour.

CHAP.
XLIII.

NOTWITHSTANDING the indifferent success of former enterprizes, the Queen was sensible how necessary it was to support Henry against the League and the Spaniards; and she formed a new treaty with him, in which they agreed, never to make peace with Philip, but by common consent; *she* promised to send him a new supply of four thousand men; and *he* stipulated to repay her charges in a twelvemonth, to employ these forces, joined to a body of French troops, in an expedition against Brittany, and to consign into her hands a sea-port town of that province, for a retreat to the English¹. Henry knew the impossibility of executing some of these articles, and the imprudence of fulfilling others; but finding them rigidly insisted on by Elizabeth, he accepted of her succours, and trusted that he might easily, on some pretence, be able to excuse his failure in the execution of his part of the treaty. This campaign was the least successful to Henry of all those which he had yet carried on against the League.

1591.

DURING these military operations in France, Elizabeth employed her naval power against Spain, and endeavoured to intercept the West-Indian treasures, the source of that greatness which rendered Philip so formidable to all his neighbours. She sent a squadron of seven ships, under the command of lord Thomas Howard, for this service; but the King of Spain, informed of her purpose, fitted out a navy of fifty-five sail, and dispatched them to escort the Indian fleet. They fell in with the English squadron; and by the courageous obstinacy of Sir Richard Greenville, the vice-admiral, who refused to make his escape by flight, they took one ship, the first English man of war which had

Naval enterprizes
against
Spain.

¹ Rymer, vol. xvi. p. 151, 168, 171, 173.

yet fallen into the hands of the Spaniards^k. The rest of the squadron returned safely into England, frustrated of their expectations, but pleasing themselves with the idea that their attempt had not been altogether fruitless in hurting the enemy. The Indian fleet had been so long detained in the Havana, from the fear of the English, that they were obliged at last to set sail in an improper season, and most of them perished by shipwreck ere they reached the Spanish harbours^l. The earl of Cumberland made a like unsuccessful enterprize against the Spanish trade. He carried out one ship of the Queen's, and seven others, equipped at his own expence; but the prizes which he made, did not compensate him for the charges^m.

THE spirit of these expensive and hazardous adventures was very prevalent in England. Sir Walter

^k This action of Sir Richard Greenville is so singular, as to merit a more particular relation. He was engaged alone with the whole Spanish fleet of fifty-three sail, which had ten thousand men on board; and from the time the fight begun, which was about three in the afternoon, to the break of day next morning, he repulsed the enemy fifteen times, tho' they continually shifted their vessels, and boarded with fresh men. In the beginning of the action he himself received a wound; but he continued doing his duty above deck till eleven at night, when receiving a fresh wound, he was carried down to be dressed. During this operation he received a shot in the head, and the surgeon was killed by his side. The English began now to want powder; all their small arms were broke or become useless; of this number, which were but a hundred and three at first, forty were killed, and almost all the rest wounded; their masts were beat overboard, their tackle cut in pieces, and nothing but a hulk left, unable to move one way or other. In this situation Sir Richard proposed to the ship's company, to trust to the mercy of God, not to that of the Spaniards, and to destroy the ship with themselves, rather than yield to the enemy. The master gunner, and many of the seamen, agreed to this desperate resolution; but others opposed it, and obliged Greenville to surrender himself prisoner. He died a few days after; and his last words were: "Here die I, Richard Greenville, with a joyful and quiet mind; for that I have ended my life as a true soldier ought to do, fighting for his country, Queen, religion, and honour: My soul willingly departing from this body, leaving behind the lasting fame of having behaved as every valiant soldier is in his duty bound to do." The Spaniards lost in this sharp, tho' unequal action, four ships, and about a thousand men. And Greenville's vessel herself perished soon after with two hundred Spaniards in her. Hackluyt's Voyages, vol. ii. part 2. p. 169. Camden, p. 565.

^l Monson, p. 163.

^m Ibid. p. 169.

Raleigh, who had enjoyed great favour with the Queen, finding his interest to decline, resolved to re-
CHAP. XLIII.

cover her good graces by some important undertaking; and as his reputation was high in England, he persuaded great numbers to engage with him as volunteers, in an attempt on the West-Indies. The fleet was detained so long in the Channel, by contrary winds, that the season was lost: Raleigh was recalled by the Queen: Sir Martin Forbisher succeeded to the command, and made a privateering voyage against the Spaniards. He took a rich Carrack near the island of Flores, and destroyed another^a. About the same time, Thomas White, a Londoner, took two Spanish ships, which, besides fourteen hundred chests of quicksilver, contained above two millions of bulls for indulgences; a commodity useless to the English, but which had cost the King of Spain three hundred thousand florins, and would have been sold by him in the Indies for five millions.

This war did great damage to Spain; but it was attended with considerable expence to England, and Elizabeth's ministers computed, that, since the commencement of it, she had expended in Flanders and France, and on her naval expeditions, above one million two hundred thousand pounds^o; a charge which, notwithstanding her extreme frugality, was too bur-
19th Feb.
 then some for her narrow revenues to bear. She summoned, therefore, a Parliament, in order to obtain
A Parliament.
 supply: But she either thought her authority so established, that she needed to make them no concessions in return, or she rated her power and prerogative above money: For there was never any Parliament whom she treated in so haughty a manner, whom she made more sensible of their own weakness, or whose privileges she more undervalued. When the speaker, Sir Edward Coke, made the three usual demands, of free-

^a Monson, p. 165; Camden, p. 569.

^o Strype, vol. iii.

dom from arrests, of access to her person, and of liberty of speech; she replied to him, by the mouth of Puckering, lord-keeper, that liberty of speech was granted the commons, but they must know what liberty they were entitled to; not a liberty for every one to speak what he listeth, or what cometh in his brain to utter; their privilege extended no farther than a liberty of Aye or No: That she enjoined the speaker, if he perceived any idle heads so negligent of their own safety, as to attempt reforming the church, or innovating in the commonwealth, that he should refuse the bills exhibited to that purpose, till they were examined by such as were fitter to consider of these things, and could better judge of them: That she would not impeach the freedom of their persons; but they must beware, lest, under colour of this privilege, they imagined, that any neglect of their duty could be covered or protected: And that she would not refuse them access to her person; provided it was upon urgent and weighty causes, and at times convenient, and when she might have leisure from other important causes of the realm^p.

NOTWITHSTANDING the menacing and contemptuous air of this speech, the intrepid and indefatigable Peter Wentworth, not discouraged by his former ill success, ventured to transgress the imperial orders of Elizabeth. He presented to the lord keeper a petition, in which he desired the upper house to join with the lower in a supplication to her majesty, for entailing the succession of the crown; and declared, that he had a bill ready prepared for that purpose. This method of proceeding was sufficiently respectful and cautious; but the subject was always extremely disagreeable to the Queen, and what she had expressly prohibited any one to meddle with: She sent Wentworth immediately to the Tower; and committed Sir Thomas Bromley,

^p D'Ewes, p. 460, 469. Townsend, p. 37.

who had seconded him, to the Fleet prison, together C H A P. XLIII.
 with Stevens, and Welsh, two members, to whom
 Sir Thomas had communicated his intention^a. About
 a fortnight after, a motion was made in the house, to
 petition the Queen, for the release of these members;
 but it was answered by all the privy counsellors there
 present, that her majesty had committed them for
 causes best known to herself, and that to press her on
 that head would only tend to the prejudice of the
 gentlemen whom they meant to serve: She would re-
 lease them whenever she thought proper, and would
 be better pleased to do it of her own proper motion,
 than from their suggestion^r. The house willingly
 acquiesced in this reasoning. 1593.

So arbitrary an act, at the commencement of the
 session, might well repress all farther attempts for
 freedom: But the religious zeal of the puritans was
 not so easily restrained; and it inspired a courage which
 no human motive was able to surmount. Morrice,
 attorney of the court of wards, made a motion for
 redressing the abuses in the bishop's courts, but above
 all, in the high commission; where subscriptions, he
 said, were exacted to articles at the pleasure of the
 prelates; where oaths were imposed, obliging per-
 sons to answer all questions without distinction, even
 tho' they should tend to their own condemnation;
 and where every one who refused entire satisfaction
 to the commissioners, was imprisoned, without re-
 lief or remedy^s. This motion was seconded by
 some members; but the ministers and privy counsel-
 lers opposed it; and foretold the consequences which
 ensued. The Queen sent for the speaker; and after
 requiring him to deliver Morrice's bill to her, she
 told him, that it was in her power to call Parlia-
 ments, in her power to dissolve them, in her power
 to give assent or dissent to any determination which

^a D'Ewes, p. 470. Townsend, p. 54.

497.

^s Ibid. p. 474. Townsend, p. 60.

^r D'Ewes, p.

CHAP.

XLIII.

1593.

they should form: That her purpose in summoning this Parliament was twofold, to have laws enacted for the farther enforcement of uniformity in religion, and to provide for the defence of the nation, against the exorbitant power of Spain: That these two points ought, therefore, to be the object of their deliberation: She had enjoined them already, by the mouth of the lord-keeper, to meddle neither with matters of state nor of religion; and she wondered how any one could be so assuming, as to attempt a subject so expressly contrary to her prohibition: That she was highly offended with this presumption; and took the present opportunity to reiterate the commands given by the keeper, and to require, that no bill, regarding either state affairs, or reformation in causes ecclesiastical, be exhibited in the house: And that in particular she charged the speaker upon his allegiance, that if any such bills were offered, absolutely to refuse them a reading, and not to so much as permit them to be debated by the members^t. This command from the Queen was submitted to, without farther question. Morrice was seized in the house by a serjeant at arms, discharged from his office of chancellor of the dutchy, disabled from any practice in his profession as a common lawyer, and kept for some years prisoner in Tilbury castle^u.

THE Queen having thus expressly pointed out, both what the house should and should not do, the commons were as obsequious to the one as to the other of her injunctions. They passed a very severe law against recusants; such a law as was suited to the severe character of Elizabeth and to the persecuting spirit of that age. It was intitled, An act to retain her majesty's subjects in their due obedience; and was meant, as the preamble declares, to obviate such inconveniencies and perils as might grow from the wicked practices

^t D'Ewes, p. 474, 478. Townsend, p. 68.

^u Heylin's History of the Presbyterians, p. 320.

of seditious sectaries and disloyal persons: For these two species of criminals were always, at that time, confounded together, as equally dangerous to the peace of society. It was enacted, that any person, above sixteen years of age, who obstinately refused, during the space of a month to attend the public worship, should be committed to prison; that, if after being condemned for this offence, he persist three months in his refusal, he must abjure the realm; or that if he either refuses this condition, or return after banishment he is to suffer capitally as a felon, without benefit of clergy*. This law bore equally hard upon the puritans as upon the catholics; and had it not been imposed by the Queen's authority, was probably, in that respect, very much contrary to the private sentiments and inclinations of the majority in the house of commons. Very little opposition, however, appears there to have been openly made to it[†].

CHAP:
XLIII.
1593.

THE expences of the war with Spain having reduced the Queen to great necessity of a supply, the grant of subsidies seems to have been the most important business of this parliament; and it was a singular mark of the high spirit of Elizabeth, that, while conscious of a present dependance on the commons, she opened the session with the most haughty treatment of them, and covered her weakness under such a lofty appearance of superiority. The commons readily voted two subsidies and four fifteenths; but this sum not appearing sufficient to the court, a very unusual expedient was fallen upon to induce them to make an enlargement in their concession. The peers informed the commons in a conference, that they could not give their assent to the supply voted, thinking it too small for the Queen's occasions:

* 35 Eliz. c. 1.

† After enacting this statute, the clergy, in order to remove the odium from themselves, often took care that recusants should be tried by the civil judges at the assizes, rather than by the ecclesiastical commissioners. Strype's Ann. Vol. iv. p. 264.

They

CHAP. XLIII. They therefore proposed a grant of three subsidies and six fifteenths, and desired a conference, in order to persuade the commons to agree to this measure.

1593.

The commons, who had acquired the privilege of beginning all bills of subsidy, took offence at this procedure of the lords, and at first absolutely rejected the conference: But being afraid, on reflection, that they had, by this refusal, given offence, to their superiors, they both agreed to the conference, and afterwards voted the additional subsidy².

THE Queen, notwithstanding this unusual concession of the commons, ended the session with a speech, containing some reprimands to them, and full of the same high pretensions, which she had assumed at the opening of the Parliament. She took notice, by the mouth of the keeper, that some members spent more time than was necessary, by indulging themselves in harangues and reasonings: And she expressed her displeasure on account of their not paying their due reverence to privy counsellors, “who,” she told them, “were not to be accounted as common knights and burgesses of the house, who are counsellors but during the Parliament: whereas, the others are standing counsellors, and for their wisdom and great service are called to the council of the state³.” The Queen, also in her own person, made the Parliament a spirited harangue; in which she spoke of the justice and moderation of her government, expressed the small ambition she had ever entertained of making conquests, displayed the just grounds of her quarrel with the King of Spain, and discovered how little she apprehended the power of that monarch, even tho’ he should make a greater effort than that of his invincible Armada. “But I am informed,” added she, “that when he attempted this last invasion, some upon the sea-coasts

² D'Ewes, p. 483, 487, 488. Townsend, p. 66.

³ D'Ewes, p. 466. Townsend, p. 47.

“forsook

“ forsook their towns, fled up higher into the coun-
 “ try, and left all naked and exposed to his entrance;
 “ But I swear unto you, by God, if I knew those per-
 “ sons, or may know of any that shall do so hereafter,
 “ I will make them feel what it is to be so fearful in
 “ so urgent a cause.” By this menace, she proba-
 bly gave the people to understand that she would ex-
 ercise martial law upon such cowards: For there was
 no statute by which a man could be punished for
 changing his place of abode.

THE King of France, tho’ he had hitherto made
 war on the League with great bravery and reputati-
 on, tho’ he had this campaign gained considerable
 advantages over them, and tho’ he was assisted by a
 considerable body of English under Norris, who carri-
 ed hostilities into the heart of Britanny; was become
 sensible, that he never could, by force of arms alone,
 render himself master of his kingdom. The nearer
 his military successes seemed to approach him to a full
 possession of the throne, the more discontent and jea-
 lousy arose among those Romanists who adhered to
 him; and a party was formed in his own court to
 elect some catholic monarch of the royal blood, if
 Henry refused any longer to satisfy them by declaring
 his conversion. This excellent prince was far from
 being a bigot to his sect; and as he deemed these theo-
 logical disputes to be entirely subordinate to the pub-
 lic good, he had tacitly determined, from the be-
 ginning, to come, some time or other, to the reso-
 lution required of him. He had found, on the death
 of his predecessor, that the hugonots, who formed
 the bravest and most faithful part of his army, were
 such determined zealots, that, if he had, at that
 time, abjured their faith, they would instantly have
 abandoned him to the pretensions and usurpations of
 the catholics. The more bigotted catholics, he knew,
 particularly those of the League, had entertained such

CHAP.
XLIII.

1593.

^b D'Ewes, p. 466. Townsend, p. 48.

CHAP. XLIII. 1593. an unsurmountable prejudice against his person, and diffidence of his sincerity, that even his conversion would not reconcile them to his title; and he must either expect to be entirely excluded from the throne, or to be admitted to it on such terms as would leave him little more than the mere shadow of royalty. In this delicate situation he had resolved to temporize; to retain the hugonots by continuing the profession of their religion; to gain the moderate catholics by giving them hopes of his conversion; to attach both to his person by conduct and success; and he hoped, either that the animosity of war against the League would make them drop gradually the question of religion, or that he might, in time, after some victories over his enemies and some conferences with divines, make finally, with more decency and dignity, that abjuration, which must have appeared, at first, both mean and suspicious to both parties.

Henry IV. embraces the catholic religion. WHEN the people are attached to any theological tenets, merely from a general persuasion or prepossession, they are easily induced, by any motive or authority, to change their faith in these mysterious subjects, as appears from the example of the English, who, during some reigns, generally embraced, without scruple, the still varying religion of their sovereigns. But a nation, like the French, where principles had so long been displayed as the badges of faction, and where each party had fortified its belief by an animosity against the other, were not found so pliable or inconstant; and Henry was at last convinced that the catholics of his party would entirely abandon him, if he gave them not immediate satisfaction in this particular. The hugonots also, taught by experience, clearly saw, that his desertion of them was become entirely necessary for the public settlement; and so general was this persuasion among them, that, the duke of Sully pretends, even the divines of that party purposely allowed themselves to be overcome

overcome in the disputes and conferences; that the King might more readily be convinced of the weakness of their cause, and might more cordially and sincerely, at least more decently, embrace the religion which it was so much his interest to believe. If this self denial, in so tender a point, should appear incredible and supernatural in theologians, it will, at least, be thought very natural, that a prince, so little instructed in these points as Henry, and so desirous to preserve his sincerity, should insensibly bend his opinion to the necessity of his affairs, and should believe that party to have the best arguments, who could alone put him in possession of a kingdom. All circumstances, therefore, being prepared for this great event, that monarch renounced the protestant religion, and was solemnly received, by the French prelates of his party, into the bosom of the church.

CHAP.
XLIII.

1593.

ELIZABETH, who was, herself, chiefly attached to the protestants, by her interests and the circumstances of her birth, and who seems to have entertained some propensity, during her whole life, to the catholic superstition, at least, to the antient ceremonies, yet pretended to be extremely displeased with this abjuration of Henry; and she wrote him a very angry letter, reproaching him with this interested change of his religion. Sensible, however, that the League and the King of Spain were still their common enemies, she hearkened to his apologies; continued her succours both of men and money; and formed a new treaty, in which they mutually stipulated never to make peace but by common agreement.

THE intrigues of Spain were not limited to France and England: The never failing pretence of religion, Scots affairs. joined to the influence of money, excited new disorders in Scotland, and gave fresh alarms to Elizabeth. George Ker, brother to the lord Newbottle, had been taken, while he was making his passage secretly into

C H A P. an unsurmountable prejudice against his person, and
 XLIII. diffidence of his sincerity, that even his conversion
 1593. would not reconcile them to his title; and he must
 either expect to be entirely excluded from the throne,
 or to be admitted to it on such terms as would leave
 him little more than the mere shadow of royalty. In
 this delicate situation he had resolved to temporize;
 to retain the hugonots by continuing the profession of
 their religion; to gain the moderate catholics by giv-
 ing them hopes of his conversion; to attach both to
 his person by conduct and success; and he hoped, ei-
 ther that the animosity of war against the League
 would make them drop gradually the question of re-
 ligion, or that he might, in time, after some victories
 over his enemies and some conferences with divines,
 make finally, with more decency and dignity, that
 abjuration, which must have appeared, at first, both
 mean and suspicious to both parties.

Henry IV. WHEN the people are attached to any theological
 embraces tenets, merely from a general persuasion or prepossession,
 the catho- sion, they are easily induced, by any motive or au-
 lic religi- thority, to change their faith in these mysterious sub-
 or. jects, as appears from the example of the English,
 who, during some reigns, generally embraced, with-
 out scruple, the still varying religion of their sove-
 reigns. But a nation, like the French, where prin-
 ciples had so long been displayed as the badges of
 faction, and where each party had fortified its belief
 by an animosity against the other, were not found so
 pliable or inconstant; and Henry was at last con-
 vinced that the catholics of his party would entirely
 abandon him, if he gave them not immediate satis-
 faction in this particular. The hugonots also, taught
 by experience, clearly saw, that his desertion of them
 was become entirely necessary for the public settle-
 ment; and so general was this persuasion among
 them, that, the duke of Sully pretends, even the di-
 vines of that party purposely allowed themselves to be
 overcome

overcome in the disputes and conferences; that the King might more readily be convinced of the weakness of their cause, and might more cordially and sincerely, at least more decently, embrace the religion which it was so much his interest to believe. If this self denial, in so tender a point, should appear incredible and supernatural in theologians, it will, at least, be thought very natural, that a prince, so little instructed in these points as Henry, and so desirous to preserve his sincerity, should insensibly bend his opinion to the necessity of his affairs, and should believe that party to have the best arguments, who could alone put him in possession of a kingdom. All circumstances, therefore, being prepared for this great event, that monarch renounced the protestant religion, and was solemnly received, by the French prelates of his party, into the bosom of the church.

CHAP.

XLIII.

1593.

ELIZABETH, who was, herself, chiefly attached to the protestants, by her interests and the circumstances of her birth, and who seems to have entertained some propensity, during her whole life, to the catholic superstition, at least, to the antient ceremonies, yet pretended to be extremely displeased with this abjuration of Henry; and she wrote him a very angry letter, reproaching him with this interested change of his religion. Sensible, however, that the League and the King of Spain were still their common enemies, she hearkened to his apologies; continued her succours both of men and money; and formed a new treaty, in which they mutually stipulated never to make peace but by common agreement.

THE intrigues of Spain were not limited to France and England: The never failing pretence of religion, joined to the influence of money, excited new disorders in Scotland, and gave fresh alarms to Elizabeth. George Ker, brother to the lord Newbottle, had been taken, while he was making his passage secretly into

Scots affairs.

1593.

Spain; and some papers were found about him, by which a dangerous conspiracy of some catholic noblemen with Philip was discovered. The earls of Angus, Errol, and Huntley, the heads of three potent families, had entered into a confederacy with the Spanish monarch; and had stipulated to raise all their forces, to join them to thirty thousand Spanish troops, which Philip engaged to send into Scotland; and after re-establishing the catholic religion in that kingdom, to march with their united power, in order to effectuate the same purpose in England^c. Graham of Fintry, who had also entered into this conspiracy, was taken and arraigned, and executed. Elizabeth sent lord Borough ambassador into Scotland, and exhorted the King to exercise the same severity on the three earls, to forfeit their estates, and by annexing them to the crown, both increase his own demesnes, and set an example to all his subjects of the dangers attending treason and rebellion. This advice was certainly very rational, but not easy to be executed by the small revenue and limited authority of James. He desired, therefore, some supply from her of men and money; but tho' she had reason to deem the prosecution of the three popish earls a common cause, he never could obtain the least assistance from her. The tenth part of the expence, which she bestowed in supporting the French King and the States, would have sufficed to execute this purpose, more immediately essential to her security^d: But she seems ever to have borne some degree of malignity to James, whom she hated, both as her heir, and as the son of Mary, her hated rival and competitor. So far from giving him assistance to prosecute the catholic conspirators, she rather contributed to his inquietude, by countenancing the turbulent disposition of the earl

^c Spotswood, p. 391. Rymer, tom. xvi. p. 190.

^d Spotswood, p. 393. Rymer, tom. xvi. p. 235.

1593.

of Bothwel*, a nobleman descended from a natural son of James the fifth. Bothwel more than once attempted to render himself master of the King's person; and being expelled the kingdom for these traitorous designs, he took shelter in England, was secretly protected by the Queen, and lurked near the borders, where his power lay, with a view of still enterprizing some new violence. He succeeded at last in an attempt on the King; and by the mediation of the English ambassador, imposed very dishonourable terms upon that prince: But James, with the authority of the convention of states, annulled this agreement as imposed by violence; again expelled Bothwel the country; and obliged him to take shelter in England. Elizabeth, pretending ignorance of the place of his retreat, never executed the treaties, by which she was bound to deliver up all rebels and fugitives to the King of Scotland. During these disorders, encreased by the refractory disposition of the ecclesiastics, the prosecution of the catholic earls remained in suspense; but at last the Parliament passed an act of attainder against them, and the King prepared himself to execute it by force of arms. The noblemen, tho' they obtained a victory over the earl of Argyle, who acted by the King's commission, found themselves hard pressed by James himself, and agreed, on certain terms, to leave the kingdom. Bothwel, being detected in a confederacy with them, forfeited the favour of Elizabeth, and was obliged to take shelter, first in France, then in Italy, where he died, some years after, in great poverty.

1594.

THE established authority of the Queen secured her from all such attempts as James was exposed to from the mutinous disposition of his subjects; and her enemies found no other means of giving her any domestic disturbance than by such traitorous and perfidious machinations, as ended in their own disgrace, and

* Spotswood, p. 257, 258.

CHAP.

XLIII.

1594.

in the ruin of their criminal instruments. Roderigo Lopez, a Jew, domestic physician to the Queen, being imprisoned on suspicion, confessed, that he had received a bribe to poison her from Fuentes and Ibarra, who had succeeded Parma, lately deceased, in the government of the Netherlands; but he maintained, that he had no other intention than to cheat Philip of his money, and never meant to fulfil his promise. He was, however, executed for the conspiracy; and the Queen complained to Philip of these dishonourable attempts of his ministers, but could obtain no satisfaction^f. York and Williams, two English traitors, were afterwards executed for a like conspiracy with Ibarra^g.

INSTEAD of revenging herself, by retaliating in this shameful manner, Elizabeth sought a more honourable vengeance, by supporting the King of France, and assisting him in finally breaking the force of the League, which, after the conversion of that monarch, went daily to decay, and was threatened with speedy ruin and dissolution. Norris commanded the English forces in Brittany, and assisted at the taking of Morlaix, Quimpercorentin and Brest, towns guarded by Spanish forces in that province. In every action, the English, tho' they had so long enjoyed domestic peace, discovered a strong military disposition; and the Queen, tho' herself a heroine, found more frequent occasion to reprove her generals for encouraging their temerity, than for countenancing their fear or caution^h. Sir Martin Forbisher, her brave admiral, perished, with many others, before Brest. Morlaix had been promised the English for a place of retreat; but the duke d'Aumont, the French general, eluded this promise by making it to be inserted in the capitulation, that none but catholics should be admitted into that city.

^f Camden, p. 577. Birch's Negot. p. 15. Bacon, vol. iv. p. 381.

^g Camden, p. 582.

^h Ibid. p. 578.

NEXT

NEXT campaign, the French King, who had long CHAP. carried on hostilities with Philip, was at last provok- XLIII. ed, by the taking of Chatelet and Dourlens, and the attack of Cambray, to declare war against that monarch. Elizabeth, being threatned with a new invasion in England, and with an insurrection in Ireland, recalled most of her forces, and sent Norris to command in this latter kingdom. Finding also, that the French League was almost entirely dissolved, and that the most considerable leaders had made an accommodation with their prince, she thought that he could well support himself by his own force and valour, and she began to be more sparing in his cause, of the blood and treasure of her subjects.

SOME disgusts, which she had received from the states, joined to the remonstrances of her frugal minister, Burleigh, made her also inclined to diminish her charges on that side; and she even demanded, by her ambassador, Sir Thomas Bodley, to be reimbursed all the money, which she had expended in supporting them. The states, besides alledging the conditions of the former treaty, by which they were not bound to repay her, till the conclusion of a peace, pleaded their present poverty and distress, the great superiority of the Spaniards, and the difficulty of supporting the war; much more, of saving money to discharge their incumbrances. After much negotiation, a new treaty was at last formed; by which the states engaged to free the Queen immediately from the charge of the English auxiliaries, computed at forty thousand pounds a year, to pay her annually twenty thousand pounds for some years, to assist her with a certain number of ships, and to conclude no peace nor treaty without her consent. They also bound themselves, on the conclusion of the peace with Spain, to pay her annually the sum of an hundred thousand pounds for four years; but on this condition, that the payment should be in lieu of all debts, and that they should be supplied, tho' at their own

CHAP. own, charges, with a body of four thousand auxilia-
XLIII. ries from England¹.

1596.

THE Queen still retained in her hands the cautionary towns, which were a great check on the rising power of the states; and she committed the important charge of Flushing to Sir Francis Vere, a brave officer, who had been much distinguished by his valour in the Low Countries. She gave this gentleman the preference to Essex, who expected so honourable a command; and tho' that earl was daily rising both in reputation with the people, and favour with herself, the Queen, who was commonly reserved in the advancement of her courtiers, thought proper, on this occasion, to give him a refusal. Sir Thomas Baskerville was sent over to France at the head of two thousand English, with which Elizabeth, by a new treaty, concluded with Henry, engaged to supply that prince. Some stipulations for mutual assistance were formed by the treaty; and all the former engagements were renewed.

597.

THIS body of English troops were maintained at the expence of the French King; yet did Henry esteem this supply of considerable advantage, on account of the great reputation acquired by the English, in so many fortunate enterprizes, undertaken against the common enemy. In the great battle of Turnhout, gained this campaign by prince Maurice, the English auxiliaries under Sir Francis Vere and Sir Robert Sidney had extremely distinguished themselves; and the fortunate success of that day was universally ascribed to their discipline and valour.

Naval enterprizes.

THO' Elizabeth, at a great expence of blood and treasure, made war against Philip in France and the Low Countries, the most severe blows which she gave the Spanish greatness, were owing to those naval enterprizes, which either she or her subjects scarce ever intermitted during one season. In 1594, Richard

¹ Camden, p. 586.

Hawkins, son to Sir John, the famous navigator, CHAP.
procured the Queens commission, and sailed with XLIII.
three ships to the South Sea by the straits of Magel-
lan: But his voyage proved unfortunate, and he him-
self was taken prisoner on the coast of Chili. James
Lancaster was supplied the same year with three
ships and a pinnace by the merchants of London;
and was more fortunate in his adventures. He took
thirty-nine ships of the enemy; and not contented
with this success, he made an attempt on Fernam-
bouc in Brazil, where, he knew, great treasures were
at that time lodged. As he approached the land,
he saw it lined with great numbers of the enemy;
but no wise daunted with this appearance, he plac-
ed the stoutest of his men in boats, and ordered them
to row with such violence against the shore as to split
them in pieces. By this bold action, he both de-
prived his men of all hopes of saving themselves but
by victory, and terrified the enemy, who fled after a
short resistance. He returned home safely with the
treasure, which he had so bravely acquired. In 1595,
Sir Walter Raleigh, who had a new forfeited the
Queen's friendship by an intrigue with one of the
maids of honour, and who had been confined in pri-
son for this misdemeanor, no sooner recovered his li-
berty than he was pushed by his active and enterpriz-
ing genius to attempt some great action. The success
of the first Spanish adventures against Mexico and Pe-
ru had begot an extreme avidity in Europe; and a pre-
possession universally took place, that in the inland
parts of South America, called Guiana, a country as
yet undiscovered there were mines and treasures and
riches far exceeding any thing which Cortes or Pizarro
had met with. Raleigh, whose turn of mind was some-
what romantic and extravagant, undertook at his own
charge the discovery of this wonderful country. Hav-
ing taken the small town of St. Joseph in the isle of
Trinidad, where he found no riches, he left his ship,
and

CHAP. and sailed up the river Oroonoko in pinnaces, but
 XLIII. without meeting any thing to answer his expectati-
 1597. ons. On his return he published an account of this
 country full of the greatest and most palpable lies,
 that were ever attempted to be imposed on the cre-
 dularity of mankind*.

THE same year, Sir Francis Drake and Sir John Hawkins undertook a more important expedition against the Spanish settlements in America, and they carried with them six ships of the Queen's and twenty more, which they had either fitted out at their own charges, or which were furnished them by private adventurers. Sir Thomas Baskerville was appointed commander of the land forces, which they carried on board. Their first design was to attempt Porto Rico, where, they knew, a rich carrack was at that time stationed; but as they had not preserved the requisite secrecy, a pinnace, having strayed from the fleet, was taken by the Spaniards, and betrayed the intentions of the English. Preparations were made in that island to receive them; and the English fleet, notwithstanding the brave assault, which they made on the enemy, was repulsed with loss. Hawkins soon after died; and Drake pursued his course to Nombre di Dios, on the isthmus of Darien; where, having landed his men, he attempted to pass forward to Panama, with a view of plundering that place, or, if he found such a scheme practicable, of keeping and fortifying it. But he met not with the same facility, which had attended his first enterprizes in these parts. The Spaniards, taught by experience, had every where fortified the passes, and had stationed troops in the woods; who so infested the English by continual alarms and skirmishes, that they were obliged to return, without being able to effectuate any thing. Drake himself, from the intemperance of the climate, from the fatigues of his journey, and from the vexation of his disappointment, was seized with a distemper, of

* Camden, p. 584.

which

which he soon after died. Sir Thomas Baskerville took the command of the fleet, which was in a very weak condition; and after having fought a battle near Cuba with a Spanish fleet, of which the event was not decisive, he returned to England. The Spaniards suffered some loss from this enterprize; but the English reaped no profit¹.

CHAP.

XLIII.

1597.

THE bad success of this enterprize in the Indies made the English rather attempt the Spanish dominions in Europe, where, they heard, Philip was making great preparations for a new invasion of England. A powerful fleet was equipped at Plymouth consisting of an hundred and seventy vessels, seventeen of which were capital ships of war; the rest tenders and small vessels: Twenty ships were added by the Hollanders. In this fleet there were computed to be six thousand three hundred and sixty soldiers, a thousand volunteers, and six thousand seven hundred and seventy-two seamen, beside the Dutch. The land forces were commanded by the earl of Essex. The navy by lord Effingham, high admiral. Both these commanders had expended great sums of their own in this armament: For such was the spirit of Elizabeth's reign. The lord Thomas Howard, Sir Walter Raleigh, Sir Francis Vere, Sir George Carew, and Sir Coniers Clifford had commands in this expedition, and were named as a council to the general and admiral^m.

THE fleet set sail on the first of June 1596; and meeting with a fair wind, bent their course to Cadiz, at which place, by sealed orders delivered to all the captains, the general rendezvous was appointed. They sent before them some armed tenders, which intercepted every ship, that could carry intelligence to the enemy; and they themselves were so fortunate when they came near Cadiz, as to take an Irish vessel, by which they learned, that that port was full of

¹ Monson, p. 167.^m Camden, p. 591.

and sailed up the river Oroonoko in pinnaces, but without meeting any thing to answer his expectations. On his return he published an account of this country full of the greatest and most palpable lies, that were ever attempted to be imposed on the credulity of mankind*.

THE same year, Sir Francis Drake and Sir John Hawkins undertook a more important expedition against the Spanish settlements in America, and they carried with them six ships of the Queen's and twenty more, which they had either fitted out at their own charges, or which were furnished them by private adventurers. Sir Thomas Baskerville was appointed commander of the land forces, which they carried on board. Their first design was to attempt Porto Rico, where, they knew, a rich carrack was at that time stationed; but as they had not preserved the requisite secrecy, a pinnace, having strayed from the fleet, was taken by the Spaniards, and betrayed the intentions of the English. Preparations were made in that island to receive them; and the English fleet, notwithstanding the brave assault, which they made on the enemy, was repulsed with loss. Hawkins soon after died; and Drake pursued his course to Nombre di Dios, on the isthmus of Darien; where, having landed his men, he attempted to pass forward to Panama, with a view of plundering that place, or, if he found such a scheme practicable, of keeping and fortifying it. But he met not with the same facility, which had attended his first enterprizes in these parts. The Spaniards, taught by experience, had every where fortified the passes, and had stationed troops in the woods; who so infested the English by continual alarms and skirmishes, that they were obliged to return, without being able to effectuate any thing. Drake himself, from the intemperance of the climate, from the fatigues of his journey, and from the vexation of his disappointment, was seized with a distemper, of

* Camden, p. 584.

which

which he soon after died. Sir Thomas Baskerville CHAP.
XLIII.
took the command of the fleet, which was in a very
weak condition; and after having fought a battle near
Cuba with a Spanish fleet, of which the event was
not decisive, he returned to England. The Spaniards
suffered some loss from this enterprize; but the Eng-
lish reaped no profit¹.

1597.

THE bad success of this enterprize in the Indies made the English rather attempt the Spanish dominions in Europe, where, they heard, Philip was making great preparations for a new invasion of England. A powerful fleet was equipped at Plymouth consisting of an hundred and seventy vessels, seventeen of which were capital ships of war; the rest tenders and small vessels: Twenty ships were added by the Hollanders. In this fleet there were computed to be six thousand three hundred and sixty soldiers, a thousand volunteers, and six thousand seven hundred and seventy-two seamen, beside the Dutch. The land forces were commanded by the earl of Essex. The navy by lord Effingham, high admiral. Both these commanders had expended great sums of their own in this armament: For such was the spirit of Elizabeth's reign. The lord Thomas Howard, Sir Walter Raleigh, Sir Francis Vere, Sir George Carew, and Sir Coniers Clifford had commands in this expedition, and were named as a council to the general and admiral^m.

THE fleet set sail on the first of June 1596; and meeting with a fair wind, bent their course to Cadiz, at which place, by sealed orders delivered to all the captains, the general rendezvous was appointed. They sent before them some armed tenders, which intercepted every ship, that could carry intelligence to the enemy; and they themselves were so fortunate when they came near Cadiz, as to take an Irish vessel, by which they learned, that that port was full of

¹ Monson, p. 167.

^m Camden, p. 591.

CHAP. merchant ships of great value, and that the Spaniards
 XLIII. lived in perfect security, without any apprehensions
 of an enemy. This intelligence much encouraged
 1597. the English fleet, and gave them the prospect of a
 fortunate issue to that enterprize.

AFTER a fruitless attempt to land at St. Sebastians on the western side of the island of Cadiz; it was, upon deliberation, resolved by the council of war to attack the ships and gallies in the bay. This attempt was deemed very rash; and the lord admiral himself, who was cautious in his temper, had entertained great scruples with regard to it: But Essex strenuously urged the enterprize; and when he found the resolution at last taken, he threw his hat into the sea, and gave symptoms of the most extravagant joy. He felt, however, a great mortification, when Effingham informed him, that the Queen, who was anxious for his safety, and who dreaded the effects of his youthful ardour, had secretly given orders, that he should not be permitted to command the van in the attackⁿ. That duty was performed by Sir Walter Raleigh and the lord Thomas Howard; but Essex no sooner came within reach of the enemy, than he forgot the promise which the admiral had exacted of him to keep in the midst of the fleet; He broke thro' and pressed forward into the thickest of the fire. Emulation for glory, avidity of plunder, animosity against the Spaniards proved incentives to every one; and the enemy were soon obliged to slip anchor, and retreat farther into the bay, where they ran many of their ships aground. Essex then landed his men at the fort of Puntal; and immediately marched to the attack of Cadiz, which the impetuous valour of the English soon carried sword in hand. The generosity of Essex, which was not inferior to his valour, made him stop the slaughter, and treat his prisoners with the greatest humanity, and even affability and

ⁿ Monson, p. 196.

kindness. The English made rich plunder in the city; but missed of a much richer by the resolution, which the duke of Medina, the Spanish admiral took, of setting fire to the ships, in order to prevent their falling into the hands of the enemy. It was computed, that the loss, which the Spaniards sustained in this enterprize, amounted to twenty millions of ducats^o; besides the indignity, which that proud and ambitious people received, from the taking one of their chief cities, and destroying in their harbour a fleet of such force and value.

C H A P.
XLIII.

1597.

Essex, all on fire for glory, regarded this great success only as a step to future achievements: He insisted on the keeping possession of Cadiz, and he undertook with four hundred men and three months provisions, to defend the place till succours should arrive from England. But all the other seamen and soldiers were satisfied with the honour which they had acquired; and were impatient to return home, in order to secure their plunder. Every other proposal of Essex to annoy the enemy, met with a like reception; his scheme for intercepting the carracks at the Azores, for assaulting the Groyne, for taking St. Andero, and St. Sebastian: And the English, finding so great difficulty to drag this impatient warrior from the enemy, at last left him on the Spanish coast, attended with very few ships. He complained much to the Queen, of their want of spirit in this enterprize; nor was she pleased, that they had returned without attempting to intercept the Indian fleet^r; but the great success in the enterprize on Cadiz, had covered all their miscarriages: And that princess, tho' she admired the lofty genius of Essex, could not forbear expressing an esteem for the other officers^q. The admiral was created earl of Nottingham; and his promotion gave great disgust to Essex^r. In the pre-

^o Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 97.

^p Ibid. p. 121.

^q Camden, p. 593.

^r Sydney Papers, vol. ii. 77.

CHAP. amble of the patent it was said, that the new dignity
 XLIII. ty was conferred on him, on account of his good
 1597. services in taking Cadiz, and destroying the Spanish
 ships; a merit which Essex pretended to belong solely
 to himself: And he offered to maintain this plea
 by single combat against the earl of Nottingham, or
 his sons, or any of his kindred.

THE achievements in the subsequent year proved
 not so fortunate; but, as the Indian fleet very narrowly
 escaped the English, Philip had still reason to see
 the great hazard and disadvantage of that war in
 which he was engaged, and the superiority which the
 English, by their naval power, and their situation,
 had acquired over him. The Queen, having received
 intelligence, that the Spaniards, tho' their fleets were
 so much shattered and destroyed, by the expedition
 at Cadiz, were preparing a squadron at Ferrol and
 the Groyne, and were marching troops thither, with
 a view of making an invasion on Ireland, was re-
 solved to prevent their enterprize, and to destroy the
 shipping in these harbours. She prepared a large fleet
 of a hundred and twenty sail, of which seventeen
 were her own ships, forty-three were smaller vessels,
 and the rest tenders and victuallers: She embarked
 on board this fleet five thousand new-levied soldiers,
 and added a thousand veteran troops, whom Sir Fran-
 cis Vere brought from the Netherlands. The earl
 of Essex, commander in chief, both of the land and
 sea forces, was at the head of one squadron; Lord
 Thomas Howard was appointed vice-admiral of ano-
 ther; Sir Walter Raleigh of the third: Lord Mount-
 joy commanded the land forces under Essex; Vere
 was appointed marshal; Sir George Carew lieutenant
 of the ordnance, and Sir Christopher Blount first co-
 lonel. The earls of Rutland and Southampton, the
 lords Grey, Cromwel, and Rich, with several other
 persons of distinction, attended as volunteers. Essex
 declared his resolution, either to destroy the new Ar-
 mada,

mada, which threatned England, or to perish in the attempt. CHAP.
XLIII.

THIS powerful fleet set sail from Plymouth; but were no sooner out of the harbour than they met with a furious storm, which shattered and dispersed them; and before they could be refitted, Essex found, that their provisions were so far spent, that it would not be safe to carry so numerous an army along with him. He dismissed, therefore, all the soldiers, except the thousand veterans under Vere; and laying aside all thoughts of attacking Ferrol or the Groyne, he confined the object of his expedition to the intercepting the Indian fleet; which had at first been considered only as the second enterprize which he was to attempt. 1597.
9th July.

THE Indian fleet, in that age, by reason of the imperfection of navigation, had a stated course, as well as season, both in their going out and in their return; and there were certain islands, at which, as at fixed stages, they always touched, and where they took in water and provisions. The Azores, being one of these places where, about this time, the fleet was expected, Essex bent his course thither; and he informed Raleigh, that he, on his arrival, intended to attack Fayal, one of these islands. By some accident the squadrons were separated; and Raleigh arriving first before Fayal, thought it more prudent, after waiting some time for the general, to begin the attack alone, lest the inhabitants should, by farther delay, have leisure to make greater preparations for their defence. He succeeded in the enterprize; but Essex jealous of Raleigh, expressed great displeasure at this conduct, and construed it as an intention of robbing the general of the glory which attended that action: He cashiered, therefore, Sydney, Bret, Berry, and others, who had concurred in the attempt; and would have proceeded to inflict the same punishment on Raleigh himself, had not lord Thomas Howard interposed with his good offices, and persuaded

CHAP
XLIII.

1597.

persuaded Raleigh, tho' very high-spirited, to make submissions to the general. Essex, who was placable, as well as hasty and passionate, was soon appeased, and both received Raleigh into favour, and restored the other officers to their commands*. This incident, however, tho' the quarrel was seemingly accommodated, laid the first foundation of that violent animosity which afterwards took place between these two gallant commanders.

Essex made next a disposition proper for intercepting the Indian galleons; and Sir William Monson, whose station was the most remote of the fleet, having fallen in with them, made the signals which had been agreed on. That able officer here ascribes Essex's failure of success, when he was so near attaining so mighty an advantage, to his want of experience in seamanship; and the account which he gives of the errors committed by that nobleman, appears very reasonable as well as candid†. The Spanish fleet, finding that their enemy was upon them, made all the sail possible to the Terceras, and got into the safe and well fortified harbour of Angra, before the English fleet could overtake them. Essex intercepted only three ships; which, however, were so rich as to repay all the charges of the expedition.

THE causes of this miscarriage of Essex's enterprise, were much canvassed in England, upon the return of the fleet; and tho' the courtiers took party differently, as they affected either Essex or Raleigh, the people, in general, who bore an extreme affection to the gallantry, spirit, and generosity of the former, were inclined to justify every circumstance of his conduct. The Queen, who loved the one as much as she esteemed the other, maintained a kind of neutrality, and endeavoured to share her favours with an impartial hand between the parties. Sir Robert Cecil, second son to lord Burleigh, was a courtier

* Monson, p. 173.

† Ibid. p. 174.

of very promising hopes, much connected with Raleigh; and she made him secretary of state, instead of Sir Thomas Bodley, whom Essex recommended for that office. But not to disgust Essex by this preference, she promoted him to the dignity of earl marshal of England, an office which had been vacant ever since the death of the earl of Shrewsbury. Essex might perceive from this conduct, that she never intended to give him the entire ascendant over his rivals, and might learn thence the necessity of moderation and caution. But his temper was too high for submission; his behaviour too open and candid to practice the arts of a court; and his free sallies, while they rendered him only more amiable in the eyes of good judges, gave his enemies many advantages against him.

THE war with Spain, tho' successful, having exhausted the Queen's treasure, she was obliged to assemble a Parliament; where Yelverton, a lawyer, was chosen speaker of the house of commons^a. Elizabeth

^a It is usual for the speaker to disqualify himself for the office; but the reasons employed by this speaker are so singular, that they may be worth transcribing. "My estate," said he, "is no-
" thing correspondent for the maintenance of this dignity: For
" my father dying left me a younger brother; and nothing to me
" but my bare annuity. Then growing to man's estate and some
" some small practice of the law, I took a wife, by whom I have
" had many children; the keeping of us all being a great im-
" poverishing to my estate, and the daily living of us all nothing
" but my daily industry. Neither from my person nor my na-
" ture doth this choice arise: For he that supplieth this place
" ought to be a man big and comely, stately, and well spoken,
" his voice great, his carriage majestic, his nature haughty, and
" his purse plentiful and heavy: But contrarily, the stature of my
" body is small, myself not so well spoken, my voice low, my car-
" riage lawyer-like, and of the common fashion, my nature soft
" and bashful, my purse, thin, light, and never yet plentiful.—
" If *Demosthenes*, being so learned and eloquent as he was, one
" whom none surpassed, trembled to speak before *Phocion* at *A-*
" *thens*; how much more shall I, being unlearned and unskillful
" to supply the place of dignity, charge, and trouble, to speak
" before so many *Phocions* as here be? Yea, which is the great-
" est, before the unspeakable majesty and sacred personage of our
" dread and dear sovereign: The terror of whose countenance
" will appal and abase even the stoutest hearts; yea, whose very
" took

CHAP.
XLIII.

1597.

24th Oc-
tober.

CHAP.

XLIII.

1597.

took care, by the mouth of Sir Thomas Egerton, lord keeper, to inform this assembly of the necessity of a supply. She said, that the wars formerly waged in Europe, had commonly been conducted by the parties without farther view than to gain a few towns, or at most a province from each other; but the object of the present hostilities, on the part of Spain, was no other than utterly to bereave England of her religion, her liberty, and her independance: That these blessings, however she had hitherto been enabled to preserve, in spite of the devil, the pope, and the Spanish tyrant, and all the mischievous designs of all her enemies: That in this contest she had disbursed a sum treble to all the parliamentary supplies granted her; and besides expending her ordinary revenues, had been obliged to sell many of the crown lands: And that she could not doubt but her subjects, in a cause where their own honour and interest were so deeply concerned, would willingly contribute to such moderate taxations as would be found necessary for their common defence*. The commons granted her three subsidies and six fifteenths; the same supply which had been given four years before, but which had then appeared so unusual, that they had voted it should never afterwards be regarded as a precedent.

THE commons, this session, ventured to engage in two controversies about forms with the house of peers; a prelude to those encroachments which, as they assumed more courage, they afterwards made upon the prerogatives of the crown. They complained, that the lords failed in civility to them, by receiving their messages sitting with their hats on; and that the keeper returned an answer in the same negligent posture:

“name will pull down the greatest courage. For how mightily
“do the estate and name of a prince deject the haughtiest sto-
“mach even of their greatest subjects?” D'Ewes, p. 459.

* D'Ewes, p. 525, 527. Townsend, p. 79.

But

1597.

But the upper house proved, to their full satisfaction, that they were not intitled by custom, and the usage of Parliament, to any more respect ^r. Some amendments had been made by the lords, to a bill sent up by the commons; and these amendments were wrote on parchment, and returned with the bill to the commons. The lower house took umbrage at the novelty: They pretended, that these amendments ought to have been wrote on paper, not on parchment; and they complained of this innovation to the peers. The peers replied, that they expected not such a frivolous objection from the gravity of the house; and that it was not material, whether the amendments were wrote on parchment or paper, nor whether the paper was white, black, or brown. The commons were offended with this reply, which seemed to maintain a mockery of them; and they complained of it, tho' without obtaining any satisfaction ^z.

AN application was made, by way of petition, to the Queen, from the lower house, against monopolies; an abuse which had risen to an enormous height; and they received a gracious, tho' a general answer; for which they returned their thankful acknowledgments ^a. But not to give them too great encouragement in such applications, she told them, in the speech which she delivered at their dissolution, "That with regard to these patents, she hoped, that her dutiful and loving subjects would not take away her prerogative, which is the chief flower in her garden, and the principal and head pearl in her crown and diadem; but that they would rather leave these matters to her disposal ^b." The commons also took notice, this session, of some transactions in the court of high

^r D'Ewes, p. 539, 540, 580, 585. Townsend, p. 93, 94, 95.

^z D'Ewes, p. 576, 577.

^a Ibid. p. 570, 573.

^b Ibid. p. 547.

CHAP. commission; but not till they had previously received
XLIII. permission from her majesty to that purpose^c.

1598.

ELIZABETH had reason to foresee, that parliamentary supplies would now become more necessary to her than ever; and that the chief burthen of the war with Spain would thenceforth lie on England. Henry had received an overture for a peace with Philip; but before he would proceed to a negotiation, he gave intelligence of it to his allies the Queen and the States; that, if possible, a general pacification might be made by common consent and agreement. These two powers sent ambassadors to France, in order to remonstrate against peace with Spain; the Queen, Sir Robert Cecil, and Henry Herbert; the States, Justin Nassau, and John Barnevelt. Henry said to these ministers, that his most early education had been amidst war and danger, and he had passed the whole course of his life either in arms or in military preparations: That after the proofs which he had given of his alacrity in the field, no one could doubt, but he would willingly, for his part, have continued in a course of life, to which he was now habituated, till the common enemy was reduced to such a condition as no longer to give umbrage either to him or his allies: That no private interest of his own, not even that of his people, nothing but the most inevitable necessity, could ever induce him to think of a separate peace with Philip, or make him embrace measures which were not entirely formed with the approbation of all his confederates: That his kingdom, torne with the convulsions and civil wars of near half a century, required some interval of repose, ere it could reach a condition in which it might sustain itself, much more support its allies: That after the minds of his subjects were composed to tranquillity and accustomed to obedience, after his finances were brought into or-

^c D'Ewes, p. 557, 558.

der, and after agriculture and the arts were restored, France, instead of being a burthen, as at present, to her confederates, would be able to lend them effectual succours, and amply to repay them all the assistance which she had received during her calamities: And that if the ambition of Spain would not at present grant them such terms as they should think reasonable, he hoped, that, in a little time, he should attain such a situation as would enable him to mediate more effectually, and with more decisive authority, in their behalf.

CHAP.
XLIII.

1598.

THE ambassadors were sensible, that these reasons were not feigned; and they therefore remonstrated with the less vehemence against the measures which, they saw, Henry was determined to pursue. The States knew, that that monarch was interested never to permit their final ruin; and having received private assurances, that he would still, notwithstanding the peace, give them assistance both of men and money, they were well pleased to remain on terms of amity with him. His greatest concern was to give satisfaction to Elizabeth for this breach of treaty. He had a cordial esteem for that princess, a sympathy of manners, and a gratitude for the extraordinary favours which he had received from her, during his greatest difficulties: And he used every expedient to apologize and atone for that measure, which necessity extorted from him. But as Spain refused to treat with the Dutch as a free state, and Elizabeth would not negotiate without her ally, Henry found himself obliged to conclude, at Vervins, a separate peace, by which he recovered possession of all the places seized by Spain during the course of the civil wars, and procured himself leisure to attend to the domestic settlement of his kingdom. His capacity for the arts of peace were not inferior to his military talents; and, in a little time, by his frugality, order, and wise government, he raised France, from the desolation and misery in which she was at present involved, to a

Peace of
Vervins.

CHAP. more flourishing condition than she had ever before
XLIII. enjoyed.

1598.

THE Queen knew, that it would be also in her power, whenever she pleased, to conclude the war on equitable terms, and that Philip, having no pretensions upon her, would be glad to free himself from an enemy who had foiled him in every contest, and who had it still so much in her power to make him feel the weight of her arms. Some of her wisest counsellors, particularly the lord treasurer, advised her to embrace pacific measures; and set before her the advantages of tranquillity, security, and frugality, as more considerable than any success which could attend the greatest victories. But that high-spirited princess, though she was at first averse to the war, seemed now to have attained such an ascendant over the enemy, that she was unwilling to stop the course of her prosperous fortune. She considered, that her situation, and her past victories, had given her entire security against any dangerous invasion; and the war must henceforth be conducted by sudden enterprizes, and naval expeditions, in which she possessed an undoubted superiority: That the weak condition of Philip in the Indies opened to her the view of the most desirable advantages; and the yearly return of his treasure by sea, afforded a continual prospect of important, though more temporary successes: That, after his peace with France, if she also should consent to an accommodation, he would be able to turn all his force against the revolted provinces of the Netherlands, which, though they had surprizingly increased their power by commerce and good government, were still unable, if not supported by their confederates, to maintain the war against so mighty a monarchy: And that as her defence of that commonwealth was the original ground of the quarrel, it was unsafe, as well as dishonourable, to abandon
their

their cause, till she had placed them in a state of greater security. CHAP.
XLIII.

THESE reasons were frequently inculcated on her by the earl of Essex, whose passion for glory, as well as his military talents, made him earnestly desire the continuance of that war from which he expected to reap so much advantage and distinction. The rivalry between this nobleman and lord Burleigh, made each of them insist the more strenuously on his own councils; and as Essex's person was agreeable to the Queen, as well as his advice conformable to her inclinations, the favourite seemed daily to acquire an ascendant over the minister. Had he been endowed with caution and self-command, equal to his shining qualities, he would have so riveted himself in the Queen's confidence, that none of his enemies had ever been able to impeach his credit: But his lofty spirit could ill submit to that implicit deference which her temper required, and which she had ever been accustomed to receive from all her subjects. Being once engaged in a dispute with her about the choice of a governor for Ireland, he was so heated in the argument, that he entirely forgot the rules both of duty and civility; and turned his back upon her in a contemptuous manner. Her anger, which was naturally prompt and violent, rose at this provocation; and she instantly gave him a box on the ear; adding a passionate expression, suited to his impertinence. Instead of recollecting himself, and making the submission due to her sex and station, he clapped his hand to his sword, and swore he would not bear such usage, were it from Henry the eighth himself; and, in a great passion, he immediately withdrew from the court. Eger-ton, the chancellor, who loved Essex, exhorted him to repair his indiscretion by proper acknowledgements; and entreated him not to give that triumph to his enemies, that affliction to his friends, which must en-
sue

1598.

CHAP.
XLIII.

1598.

sue by his supporting a contest with his sovereign, and deserting the service of his country: But Essex was deeply stung with the dishonour which he had received; and seemed to think, that an insult, which might be pardoned a woman, was become a mortal affront when it came from his sovereign. "If the vilest of all indignities," said he, "is done me, does religion enforce me to sue for pardon? Doth God require it? Is it impiety not to do it? Why? Cannot princes err? Cannot subjects receive wrong? Is an earthly power infinite? Pardon me, my lord, I can never subscribe to these principles. Let Solomon's fool laugh when he is stricken; let those that mean to make their profit of princes, shew no sense of princes' injuries: Let them acknowledge an infinite absoluteness on earth, that do not believe an absolute Infiniteness in heaven." (alluding, probably, to the character and conduct of Sir Walter Raleigh, who lay under the reproach of impiety) "As for me," continued he, "I have received wrong, I feel it: My cause is good, I know it; and whatsoever happens, all the powers on earth can never exert more strength and constancy in oppressing, than I can shew in suffering every thing that can or shall be imposed upon me. Your lordship, in the beginning of your letter, makes me a player, and yourself a looker on: And me a player of my own game, so you may see more than I: But give me leave to tell you, that since you do but see, and I do suffer, I must of necessity feel more than you^d."

^d Cabbala, p. 234. Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 386. Speed, p. 877. The whole letter is so curious and so spirited, that the reader may not be displeased to read it. "My very good lord; 'Tho' there is not that man this day living, whom I would sooner make judge of any question that might concern me than yourself, yet you must give me leave to tell you, that in some cases I must appeal from all earthly judges: And if in any, then surely in this, when the highest judge on earth has imposed on me the heaviest punishment without trial or hearing. Since then I must either answer your lordship's argument, or else forsake mine own just defence, I will force mine aching

THIS

THIS spirited letter was shown by Essex to his friends; and they were so imprudent as to disperse co-

CHAP.
XLIII.

1598.

“ head to do me service for an hour. I must first deny my discontent, which was forced, to be an humorous discontent; and that it was unseasonable or is of so long continuing, your lordship should rather condole with me than expostulate: Natural seasons are expected here below; but violent and unreasonable storms come from above; There is no tempest equal to the passionate indignation of a prince; nor yet at any time so unseasonable as when it lighteth on those that might expect a harvest of their careful and painful labours. He that is once wounded, must needs feel smart, till his hurt is cured, or the part hurt become senseless: But cure I expect none, her majesty's heart being obdurate against me; and be without sense I cannot, being of flesh and blood. But, say you, I may aim at the end: I do more than aim; for I see an end of all my fortunes, I have set an end to all my desires. In this course do I any thing for mine enemies? When I was at court, I found them absolute; and therefore, I had rather they should triumph alone, than have me attendant upon their chariots. Or do I leave my friends? When I was a courtier, I could yield them no fruit of my love unto them; and now, that I am a hermit, they shall bear no envy for their love towards me. Or do I forsake myself, because I do enjoy myself? Or do I overthrow my fortunes, because I build not a fortune of paper walls, which every puff of wind bloweth down? Or do I ruin mine honour, because I leave following the pursuit, or wearing the false badge or mark of the shadow of honour? Do I give courage or comfort to the foreign foe, because I reserve myself to encounter with him? Or because I keep my heart from business, tho' I cannot keep my fortune from declining? No, no, my good lord, I give every one of these considerations its due weight; and the more I weigh them, the more I find myself justified from offending in any of them. As for the two last objections, that I forsake my country, when it hath most need of me, and fail in that indissoluble duty which I owe to my sovereign; I answer, that if my country had at this time any need of my public service, her majesty, that governeth it, would not have driven me to a private life. I am tied to my country by two bonds; one public, to discharge carefully and industriously that trust which is committed to me; the other private, to sacrifice for it my life and carcase, which hath been nourished in it. Of the first I am free, being dismissed, discharged, and disabled by her majesty: Of the other, nothing can free me but death; and therefore no occasion of my performance shall sooner offer itself but I shall meet it half way. The indissoluble duty which I owe unto her majesty, is only the duty of allegiance, which I never have, nor ever can fail in: The duty of

pies

CHAP.
XLIII.

1598.

4 August.

pies of it: Yet notwithstanding this additional provocation, the Queen's partiality was so prevalent, that she reinstated him in his former favour; and her kindness to him appeared rather to have acquired new force from that short interruption of anger and resentment. The death of lord Burleigh, his antagonist, which happened about this time, seemed to ensure him a constant possession of the Queen's confidence; and nothing indeed but his own indiscretion could thenceforth have shaken his well established credit. Lord Burleigh died in an advanced age; and by a rare fortune, was equally regretted by his sovereign and the people. He had risen gradually from small beginnings, by the mere force of merit; and though his authority was never entirely absolute, or uncontrouled with the Queen, he was still, during a course of near forty years, regarded as her principal minister. None of her other inclinations or affections could ever overcome her confidence in so useful a counsellor; and as he had had the generosity or good sense to pay assiduous court to her, during her sister's reign, when

" attendance, is no indissoluble duty. I owe her majesty the duty
" of an earl and of a lord marshal of England. I have been con-
" tent to do her majesty the service of a clerk; but I can never
" serve her as a villain or a slave. But yet you say I must give
" way unto the time. So I do, for now that I see the storm come,
" I have put myself into the harbour. *Seneca* saith, we must
" give way to Fortune: I know that Fortune is both blind and
" strong, and therefore I go as far as I can out of her way. You
" say, the remedy is not to strive: I neither strive nor seek for
" remedy. But, you say, I must yield and submit: I can neither
" yield myself to be guilty, nor allow the imputation laid up-
" on me to be just: I owe so much to the Author of all truth,
" as I can never yield truth to be falsehood, nor falsehood to be
" truth. Have I given cause, you ask; and yet take a scandal
" when I have done? No: I gave no cause, not so much as *Fim-*
" *bria's* complaint against me; for I did *totum telum corpore re-*
" *cipere*: Receive the whole sword into my body. I patiently
" bear all, and sensibly feel all that I then received, when this
" scandal was given me. Nay more, when the vilest of all in-
" dignities are done unto me," &c. This noble letter, Bacon af-
" terwards, in pleading against Essex, called bold and presumptuous,
" and derogatory to her majesty. Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 388.

it

it was dangerous to appear her friend, she thought herself bound in gratitude, when she mounted the throne, to persevere in her attachments to him. He seems not to have possessed any shining talents of address, eloquence, or imagination; and was chiefly distinguished by solidity of understanding, probity of manners, and indefatigable application in business: Virtues, which, if they do not always enable a man to rise to high stations, do certainly qualify him best for filling them. Of all the Queen's ministers he was the only one who left a considerable fortune to his posterity; a fortune not acquired by rapine or oppression, but gained by the regular profits of his offices, and preserved by frugality.

CHAP. XLIII.

1599.

THE last act of this able minister was the concluding a new treaty with the Dutch; who, after being, in some measure, deserted by the King of France, were glad to preserve the Queen's alliance, by submitting to any terms which she pleased to require of them. The debt which they owed the Queen, was now fixed at eight hundred thousand pounds: Of this sum they agreed to pay, during the war, thirty thousand pounds a year; and these payments were to continue till four hundred thousand pounds of the debt should be extinguished. They engaged also, during the time that England should continue the war with Spain, to pay the garrison of the cautionary towns. They stipulated, that, if Spain should invade England, or the Isle of Wight, or Jersey, or Scilly, they should assist her with a body of five thousand foot, and five hundred horse; and that in case she undertook any naval armament against Spain, they should join an equal number of ships to hers*. By this treaty the Queen was eased of an annual charge of an hundred and twenty thousand pounds.

* Rymer, vol. xvi. p. 340.

CHAP.
XLIII.

1598.

4 August.

pies of it: Yet notwithstanding this additional provocation, the Queen's partiality was so prevalent, that she reinstated him in his former favour; and her kindness to him appeared rather to have acquired new force from that short interruption of anger and resentment. The death of lord Burleigh, his antagonist, which happened about this time, seemed to ensure him a constant possession of the Queen's confidence; and nothing indeed but his own indiscretion could thenceforth have shaken his well established credit. Lord Burleigh died in an advanced age; and by a rare fortune, was equally regretted by his sovereign and the people. He had risen gradually from small beginnings, by the mere force of merit; and though his authority was never entirely absolute, or uncontrouled with the Queen, he was still, during a course of near forty years, regarded as her principal minister. None of her other inclinations or affections could ever overcome her confidence in so useful a counsellor; and as he had had the generosity or good sense to pay assiduous court to her, during her sister's reign, when

"attendance, is no indissoluble duty. I owe her majesty the duty
 "of an earl and of a lord marshal of England. I have been con-
 "tent to do her majesty the service of a clerk; but I can never
 "serve her as a villain or a slave. But yet you say I must give
 "way unto the time. So I do, for now that I see the storm come,
 "I have put myself into the harbour. *Seneca* saith, we must
 "give way to Fortune: I know that Fortune is both blind and
 "strong, and therefore I go as far as I can out of her way. You
 "say, the remedy is not to strive: I neither strive nor seek for
 "remedy. But, you say, I must yield and submit: I can neither
 "yield myself to be guilty, nor allow the imputation laid up-
 "on me to be just: I owe so much to the Author of all truth,
 "as I can never yield truth to be falsehood, nor falsehood to be
 "truth. Have I given cause, you ask; and yet take a scandal
 "when I have done? No: I gave no cause, not so much as *Fim-
 "bria's* complaint against me; for I did *totum telum corpore re-
 "cipere*: Receive the whole sword into my body. I patiently
 "bear all, and sensibly feel all that I then received, when this
 "scandal was given me. Nay more, when the vilest of all in-
 "dignities are done unto me," &c. This noble letter, Bacon af-
 "terwards, in pleading against Essex, called bold and presumptuous,
 "and derogatory to her majesty. Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 388.

it

it was dangerous to appear her friend, she thought herself bound in gratitude, when she mounted the throne, to persevere in her attachments to him. He seems not to have possessed any shining talents of address, eloquence, or imagination; and was chiefly distinguished by solidity of understanding, probity of manners, and indefatigable application in business: Virtues, which, if they do not always enable a man to rise to high stations, do certainly qualify him best for filling them. Of all the Queen's ministers he was the only one who left a considerable fortune to his posterity; a fortune not acquired by rapine or oppression, but gained by the regular profits of his offices, and preserved by frugality.

CHAP. XLIII.

1599.

THE last act of this able minister was the concluding a new treaty with the Dutch; who, after being, in some measure, deserted by the King of France, were glad to preserve the Queen's alliance, by submitting to any terms which she pleased to require of them. The debt which they owed the Queen, was now fixed at eight hundred thousand pounds: Of this sum they agreed to pay, during the war, thirty thousand pounds a year; and these payments were to continue till four hundred thousand pounds of the debt should be extinguished. They engaged also, during the time that England should continue the war with Spain, to pay the garri- son of the cautionary towns. They stipulated, that, if Spain should invade England, or the Isle of Wight, or Jersey, or Scilly, they should assist her with a body of five thousand foot, and five hundred horse; and that in case she undertook any naval armament against Spain, they should join an equal number of ships to hers^e. By this treaty the Queen was eased of an annual charge of an hundred and twenty thousand pounds.

^e Rymer, vol. xvi. p. 340.

CHAP. XLIII.
 1598. SOON after the death of Burleigh, the Queen, who regretted extremely the loss of so wise and faithful a minister, was informed of the death of her capital enemy, Philip the second; who, after languishing under many infirmities, expired in an advanced age at Madrid. This haughty prince, desirous of an accommodation with his revolted subjects in the Netherlands, but disdaining to make in his own name the concessions requisite for that purpose, had transferred to his daughter, married to the archduke Albert, the property of the Low Country provinces; but as it was not expected, that that princess could have any posterity, and as the reversion, in case of the failure of her issue, was still reserved to the crown of Spain, the States considered this deed only as the change of a name, and persisted with equal obstinacy in their resistance to the Spanish arms. The other states also of Europe made no distinction between the courts of Brussels and Madrid; and the secret opposition of France, as well as the avowed force of England, continued to operate against the progress of Albert, as it had done against that of Philip.

C H A P. XLIV.

State of Ireland.—Tyrone's rebellion.—Essex sent over to Ireland.—His ill success.—Returns to England.—Is disgraced.—His intrigues.—His insurrection.—His trial and execution.—French affairs.—Mountjoy's success in Ireland.—Defeat of the Spaniards and Irish.—A Parliament.—Tyrone's submission.—Queen's sickness.—And death.—And character.—Government, manners, commerce, arts, and learning.

TH^{O'} the dominion of the English over Ireland C H A P.
XLIV.
1599. had been established above four centuries, it may safely be affirmed, that their authority had hitherto been little more than nominal. The Irish princes and nobles divided among themselves, readily paid the exterior marks of obeisance to a power which they were not able to resist; but, as no durable force was ever kept on foot to retain them to their duty, they relapsed still into their former state of independance. Too weak to introduce order and obedience among the rude inhabitants, the English authority was yet sufficient to check the growth of any enterprizing genius among the natives: And tho' it could bestow no true form of civil government, it was able to prevent the rise of any such form, from the internal combination or policy of the Irish^a.

Most of the English institutions likewise, by which that island was governed, were to the last degree absurd, and such as no state before had ever thought of, for the preserving dominion over its conquered provinces.

^a Sir J. Davis, p. 5, 6, 7, &c.

THE English nation, all on fire for the project of subduing France, a project, whose success was the most improbable, and would to them have proved the most pernicious; neglected all other enterprizes, to which their situation so strongly invited them, and which in time, would have brought them an accession of riches, grandeur, and security. The small army which they maintained in Ireland, they never supplied regularly with pay; and as no money could be levied from the island, which possessed none, they gave their soldiers the privilege of free quarter upon the natives. Rapine and insolence inflamed the hatred, which prevailed between the conquerors and the conquered: Want of security among the Irish, introducing despair, nourished still farther the sloth, so natural to that uncultivated people.

BUT the English carried farther their ill-judged tyranny. Instead of inviting the Irish, to adopt the more civilized customs of their conquerors, they even refused, though earnestly solicited, to communicate to them the privilege of their laws, and every where marked them out as aliens and as enemies. Thrown out of the protection of justice, the natives could find no security but in force; and flying the neighbourhood of cities, which they could not approach with safety, they sheltered themselves in their marshes and forests from the insolence of their inhuman masters. Being treated like wild beasts, they became such; and joining the ardour of revenge to their yet untamed barbarity, they grew every day more intractable and dangerous^b.

As the English princes deemed the conquest of the dispersed Irish to be more the object of time and patience than the source of military glory, they willingly delegated that office to private adventurers, who in-

^b Sir J. Davis, p. 102, 103, &c.

lifting soldiers at their own charge, conquered provinces of that island, which they converted to their own profit. Separate jurisdictions and principalities were established by these lordly conquerors : The power of peace and war was assumed : Military law was exercised over the Irish, whom they subdued, and, by degrees, over the English, by whose assistance they conquered : And, after their dominion had once taken root, deeming the English institutions less favourable to barbarous empire, they degenerated into mere Irish, and abandoned the garb, language, manners and laws of their native country^c.

C H A P.

XLIV.

1599.

By all this imprudent conduct of England, the natives of its dependant state, remained still in that abject condition, into which the northern and western parts of Europe were sunk, before they received civility and slavery from the refined policy and irresistible bravery of Rome. Even at the end of the sixteenth century, when every christian nation was cultivating with ardour every civil art of life, that island, lying in a temperate climate, enjoying a fertile soil, accessible in its situation, possessed of innumerable harbours, was still, notwithstanding these advantages, inhabited by a people, whose customs and manners approached nearer those of savages than of barbarians.

As the brutality and ignorance of the Irish was extreme, they were sunk below the reach of that curiosity and love of novelty, by which every other people in Europe had been seized at the beginning of that century, and which had engaged them in innovations and religious disputes, with which they were still so violently agitated. The antient superstition, the practices and observances of their fathers, mingled and polluted with many wild opinions, still maintained an unshaken empire over them ; and the example alone of the English was

^c Sir J. Davis, p. 133, 134, &c.

CHAP.
XLIV.

1599.

sufficient to render the reformation odious to the prejudiced and discontented Irish. The old opposition of manners, laws, and interest, was now inflamed by religious antipathy; and the subduing and civilizing that country seemed to become every day more difficult and more impracticable.

THE animosity against the English was carried so far by the Irish, that, in an insurrection, raised by two sons of the earl of Clanricard, they put to the sword all the inhabitants of the town of Athenry, tho' Irish; because they began to conform themselves to English customs and institutions, and had embraced a more cultivated and civilized form of life, than had been practised by their barbarous ancestors^d.

THE usual revenue of Ireland amounted only to six thousand pounds a year^e: The Queen, though with much repining^f, commonly added twenty thousand more, which she remitted from England: And with this small revenue a body of one thousand men was supported, which, in extraordinary emergencies was augmented to two thousand^g. No wonder that a force, so disproportioned to the occasion, instead of subduing a mutinous kingdom, served rather to provoke the natives, and to excite those frequent insurrections and rebellions, which still farther inflamed the animosity between the two nations, and encreased the barbarity and disorders, to which the Irish were naturally subject.

IN 1560, Shan O'Neale, or the great O'Neale, as the Irish called him, because head of that potent clan, raised a rebellion in Ulster; and after some skirmishes, was received into favour, upon his submission, and his promise of a more dutiful behaviour for the future^h.

^d Camden, p. 457.
p. 86.

^e Memoirs of the Sidneys, vol. I.
^f Cox, p. 342. Sydney, vol. i. p. 85, 200.

^g Camden, p. 542. Sydney, vol. i. p. 65, 109, 183, 184.

^h Camden, p. 385, 391.

This impunity tempted him to undertake a new insurrection in 1567; but being pushed by Sir Henry Sidney, lord deputy, he retreated into Clandeboy, and rather than submit to the English, he put himself into the hands of some Scots islanders, who commonly infested those parts by their incursions. The Scots, who retained a quarrel against him on account of former injuries, violated the laws of hospitality, and murdered him in a festival, to which they had invited him. He was a man equally noted for his pride, his violences, his debaucheries, and his hatred of the English nation. He is said to have put some of his followers to death, because they endeavoured to introduce the use of bread after the English fashion¹. Tho' so violent an enemy to luxury, he was extremely addicted to riot; and was accustomed, after his intemperance had thrown him into a fever, to plunge his body into mire, that he might allay the flame, which he had raised by former excesses². Such was the life led by this haughty barbarian, who scorned the title of earl of Tyrone, which Elizabeth intended to have restored to him, and who assumed the rank and appellation of King of Ulster. He used also to say, that tho' the Queen was his sovereign lady, he never made peace with her but at her seeking³.

SIR Henry Sidney was one of the wisest and most active governors whom Ireland had enjoyed for several reigns⁴; and he possessed his authority eleven years; during which time, he struggled with many difficulties, and made some progress in repressing those disorders, which had become inveterate among that people. The earl of Desmond, in 1569, gave him disturbance from the hereditary animosity which prevailed between that nobleman and the earl of Ormond, who was descended

¹ Camden, p. 409.

² Ibid. p. 409. Cox, p. 324.

³ Ibid, p. 321.

⁴ Ibid. p. 350.

CHAP.
XLIV.

1599.

from the only family, established in Ireland, that had ever steddily maintained its loyalty to the English crownⁿ. The earl of Thomond, in 1570, attempted a rebellion in Connaught, but was obliged to fly into France, before his designs were ripe for execution. Stukely, another fugitive, found such credit with the pope, Gregory the 13th, that he flattered his holiness with the prospect of making his nephew, Buon Compagno, King of Ireland; and as if this project had already taken effect, he accepted the title of marquiss of Leinster from the new sovereign^o. He passed next into Spain; and after having received much encouragement and great rewards from Philip, who intended to make use of him as an instrument to disturb Queen Elizabeth, he was found to possess too little interest for executing those high promises, which he had made to that monarch. He retired into Portugal; and following the fortunes of Don Sebastian, he perished with that gallant prince in his bold but fatal expedition against the Moors.

LORD Gray succeeded Sydney in the government of Ireland; and, in 1579, suppressed a new rebellion of the earl of Desmond, though supported by a body of Spaniards and Italians. The rebellion of the Burks followed a few years after; occasioned by the strict and equitable administration of Sir Richard Bingham, governor of Connaught, who endeavoured to repress the tyranny of the chieftains over their vassals^p. The Queen, finding Ireland so burthensome to her, tried several expedients for reducing it to a state of greater order and submission. She encouraged the earl of Essex, father to that nobleman, who was afterwards her favourite, to attempt the subduing and planting Clondeboy, Ferny, and other territories, part of some late for-

ⁿ Camden, p. 424.
^p Stowe, p. 720.

^o Ibid. p. 430. Cox, p. 354.

feitures: But that enterprize proved unfortunate; and CHAP.
 Effex died of a distemper, occasioned, as is supposed, XLIV.
 by the vexation, which he had conceived, from his
 disappointments. An university was founded in Dub- 1599. 1
 lin with a view of introducing arts and learning into
 that kingdom, and civilizing the uncultivated manners
 of the inhabitants^a. But the most unhappy expedient,
 employed in the government of Ireland, was that
 made use of in 1585 by Sir John Perrot, at that time
 lord deputy: He put arms into the hands of the Irish
 inhabitants of Ulster, in order to enable them, with-
 out the assistance of the government, to repress the
 incursions of the Scots islanders, by which these parts
 were much infested^r. At the same time, the invita-
 tions of Philip, joined to their zeal for the catholic
 religion, engaged many of the gentry to serve in the
 Low Country wars; and thus Ireland, being provid-
 ed both of officers and soldiers, of discipline and arms,
 became formidable to the English, and was thence-
 forth able to maintain a more regular war against her
 antient masters.

HUGH O'Neale, nephew to Shan O'Neale, had Tyrone's
 been raised by the Queen to the dignity of earl of rebellion.
 Tyrone; but having murdered his cousin, son to
 that rebel, and being acknowledged head of his clan,
 he preferred the pride of barbarous licence and do-
 minion, to the pleasures of opulence and tranquilli-
 ty, and fomented all those disorders, by which he
 hoped to weaken or overturn the English govern-
 ment. He was noted for the vices of perfidy and
 cruelty, so common among uncultivated nations;
 and was also eminent for courage, a virtue, which
 their disorderly course of life requires, and which,
 notwithstanding, being unsupported by the principle
 of honour, is commonly more precarious among
 them, than among a civilized people. Tyrone, ac-
 tuated by this spirit, secretly fomented the discontents
 of the Maguires, Odonnels, O'Rourks, Macmahons,

^a Camden, p. 566.
 VOL. V.

^r Nanton's Fragmenta Regalia, p. 203.
 H h h and

CHAP. and other rebels; yet trusting to the influence of his
 XLIV. deceitful oaths and professions, he put himself into
 1599. the hands of Sir William Russel, who, in the year
 1594, was sent over lord deputy into Ireland. Con-
 trary to the advice and protestation of Sir Henry Bag-
 nal, marshal of the army, he was dismissed; and re-
 turning to his own country, he embraced the resolu-
 tion of raising an open rebellion, and of relying no
 longer on the lenity or inexperience of the English
 government. He entered into a correspondence with
 Spain: He procured thence a supply of arms and am-
 munition: And having united all the Irish chieftains
 in a dependance upon himself, he began to be re-
 garded as a formidable enemy.

THE native Irish were so miserably poor, that their
 country afforded few other commodities but cattle and
 oatmeal, which were easily destroyed or driven away
 on the approach of the enemy; and as Elizabeth was
 averse to the expence requisite for supporting her ar-
 mies, the English found much difficulty in pushing
 their advantages, and in pursuing the rebels into the
 bogs, woods, and other fastnesses, to which they retrea-
 ted. These motives made Sir John Norris, who com-
 manded the English army, the more ready to hearken
 to any proposals of truce or accommodation made him
 by Tyrone; and after the war was spun out by these
 artifices for some years, that gallant Englishman, find-
 ing that he had been deceived by treacherous promises,
 and that he had performed nothing worthy of his an-
 tient reputation, was seized with a languishing distem-
 per, and died of vexation and discontent. Sir Henry
 Bagnal, who succeeded him in the command, was still
 more unfortunate. As he advanced to relieve the fort
 of Black-water, besieged by the rebels, he was sur-
 rounded in disadvantageous ground; his soldiers, dis-
 couraged by part of their powder's accidentally taking
 fire, were put to flight; and tho' the pursuit was stopt
 by Montacute, who commanded the English horse,
 fifteen hundred men, together with the general him-
 self,

self, were left dead upon the spot. This victory, so unusual to the Irish, mightily raised their spirits, supplied them with arms and ammunition, and exalted the reputation of Tyrone, who assumed the character of the deliverer of his country, and patron of Irish liberty*.

CHAP.
XLIV.

1599.

THE English council were now sensible that the rebellion of Ireland was come to a dangerous head, and that the former temporizing arts, of granting truces and pacifications to the rebels, and of allowing them to purchase pardons by resigning part of the plunder, acquired during their insurrections, served only to encourage the spirit of mutiny and disorder among them. It was therefore resolved to push the war by more vigorous measures; and the Queen cast her eye on Charles Blount, lord Mountjoy, as a man, who, tho' hitherto less accustomed to arms than to books and literature, was endowed, she thought, with talents equal to that undertaking. But the young earl of Essex, ambitious of glory, and desirous of obtaining this government for himself, opposed the choice of Mountjoy; and represented the necessity of appointing, for that important employment, some person more experienced in war than this nobleman, more practised in business, and of higher quality and reputation. By this description he was understood to mean himself†; and no sooner was his desire known, to be possessed of that government, than his enemies, even more zealously than his friends, conspired to render his wishes effectual. Many of his friends thought, that he never ought to consent, except for a very short time, to accept of employments which must remove him from court, and prevent him from cultivating that personal inclination, which the Queen so visibly bore him‡. His enemies hoped, that if, by his absence, she had once leisure to forget the charms of his per-

* Cox. p. 415.

† Bacon, vol. iv. p. 512.

‡ Cabbala, p. 79.

CHAP.
XLIV.

1599.

Effex sent
over to
Ireland.

son and conversation, his impatient and lofty demeanour would soon disgust a princess, who usually exacted such profound submission and implicit obedience from all her servants. But Essex was incapable of entering into such cautious views; and even Elizabeth, who was extremely desirous of subduing the Irish rebels, and who was much prepossessed in favour of Essex's genius, readily agreed to appoint him governor of Ireland, under the title of lord lieutenant. The more to encourage him in his undertaking, she granted him by his patent more extensive authority than had ever before been conferred on any lieutenant; the power of carrying on or finishing the war as he pleased, of pardoning the rebels, and of filling all the most considerable employments of the kingdom*. And to ensure him of success, she levied a numerous army of sixteen thousand foot and thirteen hundred horse, which she afterwards augmented to twenty thousand foot and two thousand horse: A force, which, it was apprehended, would be able, in one campaign, to overwhelm the rebels, and make an entire conquest of Ireland. Nor did Essex's enemies, the earl of Nottingham, lord admiral, Sir Robert Cecil, secretary, Sir Walter Raleigh, and lord Cobham, throw any obstacles in the way of these preparations; but hoped, that the higher the Queen's expectations were raised of success, the more difficult it would be for the event to correspond to them. In a like view, they rather seconded, than opposed, those exalted encomiums, which Essex's numerous and sanguine friends dispersed, of his high genius, of his elegant endowments, his heroic courage, his unbounded generosity, and his noble birth; nor were they displeased to observe that passionate fondness, which the people every where expressed for this nobleman. These artful politicians had studied his character; and finding, that his open and undaunted

* Rymer, tom. xvi. p. 366.

spirit, if taught temper and reserve from opposition, CHAP.
must become invincible, they resolved rather to give XLIV.
full breath to those sails, which were already too much
expanded, and to push him upon dangers, of which 1599.
he seemed to make such small account^y. And the
better to make advantage of his indiscretions, spies
were set upon all his actions and even expressions;
and his vehement spirit, which, while he was in the
midst of the court and environed by his rivals, was
unacquainted with disguise, could not fail, after he
thought himself surrounded by none but friends, to
give a pretence for malignant suspicions and con-
structions.

ESSEX left London in the month of March, at-
tended by the acclamations of the populace, and what
did him more honour, accompanied by a numerous
train of nobility and gentry, who, from affection to
his person, had attached themselves to all his for-
tunes, and proposed to acquire fame and military ex-
perience under so renowned a commander. The first
act of authority, which he exercised, after his arri-
val in Ireland, was an indiscretion, but of the gene-
rous kind; and in both these respects, suitable to
his character. He appointed his intimate friend, the
earl of Southampton, general of the horse; a noble-
man, who had displeased the Queen by secretly mar-
rying without her consent, and whom she had there-
fore enjoined Essex not to employ in any command
under him. She no sooner heard of this instance of
disobedience than she reprimanded him, and order-
ed him to recal his commission to Southampton. But
Essex, who had imagined, that some reasons, which
he opposed to her first injunctions, had convinced her,
had the imprudence to remonstrate against these se-
cond orders^z; and it was not till she reiterated her com-
mands, that he could be prevailed on to displace his
friend.

^y Camden. Osborne, p. 371.
ii. p. 421, 451.

^z Birch's Memoirs, vol.

CHAP.
XLIV.

1599.
His ill
success.

Essex, on his landing at Dublin, had deliberated with the Irish council, concerning the proper methods of carrying on war against the rebels; and here he was guilty of a capital error, which was the ruin of his enterprize. He had always, while in England, blamed the conduct of former commanders, who artfully protracted the war, who harrassed their troops in small enterprizes, and who, by agreeing to truces and temporary pacifications with the rebels, had given them leisure to recruit their broken forces^a. In conformity to these views, he had ever insisted upon leading his forces immediately into Ulster against Tyrone, the capital enemy; and his instructions had been drawn agreeably to these his declared intentions and resolutions. But the Irish counsellors persuaded him, that the season was too early for the enterprize, and that as the morasses, in which the Irish usually sheltered themselves, would not, as yet, be passable to the English forces, it would be better to employ the present time in an expedition into Munster. Their secret reason for this advice was, that many of them possessed estates in that province, and were desirous to have the enemy dislodged from their neighbourhood^b: But the same selfish spirit, which had induced them to give this council, made them soon after disown it, when they found the bad consequences with which it was attended^c.

Essex obliged all the rebels of Munster either to submit or fly into the neighbouring provinces: But as the Irish, from the greatness of the Queen's preparations, had concluded, that she intended to reduce them to total subjection, or even utterly to exterminate them, they considered their present defence as a common cause; and the English forces were no sooner withdrawn, than the inhabitants of Munster relapsed into rebellion, and renewed their confederacy

^a Ibid. p. 431. Bacon vol. iv. p. 512.

^b Birch's Me-

moirs, vol. ii. p. 448.

^c Winwood, vol. i. p. 140.

with their other countrymen. The army, meanwhile, by the fatigue of long and tedious marches, and by the influence of the climate, was become extremely sickly; and on their return to Dublin, about the middle of July, were surprizingly diminished in number. Their courage was even much abated: For tho' they had prevailed in some lesser enterprizes, as against the lord Cahir and others; yet had they sometimes met with more stout resistance than they expected from the Irish, whom they were wont to despise; and as they were raw troops and unexperienced, a considerable body of them had been put to flight at the Glins, by an inferior number of the enemy. Essex was so enraged at this misbehaviour, that he cashiered all the officers, and decimated the private men*. But this instance of severity, tho' necessary, had intimidated the soldiers, and had increased their aversion to the present service.

THE Queen was extremely disgusted, when she heard, that so considerable a part of the season was consumed in these frivolous enterprizes; and was still more surprized, that Essex persevered in the same practice, which he had so much condemned in others, and which he knew to be so much contrary to her purpose and intention. That nobleman, in order to give his troops leisure to recruit from their sickness and fatigue, marched with a small body of fifteen hundred men into the county of Ophelie against the O'Connors and O'Mores, whom he forced to a submission: But on his return to Dublin, he found the army so extremely diminished, that he wrote to the English council an account of his condition, and informed them, that, if he received not immediately a reinforcement of two thousand men, it would be impossible for him this season to attempt any thing against Tyrone. That there might be no pretence for farther inactivity, the Queen immediately sent

* Cox, p. 421.

C H A P.
XLIV.

1599.

over the number demanded^e; and Essex began at last to assemble his forces for the expedition into Ulster. The army was so extremely averse to this enterprize, and terrified with the reputation of Tyrone, that many of them counterfeited sickness, many of them deserted^f; and Essex found, that after leaving the necessary garrisons, he could scarce lead four thousand men against the rebels. He marched, however, with this small army; but was soon sensible, that, in so advanced a season, it would be impossible for him to effectuate any thing against an enemy, who, tho' superior in number, were determined to avoid every decisive action. He hearkened, therefore, to a message sent him by Tyrone, who desired a conference; and a place, near the two camps, was accordingly appointed. The generals met without any of their attendants, and a river ran between them, into which Tyrone entered to the depth of his saddle: But Essex stood on the opposite bank. After half an hours conference, where Tyrone behaved with great submission and respect to the lord lieutenant, a cessation of arms was concluded to the first of May, renewable from six weeks to six weeks; but which might be broke off by either party upon a fortnight's warning^g. Essex also received from Tyrone proposals for a peace, in which that rebel had inserted many unreasonable and exorbitant conditions: and there appeared afterwards some reason to suspect, that he had here commenced a very unjustifiable correspondence with the enemy^h.

So unexpected an issue of an enterprize, the greatest and most expensive which Elizabeth had ever undertaken, provoked her extremely against Essex; and this disgust was much augmented by other circumstances of that nobleman's conduct. He wrote many letters to the Queen and council, full of peevish and impa-

^e Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 430. Cox, p. 421.

Sydney's Letters, vol. ii. p. 112, 113.

^g Ibid. p. 125.

^h Winwood, vol. i. p. 307. State Trials. Bacon, vol. iv. p. 514, 535, 537.

tient expressions; complaining of his enemies, lamenting that their calumnies should be believed against him, and discovering symptoms of a mind, equally haughty and discontented. She took care to inform him of her dissatisfaction; but commanded him to remain in Ireland till farther orders.

CHAP.
XLIV.

1599.

ESSEX heard at once of Elizabeth's anger, and of the promotion of his enemies, Sir Robert Cecil, to the office of master of the wards, an office which he himself aspired to: And dreading, that, if he remained any longer absent, the Queen would be totally alienated from him, he hastily embraced a resolution, which, he knew, had once succeeded with the earl of Leicester, the former favourite of Elizabeth. Leicester being informed, while in the Low Countries, that his mistress was extremely displeased with his conduct, disobeyed her orders by coming over into England; and having pacified her by his presence, by his apologies, and by his flattery and insinuation, disappointed all the expectations of his enemiesⁱ. Essex, therefore, weighing more the similarity of circumstances than the difference of characters between himself and Leicester, immediately set out for England; and making speedy journeys, he arrived at court before any one was in the least apprized of his intentions^k. Tho' besmeared with dirt and sweat, he hastened up stairs to the presence chamber, thence to the privy-chamber; nor stopped till he was in the Queen's bed chamber, who was newly risen, and was sitting with her hair about her face. He threw himself on his knees, kissed her hand, and had some private conference with her; where he was so graciously received, that, on his departure, he was heard to express great satisfaction, and to thank God, that, tho' he had suffered much trouble and many storms abroad, he found a sweet calm at home^l.

Returns to
England.

ⁱ Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 453.
p. 118.

^k Winwood, vol. i.

^l Sydney's Letters, vol. ii. p. 127.

CHAP.

XLIV.

1599.

Is disgraced.

BUT this placability of Elizabeth was merely the result of her surprize, and of the momentary satisfaction which she felt on the sudden and unexpected appearance of her favourite: After she had leisure for recollection, all his faults recurred to her memory; and she thought it necessary by some severe discipline, to subdue his haughty and imperious spirit, who, presuming on her partiality and indulgence, had pretended to domineer in her councils, to engross all her favour, and to act, in the most important affairs, without regard to her orders and instructions. When Essex waited on her in the afternoon, he found her extremely altered in her carriage towards him: She ordered him to be confined to his chamber; to be twice examined by the council; and tho' his answers were calm and submissive, she committed him to the custody of the lord keeper, Egerton, and held him sequestered from all company, even from that of his countess, nor was so much as the intercourse of letters permitted between them. Essex dropped many expressions of humiliation and sorrow, none of resentment: He professed an entire submission to the Queen's will: Declared his intention of retiring into the country, and of leading thenceforth a private life, remote from courts and business: But tho' he affected to be so entirely cured of his aspiring ambition, the vexation of this disappointment, and of the triumph gained by his enemies, preyed upon his haughty spirit; and he fell into a distemper, which seemed to put his life in hazard.

THE Queen had always declared to all the world, and even to the earl himself, that the purpose of her severity was to correct, not to ruin him^m; and when she heard of his condition, she was not a little alarmed with the danger. She ordered eight physicians of the best reputation and experience to consult of his

^m Birch's Memoirs, p. 444, 445. Sydney Papers, vol. ii. p. 196.

case; and being informed, that the issue was much to be apprehended, she sent Dr. James to him with some broth, and desired that physician to deliver him a message, which she probably deemed of still greater virtue; that, if she thought such a step consistent with her honour, she would herself pay him a visit. The by-standers, who carefully observed her countenance, remarked, that in pronouncing these words, her eyes were suffused with tearsⁿ.

CHAP.
XLIV.

1599.

WHEN these symptoms of the Queen's returning affection towards Essex were known, they gave a sensible alarm to the faction which had declared their opposition to him. Sir Walter Raleigh, in particular, the most violent as well as the most ambitious of his enemies, was so affected with the appearance of that sudden revolution, that he was seized with sickness in his turn, and the Queen was obliged to apply the same salve to his wound, and to send him a favourable message, expressing her desire of his recovery^o.

THE medicine which the Queen administered to these aspiring rivals, was successful with both; and Essex, being now allowed the company of his countess, and having entertained more promising hopes of his future fortunes, was so much restored in his health, as to be thought past all danger. A belief was infused into Elizabeth, that his distemper had been entirely counterfeit, in order to move her compassion^p; and she relapsed into her former rigour against him. He wrote her a letter, and sent her a rich present on New-Year's day; as was usual among the courtiers of that time: She read the letter, but rejected the present^q. After some interval, however, of severity, she allowed him to retire to his own house: And tho' he remained still under custody, and was sequestered from all company, he

1600.

ⁿ Sydney's Letters, vol. ii. p. 151.

^o Ibid. p. 139.

^p Ibid. p. 153.

^q Ibid. p. 155, 156.

CH A P. was so grateful for this mark of lenity, that he sent
 XLIV. her a letter of thanks on the occasion. "This farther
 1600. "degree of goodness," said he, "doth sound in mine
 "ears, as if your majesty spake these words, *Die not,*
 "*Effex; for tho' I punish thine offence, and humble*
 "*thee for thy good, yet will I one day be served again*
 "*by thee.* My prostrate soul makes this answer. *I*
 "*hope for that blessed day.* And in expectation of it,
 "all my afflictions of body or mind are humbly, pa-
 "tiently, and chearfully borne by me." The countess
 of Effex, daughter of Sir Francis Walsingham, pos-
 sessed, as well as her husband, a very refined taste
 in literature; and the chief consolation which Effex
 enjoyed, during this period of anxiety and expecta-
 tion, consisted in her company, and in reading with
 her those instructive and entertaining authors which,
 even during the time of his greatest prosperity, he
 had never entirely neglected.

THERE were several incidents which kept alive the
 Queen's anger against Effex. Every account which she
 received from Ireland, convinced her more and more
 of his misconduct in that government, and of the in-
 significant purposes to which he had employed so
 much force and treasure. Tyrone, so far from being
 quelled, had thought proper, in less than three
 months, to break the truce, and joining with O Donel,
 and other rebels, had over-run almost the whole king-
 dom. He boasted, that he was certain of receiving a
 supply of men, money, and arms from Spain; He pre-
 tended to be champion of the catholic religion: And
 he loudly exulted in the present of a phoenix plume,
 which the pope, Clement the eighth, in order to en-
 courage him in the prosecution of so good a cause, had
 consecrated, and had conferred upon him*. The
 Queen, that she might check his progress, returned to
 her former intention, of appointing Mountjoy lord-de-
 puty; and tho' that nobleman, who was an intimate

* Birch's Memoirs, p. 444.

* Camden, p. 617.

friend of Essex, and desired his return to the go-^{C H A P.}
 vernment of Ireland, did at first very earnestly ex-^{XLIV.}
 cuse himself, on account of his bad state of health, ^{1600.}
 she obliged him to accept of that employment. Mountjoy found the island almost in a desperate situation; but being a man of capacity and vigour, he was so little discouraged, that he immediately advanced against Tyrone in Ulster. He penetrated into the heart of that country, the chief seat of the rebels; He fortified Derry and Mount-Norris, in order to bridle the Irish: He chased them from the field, and obliged them to take shelter in the woods and morasses: He employed, with equal success, Sir George Carew in Munster: And by these promising successes, he gave new life to the Queen's authority in that country.

As the comparison of Mountjoy's administration with that of Essex, contributed to alienate Elizabeth from her favourite, she received additional disgust from the partiality of the people, who, prepossessed with an extravagant idea of Essex's merit, complained of the injustice which was done him, by his removal from court, and by his confinement. Libels were secretly dispersed against Cecil and Raleigh, and all his enemies. And his popularity, which was always great, seemed rather to be increased than diminished by his misfortunes. Elizabeth, in order to justify to the public her conduct with regard to him, had often expressed her intentions of having him tried in the star-chamber, for his offences: But her tenderness for him prevailed at last over her severity; and she was contented to have him only examined by the privy-council. The attorney-general, Coke, opened the cause against him, and treated him with the cruelty and insolence which that great lawyer usually exercised against the unfortunate. He displayed, in the strongest colours, all the faults committed by Essex in his administration of Ireland: His making Southampton general

CHAP.

XLIV.

1600.

neral of the horse, contrary to the Queen's injunctions: his deserting the enterprize against Tyrone, and marching to Leinster and Munster; his conferring knighthood on too many persons; his secret conference with Tyrone; and his sudden return from Ireland, in contempt of her majesty's commands. He also exaggerated the indignity of the conditions which Tyrone had been allowed to propose; odious and abominable conditions, said he; a public toleration of an idolatrous religion, pardon for himself and every traitor in Ireland, and full restitution of lands and possessions to all of them^t. The solicitor-general, Fleming, insisted upon the wretched situation in which the earl had left that kingdom; and Francis Bacon, son to Sir Nicholas Bacon, who had been lord keeper in the beginning of the present reign, closed the charge with displaying the undutiful expressions contained in some letters wrote by the earl.

Essex, when his turn came to plead in his own behalf, renounced with great submission and humility, all pretensions to an apology^v; and declared his resolution never, on this or any other occasion, to have any contest with his sovereign. He said, that having severed himself from the world, and abjured all sentiments of ambition, he had no scruple to confess every failing or error into which his youth, folly, or manifold infirmities might have betrayed him; that his inward sorrow for his offences against her majesty was so profound, that it exceeded all his outward crosses and afflictions, nor did he retain any scruple of submitting to a public confession of whatever she had been pleased to impute to him; that in his acknowledgements he retained only one reserve, which he never would relinquish but with his life, the assertion of a loyal and unpolluted heart, of an unfeigned affection,

^t Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 449.
vol. ii. 200.

^v Sydney's Letters,

of an earnest desire ever to perform to her majesty the best service which his poor abilities would permit; and that if this sentiment was recognized by the council, he willingly acquiesced in any condemnation or sentence which they could pronounce against him. This submission was uttered with so much eloquence, and in so pathetic a manner, that it drew tears from many of the spectators*. All the privy-counsellors, in giving their judgment, made no scruple of doing the earl justice, with regard to the loyalty of his intentions. Even Cecil, whom he believed his capital enemy, treated him with regard and humanity. And the sentence given by the lord keeper, (to which the council assented) was in these words. "If this cause," said he, "had been heard in the Star-chamber, my sentence must have been for as great a fine as ever was set upon any man's head in that court, together with perpetual confinement in that prison which belongeth to a man of his quality, the Tower. But since we are now in another place, and in a course of favour, my censure is, that the earl of Essex is not to execute the office of a counsellor, nor that of earl marshal of England, nor of master of the ordnance; and to return to his own house, there to continue a prisoner, till it shall please her majesty to release this and all the rest of his sentence†." The earl of Cumberland made a slight opposition to this sentence; and said, that, if he thought it would stand, he would have required a little longer time to deliberate; that he thought it somewhat severe; and that any commander in chief might easily incur a like penalty. But, however, added he, in confidence of her majesty's mercy, I agree with the rest. The earl of Worcester delivered his opinion in a couple of

* Sydney's Letters, vol. ii. p. 200, 201.
 † Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 454. Camden, p. 626, 627.

† Birch's Me-

CHAP.
XLIV.

1600.

Latin verses, implying, that, where the Gods are offended, even misfortunes ought to be imputed as crimes, that accident is no excuse for transgressions against the Divinity.

BACON, so much distinguished afterwards by his high offices, and still more by his profound genius for the sciences, was nearly allied to the Cecil family, being nephew to lord Burleigh, and cousin-german to the secretary: But notwithstanding his extraordinary talents, he had met with so little protection from his powerful relations, that he had not yet obtained any preferment in the law, which was his profession. But Essex, who could distinguish merit, and who passionately loved it, had entered into an intimate friendship with Bacon; had zealously attempted, tho' without success, to procure him the office of Queen's solicitor; and in order to comfort his friend under the disappointment, had conferred on him a present of land to the value of eighteen hundred pounds*. The public could ill excuse Bacon's appearance before the council, against so munificent a benefactor; tho' he acted in obedience to the Queen's orders: But she was so well pleased with his behaviour, that she imposed on him a new task, of drawing a narrative of that day's proceedings, in order to satisfy the nation of the justice and lenity of her conduct. Bacon, who wanted firmness of character, more than humanity, gave to the whole transaction the most favourable turn for Essex; and, in particular, painted out, in elaborate expression, the dutiful submission which that nobleman discovered in the defence which he made for his conduct. When he read the paper to her, she smiled at that passage, and observed to Bacon, that old love, she saw, could not easily be forgotten. He replied, that he hoped she meant that of herself*.

* Cabbala, p. 78.

* Cabbala, p. 83.

ALL the world, indeed, expected that Essex would soon be reinstated in his former credit^b; perhaps, as is usual in reconcilements founded on inclination, would acquire an additional ascendant with the Queen, and after all his disgraces, would again appear more a favourite than ever. They were confirmed in this hope, when they saw, that, tho' he was still prohibited to appear at court^c, he was continued in his office of master of horse, and was restored to his liberty, and that all his friends had access to him. Essex himself seemed determined to persevere in that conduct which had hitherto been so successful, and which the Queen, by all this discipline, had endeavoured to render habitual to him: He wrote to her, that he kissed her majesty's hands, and the rod with which she had corrected him; but that he could never recover his usual cheerfulness, till she deigned to admit him to that presence which had ever been the chief source of his happiness and enjoyment: And that he had now resolved to make amends for his past errors, to retire into a country solitude, and to say with Nebuchadnezzar, "Let my dwelling be with the beasts of the field; let me eat grass as an ox, and be wet with the dew of heaven; till it shall please the Queen to restore me to my understanding." The Queen was much pleased with these sentiments, and replied, that she heartily wished his actions might correspond to his expressions; that he had tried her patience a long time, and it was but just she should now make some experiment of his submission; that her father would never have pardoned so much obstinacy; but that if the furnace of affliction produced such good effects, she should ever after have the better opinion of her chemistry^d.

CHAP.
XLIV.
1600.

^b Winwood, vol. i. p. 254.
p. 462.

^c Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii.

^d Camden, p. 628.

1600.

THE earl of Essex possessed a monopoly of sweet wines; and as his patent was near expiring, he patiently expected that the Queen would renew it, and considered this event as the critical circumstance of his life, which would determine whether he could ever hope to be reinstated in credit and authority. But Elizabeth, tho' gracious in her demeanor, was of a temper somewhat haughty and severe; and being continually surrounded with Essex's enemies, means were found to persuade her, that his lofty spirit was not yet sufficiently humbled, and that he must undergo this farther trial, before he could again be safely received into favour. She therefore refused his demand; and even added, in a contemptuous stile, that an ungovernable beast must be stinted in his provender^f.

His in-
trigues.

THIS rigour, pushed one step too far, proved the final ruin of this young nobleman, and was the source of infinite sorrow and vexation to the Queen herself. Essex, who had with great difficulty so long subdued his proud spirit, and whose patience was now exhausted, imagining that the Queen was entirely inexorable, burst at once all restraints of submission and of prudence, and was determined to seek relief, by proceeding to the utmost extremities against his enemies. Even during his greatest favour he had ever been accustomed to carry matters with a high hand against his sovereign; and as this practice gratified his own temper, and was sometimes successful, he had imprudently imagined, that it was the only proper method of managing her^e: But being now reduced to despair, he gave entire reins to his violent disposition, and threw off all appearance of duty and respect. Intoxicated with the general favour which he already possessed, he practised anew every art of popularity; and endeavoured to

^e Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 472.

^f Cabbala, p. 79.

^f Camden, p. 628.

increase

increase the general good-will by a hospitable manner of life, little suited to his situation and his circumstances. His former employments had given him great connections with gentlemen of the military profession; and he now entertained, by additional caresses and civilities, a friendship with all desperate adventurers, whose attachment, he hoped, might, in his present views, prove serviceable to him. He secretly courted the confidence of the catholics; but his chief trust lay in the puritans, whom he openly caressed, and whose manners he seemed to have entirely adopted. He engaged the most celebrated preachers of that sect to resort to Essex-house; he had daily prayers and sermons in his family; and he invited all the zealots in London to attend those pious exercises. Such was the disposition now beginning to prevail among the English, that, instead of feasting and public spectacles, the methods antiently practised in commonwealths to gain the populace, nothing so effectually ingratiated an ambitious leader with the public, as these fanatical entertainments. And as the puritanical preachers frequently inculcated in their sermons, the doctrine of resistance to the civil magistrate, they prepared the minds of their hearers for those purposes which Essex was secretly contriving¹.

BUT the greatest imprudence of this nobleman proceeded from the openness of his temper, by which he was ill qualified to succeed in such difficult and dangerous projects. He indulged himself in great liberties of speech, and was even heard to say of the Queen, that she was now grown an old woman, and was become as crooked in her mind as in her body². Some court ladies, whose favours Essex had formerly neglected, carried her these stories, and incensed her to a high degree against him. Elizabeth was

¹ Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 463. Camden, p. 630.

² Camden, p. 629. Osborne, p. 397. Sir Walter Raleigh's Prerogative of Parliament, p. 43.

1600.

ever remarkably jealous on this head; and tho' she was now approaching to her seventieth year, she allowed her courtiers^k and even foreign ambassadors^l, to compliment her upon her beauty; nor had all her good sense been able to cure her of this preposterous infirmity^m.

^k Birch's memoirs, vol. ii. p. 442, 443.
^l Sydney's Letters, vol. ii. p. 171.

^m Most of Queen Elizabeth's courtiers feigned love and desire towards her, and addressed themselves to her in the stile of passion and gallantry. Sir Walter Raleigh, having fallen into disgrace, wrote the following letter to his friend Sir Robert Cecil, with a view, no doubt, of having it shewn to the Queen. "My heart was never broke till this day, that I hear the Queen goes away so far off, whom I have followed so many years, with so great love and desire, in so many journeys, and am now left behind her in a dark prison all alone. While she was yet near at hand, that I might hear of her once in two or three days, my sorrows were the less; but even now my heart is cast into the depth of all misery. I, that was wont to behold her riding like *Alexander*, hunting like *Diana*, walking like *Venus*, the gentle wind blowing her fair hair about her pure cheeks, like a nymph, sometimes sitting in the shade like a Goddess, sometimes singing like an angel, sometimes playing like *Orpheus*; behold the sorrow of this world! once amiss hath bereaved me of all. O glory that only shineth in misfortune, what is become of thy assurance? All wounds have scars but that of fantasie: All afflictions their relenting but that of womankind. Who is the judge of friendship but adversity, or when is grace witnessed but in offences? There were no divinity but by reason of compassion: For revenges are brutish and mortal. All those times past, the loves, the sighs, the sorrows, the desires, cannot they weigh down one frail misfortune? Cannot one drop of gall be hid in so great heaps of sweetness? I may then conclude, *Spes & fortuna, valete*. She is gone in whom I trusted; and of me hath not one thought of mercy, nor any respect of that which was. Do with me now therefore what you list. I am more weary of life than they are desirous I should perish; which, if it had been for her, as it is by her, I had been too happily born." *Murdin*, 657. It is to be remarked, that this Nymph, Venus, Goddess, Angel, was now about sixty. Yet five or six years after, she allowed the same language to be used to her. Sir Henry Unton, her ambassador in France, relates to her a conversation which he had with Henry the fourth. The monarch, after having introduced Unton to his mistress, the fair Gabrielle, asked him how he liked her, "I answered sparingly in her praise," said the minister, "and told him, that if, without offence, I might speak it, I had the pic-

THERE was another expedient employed by Essex, which, if possible, was more provoking to the Queen than those sarcasms on her age and deformity; and that was, his secret applications to the King of Scots, her heir and successor. That prince had this year very narrowly escaped a dangerous, tho' ill formed, conspiracy of the earl of Gowry; and even his delivery was attended with this disagreeable circumstance, that the obstinate ecclesiastics persisted, in spite of the most incontestable evidence, to maintain to his face, that there had been no such conspiracy. James, harassed with his turbulent and factious subjects, cast a wishful eye to the succession of England; and in proportion as the Queen advanced in years, his desire increased of mounting that throne, on which, besides acquiring a great addition of power and splendor, he hoped to govern a people, so much more tractable and submissive. He negotiated with all the courts of Europe, in order to ensure himself friends and partizans: He even neglected not the court of Rome and that of Spain; and tho' he engaged himself in no positive promise, he flattered the catholics with hopes, that, in case of his succession, they might expect some more

“ture of a far more excellent mistress, and yet did her picture
 “come far short of her perfection of beauty. As you love me,
 “said he, shew it me, if you have it about you. I made some
 “difficulties; yet upon his importunity offered it to his view very
 “secretly, holding it still in my hand. He beheld it with passi-
 “on and admiration, saying, that I had reason, *Je me rends*,
 “protesting, that he had never seen the like; so, with great reve-
 “rence, he kissed it twice or thrice, I detaining it still in my
 “hand. In the end, with some kind of contention, he took it
 “from me, vowing that I might take my leave of it: For he
 “would not forego it for any treasure: And that to possess the
 “favour of the lively picture, he would forsake all the world,
 “and hold himself most happy; with many other most passionate
 “speeches.” *Murdin*, p. 718. For farther particulars on this
 head, see the ingenious author of the Catalogue of royal and no-
 ble Authors, article *Essex*.

liberty

1600.

liberty than what was at present indulged them. Elizabeth was the only sovereign in Europe to whom he never dared to mention his right of succession: He knew, that tho' her great age might now invite her to think of fixing an heir to the crown, she never could bear the prospect of her own death without horror, and was determined still to retain him, and all other competitors in an entire dependance upon her.

ESSEX was descended by females from the royal family; and some of his sanguine partizans had been so imprudent as to mention his name among those of other pretenders to the crown; but the earl took care by means of Henry Lee, whom he secretly sent into Scotland, to assure James, that so far from entertaining such ambitious views, he was determined to use every expedient for extorting an immediate declaration in favour of that monarch's right of succession. James willingly hearkened to this proposal; but did not approve of the violent methods which Essex intended to employ. Essex had communicated his scheme to Mountjoy, lord deputy of Ireland; and as no man ever commanded more the cordial affection and attachment of his friends, he had even engaged a person of that virtue and prudence to entertain thoughts of bringing over part of his army into England, and of forcing the Queen to declare the King of Scots her successorⁿ. And such was Essex's impatient ardour, that tho' James declined this dangerous expedient, he still endeavoured to persuade Mountjoy not to desist from the project: But the deputy who thought that such violence, tho' it might be prudent, and even justifiable when supported by a sovereign prince next heir to the crown, would be rash and criminal, if at-

ⁿ Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 471.

tempted

tempted by subjects, entirely refused his concurrence. The correspondence, however, between Essex and the court of Scotland was still conducted with great secrecy and cordiality; and that nobleman, besides conciliating the favour of James, represented all his own adversaries as enemies to that prince's succession, and as men entirely devoted to the interests of Spain, and partizans of the chimerical title of the Infanta.

CHAP.
XLIV.

1600.

THE Infanta and archduke, Albert, had made some advances to the Queen for peace; and Boulogne, as a neutral town, was chosen for the place of conference. Sir Henry Nevil, the English resident in France, Herbert, Edmondes, and Beale, were sent thither as ambassadors from England; and negotiated with Zuniga, Carillo, Rachardot, and Verheiken, ministers of Spain and the archduke: But the conferences were soon broke off, on account of a dispute of ceremony. Among the European states England had ever been allowed the precedence above Castile, Arragon, Portugal, and the other kingdoms of which the Spanish monarchy was composed; and Elizabeth insisted, that this antient right was not lost on account of the junction of these states, and that Spain, in its present situation, tho' it surpassed England in extent, as well as in power, could not compare with it in point of antiquity, the only durable and regular foundation of precedence among kingdoms, as well as noble families. That she might shew, however, a disposition to peace, she was contented to yield to an equality; but the Spanish ministers, as their country had always disputed precedence even with France, to which England yielded, would proceed no farther in the conference, till their superiority of rank was acknowledged°. During the

16th May.

• Winwood's Memorials, vol. i. p. 186—226.

preparations

CHAP.
XLIV.

1600.

Preparations for this abortive negotiation, the earl of Nottingham, the admiral lord Buckhurst, the treasurer, and secretary Cecil, had discovered their inclination to peace; and as the English nation, flushed with success, and sanguine in their hopes of plunder and conquest, were in general averse to that measure, it was easy for a person so popular as Essex, to infuse into the multitude an opinion, that these ministers had sacrificed the interests of their country to Spain, and would even make no scruple of receiving a sovereign from that hostile nation.

BUT Essex, not contented with these arts for decrying his adversaries, proceeded to concert more violent methods of ruining them; chiefly instigated by Cusse, his secretary, a man of a bold and arrogant spirit, who had acquired a great ascendant over his patron. A select council of malecontents was formed, who commonly met at Drury-house, and were composed of Sir Charles Davers, to whom the house belonged, the earl of Southampton, Sir Ferdinando Gorges, Sir Christopher Blount, Sir John Davis, and John Littleton; and Essex, who boasted, that he had an hundred and twenty barons, knights, and gentlemen of note, at his devotion, and who trusted still more to his authority with the populace, communicated to his associates those secret designs and resolutions, with which his confidence in so powerful a party had inspired him. Among other criminal projects, the result of blind rage and despair, he deliberated with them concerning the method of taking arms; and asked their opinion whether he had best begin with seizing the palace or the Tower, or set out with making himself master at once of both places. The first enterprize being preferred, a method was concerted for executing it. It was agreed, that Sir Christopher

pher Blount, with a choice detachment, should possess himself of the palace gates, that Davis should seize the hall, Davers, the guard-chamber, and presence-chamber; and that Essex should rush in from the Meuse, attended by a body of his partizans; should entreat the Queen, with all demonstrations of humility, to remove his enemies; should oblige her to assemble a Parliament, and should with common consent settle a new plan of government^p.

WHILE these desperate projects were in agitation, many reasons of suspicion were carried to the Queen; and she sent Robert Sacville, the treasurer's son, to Essex-house on pretence of a visit, but, in reality, with a view of discovering whether there was in that place any concourse of people, or any extraordinary preparations, which might threaten an insurrection. Soon after, Essex received a summons to attend the council, which met at the treasurer's house; and while he was musing on this circumstance, and comparing it with the late unexpected visit from Sacville, a private note was conveyed to him, by which he was warned to provide for his own safety. He concluded, that all his conspiracy was discovered, or at least suspected, and that the easiest punishment which he could expect, was a new and more severe confinement: He therefore excused himself to the council on pretence of an indisposition; and he immediately dispatched messages to his most intimate confederates, requesting their advice and assistance in the present critical situation of his affairs. They deliberated, whether they should abandon all their projects, and fly the kingdom; or instantly seize the palace with the force which they could assemble; or rely upon the affections of the citizens, who were

^p Camden, p. 630. Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 464. State Trials. Bacon, vol. iv. p. 542, 543.

CHAP. generally known to bear a great affection to the
 XLIV. earl. Essex declared against the first expedient,
 1600. and professed himself determined to undergo any
 fate rather than submit to live the life of a fugitive. To seize the palace seemed impracticable without more preparation; especially as the Queen seemed now aware of their projects, and, as they heard, had used the precaution of doubling her ordinary guards. There remained, therefore, no other expedient but that of betaking themselves to the city; and while the prudence and expediency of this resolution was under debate, a person arrived, who, as if he had received a commission for that purpose, gave them assurance of the affection of the Londoners, and affirmed, that they might securely rest any project on that foundation. The popularity of Essex had chiefly buoyed him up in all his vain undertakings; and he fondly imagined that with no other assistance than the good will of the multitude, he might be enabled to overturn Elizabeth's government, confirmed by time, revered for wisdom, supported by vigour, and concurring with the general sentiments of the nation. The wild project of raising the city was immediately resolved on; the execution of it was delayed till next day; and emissaries were dispatched to all Essex's friends, informing them that Cobham and Raleigh had laid schemes against his life, and entreating their presence and assistance.

8th February.

NEXT day, there appeared at Essex-house the earls of Southampton and Rutland, the lords Sandys and Monteagle, with about three hundred gentlemen of good quality and fortune; and Essex informed them of the danger, to which he pretended, the machinations of his enemies exposed him. To some, he said, that he would throw himself at the Queen's feet, and crave her justice and protection:
 To

To others, he boasted of his interest in the city, and affirmed, that, whatever might happen, this resource could never fail him. The Queen was informed of these designs, by means of intelligence, conveyed, as is supposed, to Raleigh by Sir Ferdinando Gorges; and having ordered the magistrates of London to keep the citizens in readiness, she sent Egerton, lord keeper, to Essex-house, with the earl of Worcester, Sir William Knollys, controller, and Popham, lord chief justice, in order to learn the cause of these unusual commotions. They were with difficulty admitted thro' a wicket; but all their servants were excluded, except the purse-bearer. After some altercation, in which they charged Essex's retainers, upon their allegiance, to lay down their arms, and were menaced in their turn by the angry multitude, who surrounded them, the earl, who found, that matters were past recal, resolved to leave them prisoners in his house, and to proceed to the execution of his former project. He issued out with about two hundred attendants, armed only with swords; and in his passage to the city was joined by the earl of Bedford and lord Cromwel. He cried aloud, *For the Queen! for the Queen! a plot is laid for my life*; and then proceeded to the house of Smith, the sheriff, on whose aid he had great reliance. The citizens flocked about him in amazement; but tho' he told them, that England was sold to the infant, and exhorted them to arm instantly, otherwise they could not do him any service, no one showed a disposition to join him. The sheriff, on the earl's approach to his house, stole out at the back door, and made the best of his way to the lord mayor. Essex, meanwhile, observing the coldness of the citizens, and hearing, that he was proclaimed a traitor by the earl of Cumberland and lord Burleigh, began

1600.

gan to despair of success, and thought of retreating to his own house. He found the streets in his passage barricadoed, and guarded by the citizens under the command of Sir John Levison. In his attempt to force his way, Tracy, a young gentleman, to whom he bore great friendship, was killed with two or three of the Londoners; and the earl himself, attended by a few of his partizans (for the greatest part began secretly to withdraw themselves) retired towards the river, and taking boat, arrived at Essex-house. He there found, that Gorges, whom he had sent before to capitulate with the lord keeper and the other counsellors, had given them all their liberty, and had gone to court with them. He was now reduced to despair; and appeared determined, in prosecution of lord Sandys's advice, to defend himself to the last extremity, and rather to perish, like a brave man, with his sword in his hand, than basely by the hands of the executioner: But after some parley, and after demanding in vain, first hostages, then conditions, from the besiegers, he surrendered at discretion; requesting only civil treatment, and a fair and impartial hearing.

19th February.
His trial.

THE Queen, who, during all this commotion, had behaved with as great tranquillity and security, as if there had only passed a fray in the streets, in which she was no way concerned, soon gave orders for the trial of the most considerable of the criminals. The earls of Essex and Southampton were arraigned before a Jury of twenty-five peers, where Buckhurst acted as lord steward. The guilt of the prisoners was too apparent to admit of any doubt; and besides the insurrection known to every body, the treason-

† Camden, p. 632.

† Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 469.

able conferences at Drury-house were proved by undoubted evidence. Sir Ferdinando Gorges was produced in court: The confessions of the earls of Rutland, of the lords Cromwel, Sandys, and Monteagle, of Davers, Blount, and Davies, were only read to the peers, according to the practice of that age. Essex's best friends were scandalized at his assurance in insisting so positively on his innocence, and the goodness of his intentions; and still more at his vindictive disposition, in accusing, without any appearance of reason, secretary Cecil as partizan of the infant's title. The secretary, who had expected this charge, stepped into the court, and challenged Essex to produce his authority, which, on examination, was found extremely weak and frivolous*. When sentence was pronounced, Essex spoke like a man who laid his account to die; But he added, that he should be sorry, if he was represented to the Queen as a person that despised her clemency; tho' he should not, he believed, make any cringing submissions to obtain it. Southampton's behaviour was more mild and submissive: He entreated the good offices of the peers in so modest and becoming a manner, as excited compassion in every one.

THE most remarkable circumstance in Essex's trial was Bacon's appearance against him. He was none of the crown lawyers; so was not obliged by his office to assist at this trial: Yet did he not scruple, in order to obtain the Queen's favour, to be active in bereaving of life his friend and patron, whose generosity he had often experienced. He compared Essex's conduct, in pretending to fear the attempts of his adversaries, to that of Pisistratus, the Athenian, who cut and wounded his own body; and making the people

* Bacon, vol. iv. p. 530.

believe;

CHAP.

XLIV.

1601.

believe, that his enemies had committed that violence, obtained a guard for his person, by whose assistance he afterwards subdued the liberties of his country.

AFTER Essex had passed some days in the solitude and reflection of a prison, his proud heart was at last subdued, not by the fear of death, but by the sentiments of religion; a principle, which he had before attempted to make the instrument of his ambition, but which now took a more firm hold of his mind, and prevailed over every other motive and consideration. His spiritual directors persuaded him, that he never could obtain the pardon of heaven, unless he made a full confession of his disloyalty; and he gave in to the council an account of all his most criminal designs, as well as of his correspondence with the King of Scots. He spared not even his most intimate friends, such as lord Mountjoy, whom he had engaged in these conspiracies; and he sought to pacify his present remorse, by making such atonements as in any other period of his life, he would have deemed more blameable than those attempts themselves, which were the objects of his penitence^t. Sir Harry Nevil, in particular, a man of merit, he accused of a correspondence with the conspirators; tho' it appears, that that gentleman had never assented to the proposals made him, and was no farther criminal than in not revealing the earl's treason; an office to which every man of honour naturally bears the strongest reluctance^u. Nevil was thrown into prison, and underwent a severe persecution: But as the Queen found Mountjoy a very able and successful commander, she continued him in his government, and sacrificed her resentment to the public service.

^t Winwood, vol. i. p. 300.

^u Winwood, vol. i. p. 302.

ELIZABETH affected extremely the praise of CHAP. clemency; and in every great example, which XLIV. she had made during her reign, she had always appeared full of reluctance and hesitation: But the present situation of Essex called forth all her tender affections, and kept her in the most real agitation and irresolution. She felt a perpetual combat between resentment and inclination, pride and compassion, the care of her own safety and concern for her favourite; and her situation, during this interval, was perhaps more an object of pity, than that to which Essex himself was reduced. She signed the warrant for his execution; she countermanded it; she again resolved on his death; she felt a new return of tenderness. Essex's enemies told her, that he himself desired to die, and had assured her, that she could never be in safety while he lived: It is likely, that this proof of penitence and of concern for her, would operate a contrary effect to what they intended, and would revive all that fond affection, which she had so long indulged to the unhappy prisoner. But what chiefly hardened her heart against him was his supposed obstinacy, in never making, as she hourly expected, any application to her for mercy and forgiveness; and she finally gave her consent to his execution. He discovered at his death symptoms rather of penitence and piety than of fear; and willingly acknowledged the justice of the sentence, by which he suffered. The execution was private in the Tower, agreeable to his own request. He was apprehensive, he said, lest the favour and compassion of the people would too much raise his heart in those moments when humiliation under the afflicting hand of heaven was the only proper sentiment, which he could in-

1601.

25th Feb.

And execution.

CHAP. indulge*. And the Queen, no doubt, thought,
 XLIV. that prudence required the removal of so melan-
 1601. choly a spectacle from the public eye. Sir Walter
 Raleigh, who came to the Tower on purpose, and
 who beheld Essex's execution from a window, en-
 creased much by this action the general hatred,
 under which he already laboured: It was thought,
 that he had no other purpose than to feast his
 eyes with the death of his enemy; and no apology,
 which he could make for so exceptionable a con-
 duct, could be accepted by the public. The cruel-
 ty and animosity, with which he urged on Essex's
 fate, even when Cecil relented†, were still regarded
 as the principles of this unmanly and ungenerous
 behaviour.

THE earl of Essex was but thirty-four years of
 age, when his rashness, imprudence, and violence,
 brought him to this untimely end. We must here,
 as in many other instances, lament the inconstancy
 of human nature, that a person endowed with so
 many noble virtues, generosity, sincerity, friendship,
 valour, eloquence, and industry, should in the lat-
 ter period of his life have given such reins to his
 ungovernable passions, as involved, not only him-
 self, but many of his friends, in utter ruin. The
 Queen's tenderness and passion for him, as it was
 the cause of these premature honours, which he
 attained, seems, on the whole, the chief cir-
 cumstance which brought on his destruction. Con-
 fident of her partiality towards him, as well as
 of his own merit, he treated her with a haughti-
 ness, which neither her love nor her dignity could
 bear; and as her amorous inclinations in so advan-
 ced an age, would naturally make her appear ri-

* Dr. Barlow's sermon on Essex's execution. Bacon, vol. iv.
 p. 534. † Murdin, p. 811.

diculous, if not hateful in his eyes, he was engaged, by an imprudent openness, of which he made profession, to discover too easily those sentiments to her. The many reconciliations and returns of affection, of which he had still made advantage, induced him to venture on new provocations, till he pushed her beyond all bounds of patience; and he forgot, that, tho' the sentiments of the woman were ever strong in her, those of the sovereign had still in the end appeared predominant.

CHAP.

XLIV.

1601.

SOME of Essex's associates, Cusse, Davers, Blount, Meric, and Davis were tried and condemned, and all of them, except Davis, were executed. The Queen pardoned the rest; being persuaded that they were drawn in merely from their friendship to that nobleman, and their care of his safety; and were ignorant of the more criminal part of his intentions. Southampton's life was spared with great difficulty; but he was detained in prison during all the remainder of this reign.

THE King of Scots, who was apprehensive lest his correspondence with Essex might have been discovered, and have given offence to Elizabeth, sent the earl of Marre and the lord Kinloss as ambassadors to England, in order to congratulate the Queen on her escape from the late insurrection and conspiracy. They were also ordered to enquire whether any measures had been taken by her to exclude him from the succession, as well as to discover the inclinations of the chief nobility and counsellors, in case of the Queen's demise^z. They found the dispositions of men as favourable as they could wish; and they even entered into a correspondence with secretary Cecil, whose influence, after the fall of Essex, was now uncontrouled^a, and

^z Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 510.

^a Osborne, p. 615.

CHAP.

XLIV.

1601.

indulge*. And the Queen, no doubt, thought, that prudence required the removal of so melancholy a spectacle from the public eye. Sir Walter Raleigh, who came to the Tower on purpose, and who beheld Essex's execution from a window, increased much by this action the general hatred, under which he already laboured: It was thought, that he had no other purpose than to feast his eyes with the death of his enemy; and no apology, which he could make for so exceptionable a conduct, could be accepted by the public. The cruelty and animosity, with which he urged on Essex's fate, even when Cecil relented†, were still regarded as the principles of this unmanly and ungenerous behaviour.

THE earl of Essex was but thirty-four years of age, when his rashness, imprudence, and violence, brought him to this untimely end. We must here, as in many other instances, lament the inconstancy of human nature, that a person endowed with so many noble virtues, generosity, sincerity, friendship, valour, eloquence, and industry, should in the latter period of his life have given such reins to his ungovernable passions, as involved, not only himself, but many of his friends, in utter ruin. The Queen's tenderness and passion for him, as it was the cause of these premature honours, which he attained, seems, on the whole, the chief circumstance which brought on his destruction. Confident of her partiality towards him, as well as of his own merit, he treated her with a haughtiness, which neither her love nor her dignity could bear; and as her amorous inclinations in so advanced an age, would naturally make her appear ri-

* Dr. Barlow's sermon on Essex's execution. Bacon, vol. iv. p. 534.

† Murdin, p. 811.

diculous, if not hateful in his eyes, he was engaged, by an imprudent openness, of which he made profession, to discover too easily those sentiments to her. The many reconciliations and returns of affection, of which he had still made advantage, induced him to venture on new provocations, till he pushed her beyond all bounds of patience; and he forgot, that, tho' the sentiments of the woman were ever strong in her, those of the sovereign had still in the end appeared predominant.

CHAP.

XLIV.

1601.

SOME of Essex's associates, Cusse, Davers, Blount, Meric, and Davis were tried and condemned, and all of them, except Davis, were executed. The Queen pardoned the rest; being persuaded that they were drawn in merely from their friendship to that nobleman, and their care of his safety; and were ignorant of the more criminal part of his intentions. Southampton's life was spared with great difficulty; but he was detained in prison during all the remainder of this reign.

THE King of Scots, who was apprehensive lest his correspondence with Essex might have been discovered, and have given offence to Elizabeth, sent the earl of Marre and the lord Kinloss as ambassadors to England, in order to congratulate the Queen on her escape from the late insurrection and conspiracy. They were also ordered to enquire whether any measures had been taken by her to exclude him from the succession, as well as to discover the inclinations of the chief nobility and counsellors, in case of the Queen's demise.^z They found the dispositions of men as favourable as they could wish; and they even entered into a correspondence with secretary Cecil, whose influence, after the fall of Essex, was now uncontrouled,^a and

^z Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 510.

^a Osborne, p. 615.

CHAP.

XLIV.

1601.

who was resolved, by this policy, to acquire, in time, the confidence of the successor. He knew how jealous Elizabeth ever was of her authority, and he therefore carefully concealed from her his attachment to James: But he afterwards asserted, that nothing could be more advantageous to her, than this correspondence; because the King of Scots, secure of mounting the throne by his undoubted title, aided by those connexions with the English ministry, was the less likely to give any disturbance to the present sovereign. He also persuaded that prince to remain in quiet, and patiently to expect, that time should open to him the inheritance of the throne, without pushing his friends on desperate enterprizes which would totally incapacitate them from serving him. James's equity, as well as his natural facility of disposition, easily inclined him to embrace this resolution^b; and thus the minds of the English were silently, but universally disposed to admit, without opposition, the succession of the Scottish line: The death of Essex, by putting an end to faction, had been rather favourable than prejudicial to that great event.

THE King of France, who was little prepossessed in favour of James, and who was averse to the union of England and Scotland^c, made his ambassador drop some hints to Cecil of Henry's willingness to concur in any measure for disappointing the hopes of the Scottish monarch; but as Cecil showed an entire disapprobation of such schemes; the court of France took no farther steps in that matter; and thus the only foreign power, which could give much disturbance to James's succession, was induced to acquiesce in it^d. Henry made a journey this summer to Calais; and the Queen, hearing of his intentions, went to Do-

French
affairs.

^b Spotfwood, p. 471, 472.

^d Spotfwood, p. 471.

^c Winwood, vol. i. p. 352

ver, in hopes of having a personal interview with a monarch, whom, of all others, she most loved and most respected. The French King, who felt the same sentiments towards her, would gladly have accepted of the proposal; but as many difficulties occurred, it appeared necessary to lay aside, by common consent, the project of an interview. Elizabeth, however, wrote successively two letters to Henry, one by Edmondess, another by Sir Robert Sydney, in which she expressed a desire of conferring about a business of importance, with some minister in whom that prince reposed entire confidence. The marquis of Rhoni, the King's favourite and prime minister, came to Dover in disguise; and the memoirs of that able statesman contain a full account of his conversation with Elizabeth. That magnanimous princess had formed a scheme of establishing, in conjunction with Henry, a new system of policy in Europe, and of fixing a durable balance of power, by the erection of new states on the ruins of the house of Austria. She had even the wisdom to foresee the perils, which might ensue from the aggrandizement of her ally; and she proposed to unite all the seventeen provinces of the Low Countries into one republic, in order to form a perpetual barrier against the dangerous encrease of the French, as well as of the Spanish, monarchy. Henry had himself long meditated such a project against the Austrian family; and Rhoni could not forbear expressing his astonishment, when he found that Elizabeth and his master, tho' they had never communicated their thoughts on this subject, had not only entered into the same general views, but had also formed the same project for their execution. The affairs, however, of France were not yet brought to a situation, which might enable Henry to begin that great enterprize; and Rhoni satisfied the Queen, that it would be ne-

CHAP. XLIV. necessary to postpone for some years their united attack on the house of Austria. He departed, filled with just admiration of the solidity of Elizabeth's judgment, and the greatness of her mind; and he owns that she was entirely worthy of that high reputation, which she possessed in Europe.

1601.

THE Queen's magnanimity in forming such extensive projects was the more remarkable, as, besides her having fallen so far into the decline of life, the affairs of Ireland, tho' conducted with ability, and success, were still in disorder, and made a great diversion of her forces. The expence incurred by this war, lay heavy upon her narrow revenues; and her ministers, taking advantage of her great disposition to frugality, proposed to her an expedient of saving, which, tho' she at first disapproved of it, she was at last induced to embrace. It was represented to her, that the great sums of money remitted to Ireland for the pay of the English forces, came, by the necessary course of circulation, into the hands of the rebels, and enabled them to buy abroad all necessary supplies of arms and ammunition, which, from the extreme poverty of that kingdom, and its want of every useful commodity, they could not otherwise find means to purchase. It was therefore proposed to her, that she should pay her forces in money of a base alloy; and it was asserted, that, besides the great saving to the revenue, this species of coin could never be exported with advantage, and would not pass in any foreign market. Some of the wiser counsellors maintained, that, if the pay of the soldiers was raised in proportion, the Irish rebels would necessarily reap the same benefit from the base money, which would always be taken at a rate suitable to its value; if the pay was not raised, there was danger of a mutiny among the troops, who, whatever names might be affixed to the pieces of metal, would soon find from experience that they were defrauded in their income.

income^e. But Elizabeth, tho' she justly valued herself, on fixing the standard of the English coin, much debased by her predecessors, and had innovated very little in that delicate article, was seduced by the specious arguments employed by the lord treasurer on this occasion; and she coined a great quantity of base money, which she made use of in the pay of her forces in Ireland^r.

CHAP.

XLIV.

1601.

MOUNTJOY, the deputy, was a man of great ability; and foreseeing the danger of mutiny amongst the troops, he led them instantly into the field, and resolved by means of strict discipline, and by keeping them employed against the enemy, to obviate those inconveniencies, which were justly apprehended. He made military roads, and built a fortress at Moghery; he drove the Mac-Genises out of Lecale; he harrassed Tyrone in Ulster with inroads and lesser expeditions; and by destroying, every where, and during all seasons, the provisions of the Irish, he reduced them to perish with famine in the woods and morasses, to which they were obliged to retreat. At the same time, Sir Henry Docwray, who commanded another body of troops, took the castle of Derry, and put garrisons into Newton and Ainogh; and having seized the monastery of Donnegal near Balishannon, he threw troops into it, and defended it against the assaults of O'Donnel and the Irish. Nor was Sir George Carew idle in the province of Munster. He seized the titular earl of Desmond, and sent him over, with Florence Macarty, another chieftain, prisoner to England. He arrested many suspected persons, and took hostages from others. And having got a reinforcement of two thousand men from England, he threw himself into Corke, which he supplied with arms and provisions; and he put every thing

^e Camden, p. 643.^r Rymer, tom. xvi. p. 414.

CHAP.
XLIV.
1601.

in a condition for resisting the Spanish invasion, which was daily expected. The deputy, informed of the danger, to which the southern provinces were exposed, left the prosecution of the war against Tyrone, who was reduced to great extremity; and he marched with his army into Munster.

23d September.

AT last, the Spaniards, under Don John d'Aquila, arrived at Kinsale; and Sir Richard Piercy, who commanded in the town with a small garrison of an hundred and fifty men, found himself obliged to abandon it on their appearance. These invaders amounted to four thousand men, and the Irish expressed a great desire to join them, in order to free themselves from the English government, with which they were extremely discontented. One chief ground of their complaint was the introduction of their trials by jury^e; an institution, abhorred by this barbarous nation, tho' nothing contributes more to the support of that equity and liberty, for which the English laws are so justly celebrated. The Irish also bore a great favour to the Spaniards, having entertained the opinion that they themselves were descended from that nation; and their attachment to the catholic religion proved a new cause of affection to the invaders. D'Aquila assumed the title of general *in the holy war for the preservation of the faith* in Ireland, and he endeavoured to persuade the people, that Queen Elizabeth was, by several bulls of the pope, deprived of her crown; that her subjects were absolved from their oaths of allegiance; and that the Spaniards were come to deliver the Irish from the power of the devil^h. Mountjoy found it necessary to act with vigour, in order to prevent a total insurrection of the Irish; and having ga-

^e Camden, p. 644.

^h Camden, p. 645.

thered

thered together his forces, he formed the siege of ^{CHAP.} Kinsale by land; while Sir Richard Levison, with ^{XLIV.} a small squadron, blockaded it by sea. He had no sooner begun his operations than he heard of the arrival of another body of two thousand Spaniards under the command of Alphonso Ocampo, who had taken possession of Baltimore and Berehaven; and he found himself obliged to detach Sir George Carew to oppose their progress. Tyrone, meanwhile, with Randal, Mac-Surley, Tirl baron of Kelley, and other chieftains of the Irish, had joined Ocampo with all their forces, and were marching to the relief of Kinsale. The deputy, informed of their design by intercepted letters, made preparations to receive them; and being joined by Levison with six hundred marines, he posted his troops on an advantageous ground, which lay on their passage, leaving some cavalry to prevent a sally from D'Aquila and the Spanish garrison. When Tyrone, with a body of Irish and Spaniards, approached, he was surprized to find the English so well posted, and ranged in such good order; and he immediately sounded a retreat: But the deputy gave orders to pursue him; and having thrown these advanced troops into disorder, he followed them to the main body, whom he also attacked, and put to flight, with the slaughter of twelve hundred men¹. Ocampo was taken prisoner; Tyrone fled, into Ulster; Odonel made his escape into Spain; and D'Aquila, finding himself reduced to the greatest difficulties, was obliged to capitulate upon such terms as the deputy prescribed to him: He surrendered Kinsale and Baltimore, and agreed to evacuate the kingdom. This great blow, joined to other successes, gained by Wilmot, governor of Kerry, and by Roger and Gavin Harvey, threw the rebels into dismay, and gave a prospect of the final reduction of that Kingdom.

¹ Wiawood, vol. i. p. 369.

CHAP.

XLIV.

1601.

27th Oc-
tober.
A Parlia-
ment.

THE Irish war, tho' successful, was extremely bur-then some on the Queen's revenue; and besides the supplies granted by Parliament, which were indeed very small, but which they ever regarded as mighty concessions, she had been obliged, notwithstanding her great frugality, to employ other expedients, such as selling the royal demesnes and crown jewels^k, and exacting loans from the people^l, in order to support this cause, so essential to the honour and interests of England. The necessity of her affairs obliged her again to summon a Parliament; and it here appeared, that tho' old age was advancing fast upon her, tho' she had lost much of her popularity by the unfortunate execution of Essex, insomuch that, when she appeared in public, she was not attended with the usual acclamations^m, yet the powers of her prerogative, supported by her vigour, still remained as high and uncontrollable as ever.

THE active reign of Elizabeth had enabled many persons to distinguish themselves in civil and military employments; and the Queen, who was not able, from her revenue, to give them any rewards proportioned to their services, had made use of an expedient, which had been employed by her predecessors, but which had never been carried to such an extreme as under her administration. She granted her servants and courtiers patents for monopolies; and these patents they sold to others, who were thereby enabled to raise commodities to what price they pleased, and who put invincible restraints upon all commerce, industry, and emulation. It is astonishing to consider the number and importance of those commodities, which were thus assigned over to patentees. Currants, salt, iron, powder, cards, calf-skins,

^k D'Ewes, p. 629.
borne, p. 604.

^l Ibid.

^m Ibid. p. 602, Os-

fells, pouldavies, ox-shin-bones, train oil, lifts of CHAP.
XLIV.
 cloth, pot-ashes, anniseeds, vinegar, sea-coals, steel, 1601.
 aquavitæ, brushers, pots, bottles, salt-petre, lead, ac-
 cidences, oil, calamint-stone, oil of blubber, glasses,
 paper, starch, tin, sulphur, new drapery, dried
 pilchards, transportation of iron ordnance, of beer,
 of horn, of leather, importation of Spanish wools, of
 Irish yarn: These are but a part of the commo-
 dities, which had been consigned over to mono-
 polistsⁿ. When this list was read over in the house,
 a member cried out, *Is not bread in the number?*
Bread, said every one with astonishment: *Yes, I as-*
sure you, replied he, *if affairs go on at this rate, we*
shall have bread reduced to a monopoly before next Par-
liament^o. These monopolists were so exorbitant in
 their demands, that in some places they raised the
 price of salt, from sixteen pence a bushel, to four-
 teen or fifteen shillings^p. Such high profits natu-
 rally begot intruders upon their commerce; and
 in order to secure themselves against encroachments,
 the patentees were armed with high and arbitra-
 ry powers from the council, by which they were
 enabled to oppress the people at pleasure, and to
 exact money from such as they thought proper to
 accuse of interfering with their patent^q. The pa-
 tentees of salt-petre, having the power of entering
 into every house, and of committing what havock
 they pleased in stables, cellars, or wherever they
 suspected salt-petre might be gathered; common-
 ly extorted money from those who desired to free
 themselves from this damage or trouble^r. And
 while all domestic intercourse was thus restrained,
 lest any scope should remain for industry, almost
 every species of foreign commerce was confined
 to exclusive companies, who bought and sold at

ⁿ D'Ewes, p. 648, 650, 652. ^o Ibid. p. 648. ^p Ibid.
 p. 647. ^q Ibid. p. 644, 646, 652. ^r D'Ewes, p. 653.

C H A P. any price, that they themselves thought proper to offer or expect.

XLIV.
1601.

THESE grievances, the most intolerable for the present, and the most pernicious in their consequences, that ever were known in any age or under any government, had been mentioned in the last Parliament, and a petition had even been presented to the Queen, complaining of the patents; but she still persisted in defending her monopolists against her people. A bill was now introduced into the lower house, abolishing all these monopolies; and as the former application had been unsuccessful, a law was insisted on as the only certain expedient for correcting these abuses: The courtiers, on the other hand, maintained, that this matter regarded the prerogative; and that the commons could never hope for success, if they did not make application, in the most humble and respectful manner, to the Queen's goodness and beneficence. The topics, which were advanced in the house, and which came equally from the courtiers and the country gentlemen, and were admitted by both, will appear the most extraordinary to such as are prepossessed with an idea of the privileges enjoyed by the people during this age, and of the liberty possessed under the administration of Elizabeth. It was asserted, that the Queen inherited both an enlarging and a restraining power; by her prerogative she might set at liberty what was restrained by statute or otherwise, and by her prerogative she might restrain what was otherwise at liberty: That the royal prerogative was not to be canvassed nor disputed nor examined; and did not even admit of any limitation. That absolute princes, such as the sovereigns of England, were a species of divinity. That it was in vain to attempt tying the Queen's hands by laws or sta-

* Ibid. p. 644, 675.
p. 646, 654.

† Ibid. p. 644, 649.

‡ Ibid. p. 649.

§ Ibid.

tutes; since, by means of her dispensing power, she could loosen herself at her pleasure^y: that even if a clause should be annexed to a statute, excluding her dispensing power; she could first dispense with that clause, and then with the statute^z. After all this discourse, more worthy of a Turkish divan than of an English house of commons, according to our present idea of this assembly, the Queen, who perceived how odious monopolies had become, and what heats were likely to rise, sent for the speaker, and desired him to inform the house, that she would immediately cancel the most grievous and oppressive of these patents^a.

^y Ibid.

^z Ibid. p. 640, 646.

^a It may not be amiss to subjoin some passages of these speeches; which may serve very much to give us a just idea of the government of that age and of the political principles, which prevailed during the reign of Elizabeth. Mr. Laurence Hyde proposed a bill, entituled, an act for the explanation of the common law in certain cases of letters patent. Mr. Spicer said, This bill may touch the prerogative-royal, which, as I learned the last Parliament, is so transcendant, that the — of the subject may not aspire thereunto. Far be it therefore from me, that the state and prerogative-royal of the prince should be tied by me, or by the act of any other subject. Mr. Francis Bacon said, As to the prerogative royal of the Prince, for my own part, I ever allowed of it; and it is such as I hope will never be discussed. The Queen, as she is our sovereign, hath both an enlarging and restraining power. For by her prerogative she may set at liberty things restrained by statute law or otherwise, and secondly by her prerogative she may restrain things which be at liberty. For the first, she may grant a *non obstante* contrary to the penal laws.—With regard to monopolies and such like cases, the case hath ever been to humble ourselves unto her Majesty, and by petition desire to have our grievances remedied, especially when the remedy toucheth her so nigh in point of prerogative—I say, and I say it again, that we ought not to deal, to judge, or meddle with her majesty's prerogative. I wish therefore every man to be careful of this business. Dr. Bennet said, He that goeth about to debate her majesty's prerogative had need to walk warily. Mr. Laurence Hyde said, For the bill itself, I made it, and I think I understand it: And far be it from this heart of mine to think, this tongue to speak, or this hand to write any thing either in prejudice or derogation of her majesty's prerogative-royal and the state.—Mr. Speaker, quoth serjeant Harris, for ought I see, the house moveth to have this bill in the nature of a petition. It must then begin with more humiliation. And truly, Sir, the bill is good of itself, but the penning of it is somewhat out of course. Mr. Montague said, The matter is good and

CHAP. THE house was struck with astonishment, and ad-
XLIV. miration, and gratitude at this extraordinary instance

1601.

honest, and I like this manner of proceeding by bill well enough in this matter. The grievances are great, and I would note only unto you thus much, that the last Parliament we proceeded by way of petition, which had no successful effect. Mr. Francis More said, I know the Queen's prerogative is a thing curious to be dealt withal; yet all grievances are not comparable. I cannot utter with my tongue or conceive with my heart the great grievances that the town and country, for which I serve, suffereth by some of these monopolies. It bringeth the general profit into a private hand, and the end of all this is beggary and bondage to the subjects. We have a law for the true and faithful currying of leather: There is a patent sets all at liberty, notwithstanding that statute. And to what purpose is it to do any thing by act of Parliament, when the Queen will undo the same by her prerogative? Out of the spirit of humiliation, Mr. Speaker, I do speak it, there is no act of her's that hath been or is more derogatory to her own majesty, more odious to the subject, more dangerous to the commonwealth than the granting of these monopolies. Mr. Martin said, I do speak for a town that grieves and pines, for a country that groaneth and languisheth under the burthen of monstrous and unconscionable substitutes to the monopolitans of starch, tin, fish, cloth, oil, vinegar, salt, and I know not what; nay, what not? The principallest commodities both of my town and country are engrossed into the hands of these blood-suckers of the commonwealth. If a body, Mr. Speaker, being let blood, be left still languishing without any remedy, how can the good estate of that body still remain? Such is the state of my town and country; the traffic is taken away, the inward and private commodities are taken away, and dare not be used without the licence of these monopolitans. If these blood-suckers be still let alone to suck up the best and principallest commodities, which the earth there hath given us, what will become of us, from whom the fruits of our own soil and the commodities of our own labour, which with the sweat of our brows, even up to the knees in mire and dirt, we have laboured for, shall be taken by warrant of supreme authority, which the poor subject dare not gainsay? Mr. George Moore said, We know the power of her majesty cannot be restrained by any act; why therefore should we thus talk? Admit we should make this statute with a *non obstante*; yet the Queen may grant a patent with a *non obstante*, to cross this *non obstante*. I think therefore it agreeth more with the gravity and wisdom of this house to proceed with all humbleness by petition than bill. Mr. Downland said, As I would be no let or over-vehement in any thing, so I am not sottish or senseless of the common grievance of the commonwealth. If we proceed by way of petition, we can have no more gracious answer, than we had the last Parliament to our petition. But since that Parliament, we have no reformation. Sir Robert

of

of the Queen's goodness and condescension. A member said, with tears in his eyes, that if a sentence of

CHAP. XLIV.

1601.

Wroth said, I speak, and I speak it boldly, these patentees are worse than ever they were. Mr. Hayward Townsend proposed, that they should make suit to her majesty, not only to repeal all monopolies grievous to the subject, but also that it would please her majesty to give the Parliament leave to make an act, that they might be of no more force, validity, or effect, than they are at the common law, without the strength of her prerogative. Which tho' we might now do, and the act being so reasonable, we might assure ourselves her majesty would not delay the passing thereof, yet we, her loving subjects, &c. would not offer without her privy and consent (the cause so nearly touching her prerogative) or go about to do any such act.

On a subsequent day, the bill against monopolies was again introduced, and Mr. Spicer said, It is to no purpose to offer to tie her majesty's hands by act of parliament, when she may loosen herself at her pleasure. Mr. Davies said, God hath given that power to absolute princes, which he attributes to himself. *Dixi quod Dii estis.* (N. B. This axiom he applies to the Kings of England.) Mr. secretary Cecil said, I am servant to the Queen, and before I would speak and give consent to a case that should debase her prerogative, or abridge it, I would wish that my tongue were cut out of my head. I am sure there were law-makers before there were laws: (Meaning, I suppose, that the sovereign was above the laws.) One gentleman went about to possess us, with the execution of the law in an antient record of 5 or 7 of Edward the third. Likely enough to be true in that time, when the King was afraid of the subject. If you stand upon law, and dispute of the prerogative, hark ye what Bracton says, *Prærogativam nostram nemo audeat disputare.* And for my own part, I like not these courses should be taken. And you, Mr. Speaker, should perform the charge her majesty gave unto you, in the beginning of this Parliament, not to receive bills of this nature: For her majesty's ears be open to all grievances, and her hands stretched out to every man's petitions.——When the prince dispenses with a penal law, that is left to the alteration of sovereignty, that is good and irrevocable. Mr. Montague said, I am loth to speak what I know, lest, perhaps, I should displease. The prerogative royal is that which is now in question, and which the laws of the land have ever allowed and maintained. Let us therefore apply by petition to her majesty.

After the speaker told the house that the Queen had annulled many of the patents, Mr. Francis Moore said, I must confess, Mr. Speaker, I moved the house both the last Parliament and this, touching this point; but I never meant (and I hope the house thinketh so) to set limits and bounds to the prerogative royal. He proceeds to move, that thanks should be given to her majesty; and also, that whereas divers speeches have been moved extravagantly in the house, which doubtless have been told her majesty, and perhaps ill conceived of by her, Mr. Speaker would apologize, and everlasting

CHAP.
XLIV.

1601.

everlasting happiness had been pronounced in his favour, he could not have felt more joy than that with which he was at present overwhelmed^b. Another

humbly crave pardon for the same. N. B. These extracts were taken by Townsend, a member of the house, who was no courtier; and the extravagance of the speeches seems rather to be on the other side: It will certainly appear odd to us, that this liberty should be thought extravagant. However, the Queen, notwithstanding her cajoling the house, was so ill satisfied with these proceedings, that she spoke of them peevishly in her concluding speech, and told them, that she perceived, that private respects with them were privately masqued under public presence. D'Ewes, p. 619.

There were some other topics, in favour of prerogative, still more extravagant, advanced in the house this parliament. When the question of the subsidy was before them, Mr. serjeant Heyle said, Mr. Speaker, I marvel much, that the house should stand upon granting of a subsidy or the time of payment, when all we have is her majesty's and she may lawfully at her pleasure take it from us: Yea, she hath as might right to all our lands and goods as to any revenue of her crown. At which all the house hemmed, and laughed, and talked. Well, quoth serjeant Heyle, all your hemming shall not put me out of countenance. So Mr. Speaker stood up and said, It is a great disorder, that this should be used. —So the said serjeant proceeded, and when he had spoken a little while, the house hemmed again; and so he sat down. In his latter speech, he said, he could prove his former position by precedents in the time of Henry the third, King John, King Stephen, &c. which was the occasion of their hemming. D'Ewes, p. 633. It is observable, that Heyle was an eminent lawyer, a man of character. Winwood, vol. i. p. 290. And tho' the house in general shewed their disapprobation, no one cared to take him down, or oppose these extravagant positions. It was also asserted this session, that in the same manner as the Roman consul was possessed of the power of rejecting or admitting motions in the senate, the Speaker might either admit or reject bills in the house. D'Ewes, p. 677. The house declared themselves against this opinion; but the very proposal of it is a proof at what a low ebb liberty was at that time in England.

In the year 1591, the judges made a solemn decree, that England was an absolute empire, of which the King was the head. In consequence of this opinion, they determined, that even if the act of the first of Elizabeth had never been made, the King was supreme head of the church; and might have erected, by his prerogative, such a court as the ecclesiastical commission: For that he was the head of all his subjects. Now that court was plainly arbitrary: The inference is, that his power was equally absolute over the laity. See Coke's Reports, p. 5. Caudrey's case.

^b D'Ewes, p. 654.

observed,

observed, that this message from the sacred person of the Queen, was a kind of gospel or glad-tidings, and ought to be received as such, and be written in the tablets of their hearts^c. And it was farther remarked, that in the same manner as the Deity would not give his glory to another, so the Queen herself was the only agent in their present prosperity and happiness^d. The house voted that the speaker, with a certain number of members, should ask permission to wait on her majesty, and return her thanks for her gracious concessions to her people.

CHAP.
XLIV.
1603.

WHEN the speaker, with the other members, was introduced to the Queen, they all flung themselves on their knees; and remained in that posture a considerable time, till she thought proper to express her desire, that they should rise. The speaker displayed the gratitude of the commons, on account that her sacred ears were ever open to hear them, and her blessed hands ever stretched out to relieve them. They acknowledged, he said, in all duty and thankfulness acknowledged, that, before they called, her *preventing grace*, and *all-deserving goodness* watched over them for their good; more ready to give than they could desire, much less deserve. He remarked, that the attribute which was most proper to God, to perform all he promiseth, appertained also to her; and that she was all truth, all constancy, and all goodness. And he concluded with these expressions, "Neither do we present our thanks in words or any outward sign, which can be no sufficient retribution for so great goodness; but in all duty and thankfulness, prostrate at your feet, we present our most loyal and thankful hearts, even the last drop of blood in our hearts, and the last spirit of breath in our nostrils, to be poured out, to be

^c Ibid, p. 656.

^d Ibid, p. 657.

" breathed

CHAP. XLIV. "breathed up, for your safety." The Queen
 1601. heard very patiently this speech, where she was flattered in praises appropriated to the Supreme Being; and she returned an answer, full of such expressions of tenderness towards her people, as ought to have appeared fulsome after the late instances of rigour which she had employed, and from which nothing but necessity had made her depart. Thus was this critical affair happily terminated; and Elizabeth, by prudently receding, in time, from her rights, maintained her dignity, and preserved the affections of her people.

THE commons granted her a supply very unprecedented, of four subsidies and eight fifteenths; and they were so dutiful as to vote this supply before they received any satisfaction in the business of monopolies, which they justly considered of as the utmost consequence to the interest and happiness of the nation. Had they attempted to extort that concession by keeping the supply in suspense; so haughty was the Queen's disposition, that this appearance of constraint and jealousy had been sufficient to have produced a denial of all their requests, and to have forced her into some acts of authority still more violent and arbitrary.

1602. THE remaining events of this reign are neither very numerous nor important. The Queen, finding that the Spaniards had involved her in so much trouble, by fomenting and assisting the Irish rebellion, resolved to give them employment at home; and she fitted out a squadron, of nine ships under Sir Richard Levison, admiral, and Sir William Monson, vice-admiral, whom she sent on an expedition to the coast of Spain. The admiral, with part of the squadron, met the galleons loaded with treasure; but was not strong enough to attack them: The vice-admiral also fell in with some

very rich ships; but they escaped for a like reason: CHAP. XLIV.
 And these two brave officers, that their expedition might not be entirely fruitless, resolved to attack the harbour of Cerimbra in Portugal, where, they received intelligence, a very rich Carrack had taken shelter. The harbour was guarded by a castle: There were eleven gallies stationed in it: And the militia of the country, to the number, as was believed, of twenty thousand men, appeared in arms on the shore: Yet, notwithstanding these obstacles, and others derived from the winds and tides, the English squadron broke into the harbour, dismounted the guns of the castle, sunk or burnt, or put to flight, the gallies, and obliged the Carrack to surrender^f. They brought her home to England, and she was valued at a million of ducats^g. A sensible loss to the Spaniards; and a supply still more considerable to Elizabeth^h. 1602.

THE affairs of Ireland, after the defeat of Tyrone, and the expulsion of the Spaniards, hastened to a settlement. Lord Mountjoy divided his army into small parties, and harassed the rebels on every side: He built Charlemount and many other small forts, which were impregnable to the Irish, and guarded all the important passes of the country: The activity of Sir Henry Docwray and Sir Arthur Chichester, permitted no repose or security to the rebels: And many of the chieftains, after skulking, during some time, like wild beasts, in woods and morasses, submitted to mercy, and received such conditions as the deputy was pleased to impose upon them. Tyrone himself made applica-

1603.

^f Monson, p. 181.^g Camden, p. 647.^h This year the Spaniards begun the siege of Ostend, which was bravely defended for five months by Sir Francis Vere. The States then relieved him, by sending a new governor; and on the whole the siege lasted three years, and is computed to have cost the lives of an hundred thousand men.

CHAP.
XLIV.

1603.
Tyrone's
submission.

Queen's
sickness.

tion by Arthur Mac-Baron, his brother, to be received upon terms; but Mountjoy would not admit him, except he made an absolute surrender of his life and fortune to the Queen's mercy. He appeared before the deputy at Millefont, in a habit and posture suitable to his present fortune; and after acknowledging his offence in the most humble terms, he was committed to custody by Mountjoy, who intended to bring him over captive into England, to be disposed of at the Queen's pleasure.

BUT Elizabeth was now incapable of receiving any satisfaction from this fortunate event: She had fallen into a profound melancholy; which all the advantages of her high fortune, all the glories of her prosperous reign, were unable, in any degree, to alleviate or assuage. Some ascribed this depression of mind to her repentance of granting a pardon to Tyrone, whom she had always resolved to bring to condign punishment for his treasons, but who had made such interest with the ministers, as to extort a remission from her. Others, with more likelihood, accounted for her dejection, by a discovery which she had made, of the correspondence maintained in her court with her successor the King of Scots, and by the neglect to which, on account of her old age and infirmities, she imagined herself to be exposed. But there is another cause assigned for her melancholy, which has long been rejected by historians as romantic, but which late discoveries seem to have confirmed¹: Some incidents happened which revived her tenderness for Essex, and filled her with the deepest sorrow for the consent which she had unwarily given to his execution.

¹ See the proofs of this remarkable fact, collected in Birch's *Negotiations*, p. 206. And *Memoirs*, vol. ii. p. 481, 505, 506, &c.

THE earl of Essex, after his return from the fortunate expedition against Cadiz, observing the increase of the Queen's fond attachment towards him, took occasion to regret, that the necessity of her service required him often to be absent from her person, and exposed him to all those ill offices which his enemies, more assiduous in their attendance, could employ against him. She was moved with this tender jealousy; and making him the present of a ring, desired him to keep that pledge of her affection, and assured him, that into whatever disgrace he should fall, whatever prejudices she might be induced to entertain against him, yet, if he sent her that ring, she would immediately, upon the sight of it, recollect her former tenderness, would afford him again a hearing, and would lend a favourable ear to his apology. Essex, notwithstanding all his misfortunes, reserved this precious gift to the last extremity; but after his trial and condemnation, he resolved to try the experiment, and he committed the ring to the countess of Nottingham, whom he desired to deliver it to the Queen. The countess was prevailed on by her husband, who was Essex's capital enemy, not to execute the commission; and Elizabeth, who still expected that her favourite would make this last appeal to her tenderness, and who ascribed the neglect of it to his invincible obstinacy, was, after much delay, and many internal combats, pushed by resentment and policy to sign the warrant for his execution. The countess of Nottingham, falling into sickness, and finding herself approach towards her end, was seized with remorse for her conduct; and having obtained a visit from the Queen, she craved her pardon, and revealed to her the fatal secret. The Queen, astonished with this incident, burst into a furious passion: She shook the dying countess in her bed; and crying to

O o o 2

her,

CHAP. her, *That God might pardon her, but she never could,*
 XLIV. she broke from her, and thenceforth resigned herself over to the deepest and most incurable melancholy. She rejected all consolation: She even refused food and sustenance: And throwing herself on the floor, she kept herself silent and immovable, feeding her thoughts on her afflictions, and declaring life and existence an insufferable burthen to her. Few words she uttered; and they were all expressive of some inward grief which she cared not to reveal: But sighs and groans were the chief vent which she gave to her despondency, and which, tho' they discovered her sorrows, were never able to ease or assuage them. Ten days and nights she lay upon the carpet, leaning on cushions which her maids brought her; and her physicians could not persuade her to allow herself to be put to bed, much less to make trial of any remedies which they prescribed to her^k. Her anxious mind at last had so long preyed on her frail body, that her end was visibly approaching; and the council, being assembled, sent the lord keeper, the lord admiral, and the secretary, to know her mind with regard to her successor. She answered with a faint voice, that as she had held a regal scepter, she desired no other than a royal successor. Cecil requesting her to explain herself more particularly, she subjoined, that she would have a King to succeed her; and who should that be but her nearest kinsman, the King of Scots. Being then advised by the archbishop of Canterbury, to fix her thoughts upon God, she replied, that she did so, nor did her mind in the least wander from him. Her voice soon after left her, her senses failed, she fell into a lethargic slumber, which continued some hours, and she expired gently, without

And death,

24 March.

^k Strype, vol. iv. No 276.

farther

farther struggle or convulsion, in the seventieth year of her age, and forty-fifth of her reign. CHAP.
XLIV.

SUCH a dark cloud overcast the evening of that day, which had shone out with a mighty lustre in the eyes of all Europe. There are few great personages in history who have been more exposed to the calumny of enemies, and the adulation of friends, than Queen Elizabeth, and yet there scarce is any, whose reputation has been more certainly determined, by the unanimous consent of posterity. The unusual length of her administration, and the strong features of her character, were able to overcome all prejudices; and obliging her detractors to abate much of their invectives, and her admirers somewhat of their panegyrics, have at last, in spite of political factions, and what is more, of religious animosities, produced an uniform judgment with regard to her conduct. Her vigour, her constancy, her magnanimity, her penetration, vigilance, address, are allowed to merit the highest praises, and appear not to have been surpassed by any person who ever filled a throne: A conduct less rigorous, less imperious, more sincere, more indulgent to her people, would have been requisite to form a perfect character. By the force of her mind, she controuled all her more active and stronger qualities, and prevented them from running into excess: Her heroism was exempt from all temerity, her frugality from avarice, her friendship from partiality, her active temper from turbulence and a vain ambition: She guarded not herself with equal care or equal success from lesser infirmities; the rivalry of beauty, the desire of admiration, the jealousy of love, and the sallies of anger.

HER singular talents for government were founded equally on her temper and on her capacity. Endowed with a great command over herself, she soon obtained

obtained an uncontrouled ascendant over her people; and while she merited all their esteem by her real virtues, she also engaged their affection by her pretended ones. Few sovereigns of England succeeded to the throne in more difficult circumstances; and none ever conducted the government with such uniform success and felicity. Tho' unacquainted with the practice of toleration, the true secret for managing religious factions, she preserved her people by her superior prudence, from those confusions in which theological controversy had involved all the neighbouring nations: And tho' her enemies were the most powerful princes of Europe, the most active, the most enterprising, the least scrupulous, she was able by her vigour to make deep impressions on their state: Her own greatness mean while remained untouched and unimpaired.

THE wise ministers, and brave warriors, who flourished during her reign, share the praise of her success; but instead of lessening the applause due to her, they make great addition to it. They owed, all of them, their advancement to her choice; they were supported by her constancy; and with all their ability, they were never able to acquire any undue ascendant over her. In her family, in her court, in her kingdom, she remained equally mistress: The force of the tender passions was great over her, but the force of her mind was still superior; and the combat which her victory visibly cost her, serves only to display the firmness of her resolution, and the loftiness of her ambitious sentiments.

THE fame of this princess, tho' it has surmounted the prejudices both of faction and of bigotry, yet lies still exposed to another prejudice, which is more durable because more natural, and which according to the different views in which we survey her, is capable

able either of exalting beyond measure, or diminishing the lustre of her character. This prejudice is founded on the consideration of her sex. When we contemplate her as a woman, we are apt to be struck with the highest admiration of her great qualities and extensive capacity; but we are also apt to require some more softness of disposition, some greater lenity of temper, some of those amiable weaknesses by which her sex is distinguished. But the true method of estimating her merit, is to lay aside all these considerations, and consider her merely as a rational being, placed in authority, and entrusted with the government of mankind. We may find it difficult to reconcile our fancy to her as a wife or a mistress, but her qualities as a sovereign, tho' with some considerable exceptions, are the object of undisputed applause and approbation.

CHAP.

XLIV.

1603.

* * * * *

THE party amongst us who have distinguished themselves by their adherence to liberty and a popular Government, have long indulged their prejudices against the succeeding race of princes, by bestowing unbounded panegyrics on the virtue and wisdom of Elizabeth. They have been so extremely ignorant of transactions of this reign, as to extol her for a quality which, of all others, she was the least possessed of; a tender regard for the constitution, and a concern for the liberties and privileges of her people. But as it is scarce possible for the prepossessions of party to throw a veil much longer over facts so palpable and undeniable, there is danger lest the public should run into the opposite extreme, and should entertain an aversion to the memory of a princess who exercised the royal authority in a manner so contrary to all the ideas which we at present entertain

tain of a legal constitution. But Elizabeth only supported the prerogatives which were transmitted to her by her immediate predecessors: She believed that her subjects were entitled to no more liberty than their ancestors enjoyed: She found that they entirely acquiesced in her arbitrary administration: And it was not natural for her to find fault with a form of government, by which she herself was invested with such unlimited authority. In the particular exertions of power, the Question ought never to be forgot, *What is best?* But in the general distribution of power among the several members of a constitution, there can seldom be admitted any other question, than *What is usual?* Few examples occur of princes, who have willingly resigned their power: None of those who have, without struggle, allowed it to be extorted from them. If any other rule than established practice be followed, factions and dissensions, must multiply without end: And tho' many constitutions, and none more than the British, have been improved even by violent innovations, the praise which we bestow on those patriots, to whom we are indebted for our privileges, ought to be given with some reserve, and surely without the least rancour against those who adhered to the antient constitution.

In order to understand the antient constitution of England¹, there is not a period which deserves more to be studied than the reign of Elizabeth. The pre-

¹ By the antient constitution, is here meant that which prevailed before the settlement of our present plan of liberty. There was a more antient constitution, where tho' the people had perhaps less liberty than under the Tudors, yet the King had also less authority: The power of the barons was a great check upon him, and exercised great tyranny over them. But there was still a more antient constitution, viz. that before the signing of the charter, where neither the people nor the barons had any regular authority; and the power of the government was almost wholly in the King. The English constitution, like all others, has been in a state of continual fluctuation.

rogatives of this princess were scarce ever disputed, and she therefore employed them without scruple: CHAP. XLIV.

Her imperious temper, a circumstance in which she went far beyond her successors, rendered her exertions of power violent and frequent, and discovered the full extent of her authority: The great popularity which she enjoyed, proves, that she did not infringe any established liberties of the people: There remain monuments numerous enough to ascertain the most noted acts of her administration; and tho' these monuments must be sought for remote from the ordinary historians, they become only the more authentic on that account, and serve as a stronger proof, that the particular exertions of her power were conceived to be nothing but the ordinary course of administration, since they were not thought remarkable enough to be recorded even by contemporary writers. If there was any difference in this particular, the people, in former reigns, seem rather to have been more submissive than during the age of Elizabeth^m. It may not here be improper to recount some of the antient prerogatives of the crown, and lay open the sources of that great power which the English monarchs formerly enjoyed.

1603.

ONE of the most antient and most established instruments of power was the court of Star-chamber, which possessed an unlimited discretionary authority of fining, imprisoning, and inflicting corporal punishment, and whose jurisdiction extended to all sorts of offences, contempts, and disorders, that lay

^m In a memorial of the state of the realm, drawn by secretary Cecil, in 1569, there is this passage. "Then followeth the decay of obedience in civil policy, which being compared with the fearfulness and reverence of all inferior estates to their superiors in times past, will astonish any wise and considerate person, to behold the desperation of reformation." Haynes, p. 586. Again, p. 588.

CHAP.
XLIV.

1603.

tain of a legal constitution. But Elizabeth only supported the prerogatives which were transmitted to her by her immediate predecessors: She believed that her subjects were entitled to no more liberty than their ancestors enjoyed: She found that they entirely acquiesced in her arbitrary administration: And it was not natural for her to find fault with a form of government, by which she herself was invested with such unlimited authority. In the particular exertions of power, the Question ought never to be forgot, *What is best?* But in the general distribution of power among the several members of a constitution, there can seldom be admitted any other question, than *What is usual?* Few examples occur of princes, who have willingly resigned their power: None of those who have, without struggle, allowed it to be extorted from them. If any other rule than established practice be followed, factions and dissensions, must multiply without end: And tho' many constitutions, and none more than the British, have been improved even by violent innovations, the praise which we bestow on those patriots, to whom we are indebted for our privileges, ought to be given with some reserve, and surely without the least rancour against those who adhered to the antient constitution.

IN order to understand the antient constitution of England¹, there is not a period which deserves more to be studied than the reign of Elizabeth. The pre-

¹ By the antient constitution, is here meant that which prevailed before the settlement of our present plan of liberty. There was a more antient constitution, where tho' the people had perhaps less liberty than under the Tudors, yet the King had also less authority: The power of the barons was a great check upon him, and exercised great tyranny over them. But there was still a more antient constitution, viz. that before the signing of the charter, where neither the people nor the barons had any regular authority; and the power of the government was almost wholly in the King. The English constitution, like all others, has been in a state of continual fluctuation.

rogatives of this princess were scarce ever disputed, and she therefore employed them without scruple: CHAP. XLIV.

Her imperious temper, a circumstance in which she went far beyond her successors, rendered her exertions of power violent and frequent, and discovered the full extent of her authority: The great popularity which she enjoyed, proves, that she did not infringe any established liberties of the people: There remain monuments numerous enough to ascertain the most noted acts of her administration; and tho' these monuments must be sought for remote from the ordinary historians, they become only the more authentic on that account, and serve as a stronger proof, that the particular exertions of her power were conceived to be nothing but the ordinary course of administration, since they were not thought remarkable enough to be recorded even by contemporary writers. If there was any difference in this particular, the people, in former reigns, seem rather to have been more submissive than during the age of Elizabeth^m. It may not here be improper to recount some of the antient prerogatives of the crown, and lay open the sources of that great power which the English monarchs formerly enjoyed.

ONE of the most antient and most established instruments of power was the court of Star-chamber, which possessed an unlimited discretionary authority of fining, imprisoning, and inflicting corporal punishment, and whose jurisdiction extended to all sorts of offences, contempts, and disorders, that lay

^m In a memorial of the state of the realm, drawn by secretary Cecil, in 1569, there is this passage. "Then followeth the decay of obedience in civil policy, which being compared with the fearfulness and reverence of all inferior estates to their superiors in times past, will astonish any wise and considerate person, to behold the desperation of reformation." Haynes, p. 586. Again, p. 588.

CHAP.

XLIV.

1603.

not within reach of the common law. The members of this court consisted of the privy council and the judges; men, who all of them enjoyed their offices during pleasure: And when the prince himself was present, he was the sole judge, and all the others could only interpose with their advice. There needed but this one court in any government, to put an end to all regular, legal, and exact plans of liberty. For who durst set himself in opposition to the crown and ministry, or aspire to the character of being a patron of freedom, while exposed to so arbitrary a jurisdiction? I much question, whether any of the absolute monarchies in Europe contain, at present, so illegal and despotic a tribunal.

THE court of High Commission was another jurisdiction still more terrible, both because the crime of heresy, of which it took cognizance, was more undefinable than any civil offence, and because its methods of inquisition and of administering oaths, were more contrary to all the most simple ideas of justice and equity. The fines and imprisonments imposed by this court were frequent: The deprivations and suspensions of the clergy for non-conformity, were also very numerous, and comprehended at one time the third of all the ecclesiastics of Englandⁿ. The Queen, in a letter to the archbishop of Canterbury, said expressly, that she was resolved, "That no man should be suffered to decline either on the left or on the right hand, from the drawn line limited by authority, and by her laws and injunctions^o."

BUT Martial law went far beyond even these two courts in a prompt and arbitrary and violent method of decision. Whenever there was any insurrection or public disorder, the crown employed martial law; and

ⁿ Neal, vol. i. p. 479.^o Murden, p. 183.

it was, during that time, exercised not only over CHAP.
the soldiers, but over the whole people: Any one XLIV.
might be punished as a rebel, or an aider and abet- 1603.
tor of rebellion, whom the provost-martial or lieute-
nant of counties, or their deputies, pleased to sus-
pect. Lord Bacon says, that the trial at common
law granted to the earl of Essex, and his fellow con-
spirators, was a favour: For that the case would
have born and required the severity of martial law^p.
We have seen instances of its being employed by
Queen Mary in defence of orthodoxy. There re-
mains a letter of Queen Elizabeth's to the earl of
Suffex, after the suppression of the northern rebelli-
on, in which she reproves him sharply, because she
had not heard of his having done any execution by
martial law^q; tho' it is probable, that near eight
hundred persons suffered, one way or other, on ac-
count of that slight insurrection. But the Kings
of England did not always limit the exercise of
this law to the times of war and rebellion. In 1552,
when there was no rebellion or insurrection, King
Edward granted a commission of martial law; and
empowered the commissioners to execute it, *as should*
be thought by their discretions most necessary^r. Queen
Elizabeth too was not sparing in the use of this law.
In 1573, one Peter Burchet a puritan, being per-
suaded that it was lawful or meritorious to kill such
as opposed the truth of the gospel, ran into the
streets, and wounded Hawkins, the famous sea-
captain, whom he took for Hatton, the Queen's
favourite. The Queen was so incensed that she or-
dered him to be punished instantly by martial law;
but upon the remonstrance of some prudent counsel-
lors, who told her, that that law ought to be confined

^p Vol. iv. p. 510.
Paper Office.
373, 458, 9.

^q MS. of lord Royston's from the
^r Strype's Eccles. Memoirs, vol. ii. p.

to turbulent times, she recalled her order, and delivered over Burchet to the common law*. But she continued not always so reserved in exerting this authority. There remains a proclamation of hers, in which she orders martial law to be used against all such as import bulls, or even forbidden books and pamphlets from abroad†; and prohibits the lieutenants or their deputies to be questioned for their arbitrary punishment of such offenders, *any law or statute to the contrary in any wise notwithstanding*. We have another act of hers still more extraordinary. The streets of London were very much infested with idle vagabonds and riotous persons: The lord mayor had endeavoured to repress this disorder: The Star-chamber had exerted its authority, and inflicted punishment on these rioters: But the Queen, finding those remedies ineffectual, revived martial law, and gave Sir Thomas Wilfold a commission of provost-marshal: "Granting him authority and commanding him, upon signification given by the justices of peace in London or the neighbouring counties, of such offenders, worthy to be speedily executed by martial law to attach and take the same persons, and in the presence of the said justices, according to the justice of martial law, to execute them upon the gallows or gibbet openly, or near to such place where the said rebellious and incorrigible offenders shall be found to have committed the said great offences." I suppose it will be difficult to produce an instance of such an act of authority in any place nearer than Muscovy.

THE Star chamber, and High Commission, and Court Martial, tho' arbitrary jurisdictions, yet had still some pretence of a trial, at least a sentence; but there

* Camden, p. 446. Strype, vol. ii. p. 288.
vol. iii. p. 570.

† Rymer, tom. xvi. p. 279.

‡ Strype,

was a grievous punishment very familiarly inflicted in that age, without any other authority than the warrant of a secretary of state, or of the privy-council^x; and that was, imprisonment, in any jail, and during any time that these ministers should think proper. In suspicious times, all the jails were full of prisoners of state; and these unhappy victims of public jealousy were sometimes thrown into dungeons, and loaded with irons, and treated in the most cruel manner, without their being able to obtain any remedy from law.

C H A P.
XLIV.
1603.

THIS practice was an indirect way of employing torture: But the rack itself was frequently used, upon any suspicion, without other authority than a warrant from the secretary or the privy council. Even the council in the marches of Wales were empowered, by their very commission, to make use of torture, whenever they thought proper^y. There cannot be a stronger proof how lightly the rack was employed, than the following story, told by lord Bacon. We shall give it in his own words. "The Queen was mightily incensed against Haywarde, on account of a book he dedicated to lord Essex, being a story of the first year of King Henry the fourth, thinking it a seditious prelude to put in to the people's heads boldness and faction^z: She said, she had an opinion that there was treason in it, and asked me, if I could not find any places in it, that might be drawn within the case of treason: Whereto I answered, For treason, sure I found none; but for felony, very many: And when her majesty hastily asked me, Wherein? I told

^x In 1588, the lord mayor committed several citizens to prison, because they refused to pay the loan demanded of them. Murden, p. 632.

^y Haynes, p. 196.

^z To our apprehension, Haywarde's book seems rather to have a contrary tendency. For he has there preserved the famous speech of the Bishop of Carlisle, which contains, in the most express terms, the Doctrine of passive obedience. But Queen Elizabeth was very difficult to please on this head.

" her,

CHAP. XLIV. "her, the author had committed very apparent theft: For he had taken most of the sentences of Cornelius Tacitus, and translated them into English, and put them into his text. And another time, when the Queen could not be persuaded, that it was his writing whose name was to it, but that it had some more mischievous author, and said with great indignation, that she would have him racked to produce his author; I replied, Nay, madam, he is a doctor, never rack his person, but rack his style: Let him have pen, ink, and paper, and help of books, and be enjoined to continue the story where it breaketh off, and I will undertake, by collating the styles, to judge whether he were the author or no." Thus, had it not been for Bacon's humanity, or rather his wit, this author, a man of letters, had been put to the rack, for a most innocent performance. His real offence was, his dedicating a book to that munificent patron of the learned, the earl of Essex, at a time when this nobleman lay under disgrace with her majesty.

THE Queen's menace of trying and punishing Haywarde for treason, could easily have been executed, let his book have been ever so innocent. While so many terrors hung over the people, no jury durst have acquitted a man whom the court was resolved to have condemned. The practice also of not confronting the witnesses with the prisoner, gave the crown lawyers all imaginable advantages against him. And, indeed, there scarce occurs an instance, during all these reigns, that the sovereign, or the ministers, were ever disappointed in the issue of a prosecution. Timid juries, and judges who held their offices during pleasure, never failed to second all the views of the court.

^a Cabbala, p. 81.

THE power of pressing, and obliging any person to accept of any office, was another prerogative totally incompatible with freedom. Osborne gives the following account of Elizabeth's method of employing this prerogative. "In case she found any likely " to interrupt her occasions," says he, " she did " seasonably prevent him by a chargeable employ- " ment abroad, or putting him upon some service " at home, which she knew least grateful to the " people : Contrary to a false maxim, since practised " with far worse success, by such princes as thought " it better husbandry to buy off enemies than re- " ward friends ^b." The practice with which Osborne reproaches the two immediate successors of Elizabeth, proceeded partly from the extreme difficulty of their situation, partly from the greater lenity of their disposition. The power of pressing, as may naturally be imagined, was often abused ; and money was exacted by the officers for freeing persons from the service ^c.

CHAP.
XLIV.

1603.

THE government of England during that age, however different in other particulars, bore in this respect, some resemblance to that of Turkey at present : The sovereign possessed every power, except that of imposing taxes : And in both countries this limitation, unsupported by other privileges, appears rather prejudicial to the people. In Turkey, it obliges the Sultan to permit the extortion of the bashas and governors of provinces, from whom he afterwards squeezes presents or takes forfeitures : In England, it engaged the Queen to erect monopolies, and grant patents for exclusive trade : An invention so pernicious, that, had she gone on, during a tract of years, at her own rate, England, the seat of riches, and arts, and commerce,

^b Page. 392.

^c Murden, p. 181.

would

CHAP. would have contained at present as little industry as
 XLIV. Morocco, or the coast of Barbary.

^{1603.} WE may further observe, that this valuable privilege, valuable only because it proved afterwards the means by which the Parliament extorted all their other privileges, was very much encroached on, in an indirect manner, during the reign of Elizabeth, as well as of her predecessors. She often exacted loans from her people; an arbitrary and unequal kind of imposition and which individuals felt severely: For tho' the money had been regularly restored, which was seldom the case^d, it lay in the prince's hands without interest, which was a sensible loss to the individuals from whom the money was borrowed^e.

THERE remains a proposal made by the lord Burleigh, for levying a general loan on the people, equivalent to a subsidy^f; a scheme which would have laid the burthen more equally, but which was, in different words, nothing but a taxation, imposed without consent of Parliament. It is remarkable, that the scheme, thus proposed, without any visible necessity, by that wise minister, is the very same which Henry the eighth attempted, and which Charles the first, enraged by ill usage from his Parliament, and reduced to the greatest difficulties, put afterwards in practice, to the great discontent of the nation.

THE demand of benevolence was another invention of that age for taxing the people. This practice was so little conceived to be irregular, that the commons, in 1585, offered the Queen a benevolence; which she very generously refused, as having no occasion, at that

^d Bacon, vol. iv. p. 362. ^e In the second of Richard II. it was enacted that in loans, which the King shall require of his subjects, upon letters of Privy Seal, such as have *reasonable* excuse of not lending, may there be received without further summons, travel or grief. See Cotton's Abridg. p. 170. By the law, the King's Prerogative of exacting loans was ratify'd; and what ought to be deem'd a *reasonable* excuse was still left in his own breast, to judge of. ^f Haynes, p. 518, 519.

time, for money^g. Queen Mary also, by an order of council, increased the customs in some branches; and her sister imitated the example^h. There was a species of ship money imposed at the time of the Spanish invasion. The several ports were required to equip a certain number of ships at their own charge; and such was the alacrity of the people for the public defence, that some of the ports, particularly London, sent double the number demanded of themⁱ. When any levies were made for Ireland, France, or the Low Countries, the Queen obliged the counties to raise the soldiers, to arm and cloth them, and carry them to the seaports at their own charge. New Year's gifts were, at that time expected from the nobility, and from the more considerable gentry^k.

CHAP. XLIV.

1603.

PURVEYANCE was another method of taxation, unequal, arbitrary and oppressive. The whole kingdom felt sensibly the burthen of this imposition; and it was regarded as a great privilege which was conferred on Oxford and Cambridge, to prohibit the purveyors from taking any commodities within five miles of these universities. The Queen victualled her navy by means of this prerogative, during the first years of her government^l.

WARDSHIP was the most regular and legal of all these impositions by prerogative. Yet was it a great badge of slavery, and oppressive to the great families. When an estate fell to a female, the sovereign obliged her to marry any one he pleased: Whether the heir was male or female, the crown enjoyed the whole profit of the rents during the minority. The giving a rich wardship was an usual method of rewarding a courtier or favourite.

^g D'Ewes, p. 494.
^h Bacon. vol. iv. p. 362.
ⁱ Mon-
 son, p. 267.
^k Strype's Memor. vol. i. p. 137.
^l Cam-
 den, p. 388.

CHAP. would have contained at present as little industry as
 XLIV. Morocco, or the coast of Barbary.

1603. WE may further observe, that this valuable privilege, valuable only because it proved afterwards the means by which the Parliament extorted all their other privileges, was very much encroached on, in an indirect manner, during the reign of Elizabeth, as well as of her predecessors. She often exacted loans from her people; an arbitrary and unequal kind of imposition and which individuals felt severely: For tho' the money had been regularly restored, which was seldom the case^d, it lay in the prince's hands without interest, which was a sensible loss to the individuals from whom the money was borrowed^e.

THERE remains a proposal made by the lord Burleigh, for levying a general loan on the people, equivalent to a subsidy^f; a scheme which would have laid the burthen more equally, but which was, in different words, nothing but a taxation, imposed without consent of Parliament. It is remarkable, that the scheme, thus proposed, without any visible necessity, by that wise minister, is the very same which Henry the eighth attempted, and which Charles the first, enraged by ill usage from his Parliament, and reduced to the greatest difficulties, put afterwards in practice, to the great discontent of the nation.

THE demand of benevolence was another invention of that age for taxing the people. This practice was so little conceived to be irregular, that the commons, in 1585, offered the Queen a benevolence; which she very generously refused, as having no occasion, at that

^d Bacon, vol. iv. p. 362. ^e In the second of Richard II. it was enacted that in loans, which the King shall require of his subjects, upon letters of Privy Seal, such as have *reasonable* excuse of not lending, may there be received without further summons, travel or grief. See Cotton's Abridg. p. 170. By the law, the King's Prerogative of exacting loans was ratify'd; and what ought to be deem'd a *reasonable* excuse was still left in his own breast, to judge of. ^f Haynes, p. 518, 519.

time, for money^g. Queen Mary also, by an order of council, increased the customs in some branches; and her sister imitated the example^h. There was a species of ship money imposed at the time of the Spanish invasion. The several ports were required to equip a certain number of ships at their own charge; and such was the alacrity of the people for the public defence, that some of the ports, particularly London, sent double the number demanded of themⁱ. When any levies were made for Ireland, France, or the Low Countries, the Queen obliged the counties to raise the soldiers, to arm and cloth them, and carry them to the seaports at their own charge. New Year's gifts were, at that time expected from the nobility, and from the more considerable gentry^k.

CHAP.
XLIV.
1603.

PURVEYANCE was another method of taxation, unequal, arbitrary and oppressive. The whole kingdom felt sensibly the burthen of this imposition; and it was regarded as a great privilege which was conferred on Oxford and Cambridge, to prohibit the purveyors from taking any commodities within five miles of these universities. The Queen victualled her navy by means of this prerogative, during the first years of her government^l.

WARDSHIP was the most regular and legal of all these impositions by prerogative. Yet was it a great badge of slavery, and oppressive to the great families. When an estate fell to a female, the sovereign obliged her to marry any one he pleased: Whether the heir was male or female, the crown enjoyed the whole profit of the rents during the minority. The giving a rich wardship was an usual method of rewarding a courtier or favourite.

^g D'Ewes, p. 494.
son, p. 267.
den, p. 388.

^h Bacon. vol. iv. p. 362.
^k Strype's Memor. vol. i. p. 137.

ⁱ Mon-
^l Cam-

THE inventions were endless, which arbitrary power might employ for extorting of money, while the people imagined that their property was secured by the crown's being debarred from imposing taxes. Strype has preserved a speech of lord Burleigh to the Queen and council, wherein are contained some particulars not a little extraordinary^m. Burleigh proposes that she should erect a court for the correction of all abuses, and should confer on the commissioners a general inquisitorial power over the whole kingdom. He sets before her eyes the example of her wise grandfather, Henry the seventh, who, by such methods, augmented extremely his revenue; and he recommends, that this new court should proceed, "as well by the direction and ordinary course of the laws, as by virtue of her majesty's supreme regiment and *absolute power, from whence law proceeded*." In a word, he expects from this institution, greater accession to the royal treasure, than Henry the eighth derived from abolition of the abbey, and all the forfeitures of the ecclesiastical revenues. This project of lord Burleigh needs not, I think, any comment. A form of government must be very arbitrary, where a wise and good minister could make such a proposal to the sovereign.

EMBARGOES on merchandize was another engine of royal power, by which the English princes were able to extort money from the people. We have seen instances in the reign of Mary. Elizabeth, before her coronation, issued an order to the custom-house, prohibiting the sale of all crimson silks which should be imported, till the court was first providedⁿ. She expected, no doubt, a good penny-worth from the merchants, while they lay under this restraint.

^m Annals, vol. iv. p. 234, & seq.
27.

ⁿ Strype, vol. i. p.

THE Parliament pretended to the right of enact-
 ing laws, as well as of granting subsidies; but this
 privilege was, during that age, still more insignifi-
 cant than the other. Queen Elizabeth expressly
 prohibited them from meddling with state matters
 or ecclesiastical causes: and she openly sent the
 members to prison, who dared to transgress her im-
 perial edict in these particulars. There passed few
 Parliaments, during her reign, where there occur
 not instances of this arbitrary conduct.

CHAP.
 XLIV.
 1603.

BUT the legislative power of the Parliament was
 a mere fallacy, while the sovereign was universally
 acknowledged to possess a dispensing power, by
 which all the laws could be invalidated, and rendered
 of no effect. The use of this power was also an indirect
 method practised for erecting monopolies. Where
 the statutes laid any branch of manufacture under
 restrictions, the sovereign, by exempting one per-
 son from the laws, gave him in effect the monopoly
 of that commodity*. There was no grievance,
 at that time, more universally complained of, than
 the frequent dispensing with the penal laws†.

BUT in reality, the crown possessed the full legis-
 lative power, by means of proclamations, which
 might affect any subject of the greatest importance,
 and which the Star-chamber took care to see more
 rigorously executed than the laws themselves. The
 motives of these proclamations were sometimes ve-
 ry frivolous and even ridiculous. Queen Elizabeth
 had taken offence at the smell of woad; and she
 issued an edict prohibiting any one to cultivate
 that useful plant‡. She was also pleased to take
 offence at the long swords and high ruffs then in
 fashion: She sent about her officers, to break every

* Rymer, tom. xv. p. 756. D'Ewes, p. 645. P Murden,
 p. 325. † Townsend's Journals, p. 250. Stow's Annals.

CHAP. XLIV. man's sword, and clip every man's ruff, which was beyond a certain length^r. This practice resembles somewhat the method employed by the great Czar Peter, to make his subjects change their garb.

1603.

THE Queen's prohibition of the prophesyings was founded on a better reason; but shews still the unlimited extent of her prerogative. Two or three people could not meet together, in order to read the scriptures, and confer about religion, tho' in ever so orthodox a manner, without her permission.

THERE were many other branches of prerogative incompatible with an exact or regular enjoyment of liberty. None of the nobility could marry without permission from the sovereign. The Queen detained the earl of Southampton long in prison, because he privately married the earl of Essex's cousin^s. No man could travel without the consent of the prince. Sir William Evers underwent a severe persecution, because he had presumed to pay a private visit to the King of Scots^t.

THE Parliament in the thirteenth of the Queen praised her for not imitating the practice, usual among her predecessors, of stopping the course of justice by particular warrants^u. There could not possibly be a greater abuse, nor a stronger mark of arbitrary power; and the Queen in refraining from it, was very laudable. But she was by no means constant in this reserve. There remain in the public records some warrants of her's for exempting persons from all law-suits and prosecutions^x; and these warrants, she says, she grants from her royal prerogative, which she will not allow to be disputed.

^r Townsend's Journals, p. 250. Stow's Annals. Strype, vol. ii. p. 603. ^s Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 422. ^t Ibid. p. 511. ^u D'Ewes, p. 141. ^x Rymer, tom. xv. p. 652, 708, 777.

It was very usual in Queen Elizabeth's reign, CHAP.
and probably in all the preceding reigns, for no- XLIV.
bleman or privy counsellors to commit to prison 1603.
any one, who had happened to displease them by
suing for his just debts; and the person, tho' he
gained his cause in the courts of justice, was com-
monly obliged to relinquish his property in order
to obtain his liberty. Some likewise, who had
been delivered from prison by the judges, have a-
gain been committed to custody in secret places
without any possibility of obtaining relief; and even
the officers and serjeants of the courts of law
have been punished for executing the writs in fa-
vour of these persons. Nay, it was usual to send
for people by pursuivants, a kind of harpies, who
then attended the orders of the council and high
commission; and they were brought up to London,
and constrained by imprisonment, not only to with-
draw their lawful suits, but also to pay the pursui-
vants great sums of money. The judges in the
34th of the Queen, complain to her majesty of the
frequency of this practice. It is probable, that
that tyranny was carried no further down than the
reign of Elizabeth; since the Parliament, who ob-
tained the petition of right, found no later instances
of it^y. And even these very judges of Eliza-
beth, who thus protect the people against the tyran-
ny of the great, expressly allow, that a person com-
mitted by special command from the Queen, is not
bailable.

It is easy to imagine, that, in such a government,
no justice could, by course of law, be obtained of the
sovereign, unless he was willing to allow it. In the
naval expedition, undertaken by Raleigh and Forbisher
against the Spaniards, in 1592, a very rich carrack
was taken worth two hundred thousand pounds. The

^y Rushworth, vol. i. p. 511. Franklyn's Annals, p. 250,
251.

CHAP. Queen's share in the adventure was only a tenth
 XLIV. part; but as the prize was so great, and exceeded
 1603. so much the expectations of all the adventurers,
 she was determined not to rest contented with her
 share. Raleigh, humbly and earnestly begged her
 to accept of an hundred thousand pounds, in lieu
 of all demands, or rather exactions; and says,
 that the present, which the proprietors were wil-
 ling to make her of eighty thousand pounds, was
 the greatest that ever a prince received from a sub-
 ject².

BUT it is no wonder the Queen, in her admini-
 stration, should pay so little regard to liberty; while
 the Parliament itself, in enacting laws, were so en-
 tirely negligent of it. The persecuting statutes,
 which they passed against papists and puritans, are
 extremely contrary to the genius of freedom; and
 by exposing such multitudes to the tyranny of priests
 and bigots, accustomed the people to the most dis-
 graceful subjection. Their conferring an unlimited
 supremacy on the Queen, or what is worse, acknow-
 ledging her inherent right to it, was another proof of
 their voluntary servitude.

THE law of the 23d of her reign, making se-
 ditious words against the Queen capital, is also a
 very tyrannical statute; and an use, no less tyran-
 nical, was sometimes made of it. The case of
 Udal, a puritanical clergyman, seems singular,
 even in those arbitrary times. This man had pub-
 lished a book called a demonstration of disci-
 pline, in which he inveighed against the govern-
 ment of bishops; and tho' he had carefully endeav-
 oured to conceal his name, he was thrown into pri-
 son upon suspicion, and brought to his trial for this
 offence. It was pretended, that the bishops were part
 of the Queen's political body; and to speak against

² Strype, vol. iv. p. 128, 129.

them, was really to attack her, and was therefore felony by the statute. This was not the only iniquity, to which Udal was exposed. The judges would not allow the jury to determine any thing but the fact, whether Udal had wrote the book, or not, without examining his intentions, or the import of the words. In order to prove the fact, the crown lawyers did not produce a single witness to the court: They only read the testimony of two persons absent, one of whom said that Udal had told him he was the author; another, that a friend of Udal's had said so. They would not allow Udal to produce any exculpatory evidence; which, they said, was never to be permitted against the Queen. And they tendered him an oath, by which he was required to swear, that he was not author of the book; and his refusal to give that testimony was employed as the strongest proof of his guilt. It is almost needless to add, that, notwithstanding these multiplied iniquities, a verdict of death was given by the jury against Udal: For as the Queen was extremely bent upon his prosecution, it was impossible he could escape^a. He died in prison before the execution of the sentence.

THE case of Penry was, if possible, still harder. This man was a zealous puritan, or rather, a Brownist; and he had wrote against the hierarchy several tracts, such as *Martin Mar-prelate*, *Theses Martinianæ*, and other compositions full of low scurrility and petulant satire. After concealing himself for some years, he was seized; and as the statute against seditious words required that the criminal should be tried within a year after committing the offence, he could not be indicted for his printed books. He was therefore tried

^a State Trials, vol. i. p. 144. Strype, vol. iv. p. 21. Id. Life of Whitgift, p. 343.

CHAP. XLIV. for some papers found in his pocket, as if he had thereby scattered sedition^b. It was also imputed to him, by the lord keeper, Puckering, that in some of these papers, "he had only acknowledged her majesty's royal power to *establish* laws, ecclesiastical and civil; but had avoided the *usual* terms of "making, enacting, decreeing, and ordaining laws: "Which imply," says the lord keeper, "a most absolute authority^c." Penry for these offences was condemned and executed.

1603.

THUS we have seen that *the most absolute* authority of the sovereign, to make use of the lord keeper's phrase, was established on above twenty branches of prerogative, which are now abolished, and which were, every one of them, totally incompatible with the liberty of the subject. But what ensured more effectually the slavery of the people, than even these branches of prerogative, was, the established principles of the times, which attributed to the prince such an unlimited and indefeasible power, as was supposed to be the origin of all law, and could be bounded and circumscribed by none. The homilies, published for the use of the clergy, and which they were enjoined to read every Sunday in all the churches, inculcate every where a blind, and unlimited passive-obedience to the prince, which, on no account, and under no pretence, is it ever lawful for them, in the smallest article, to depart from or infringe. Much noise has been made, because some court chaplains, during the succeeding reigns, were permitted to preach such doctrines; but there is a great difference between these sermons, and discourses published by authority, avowed by the prince and council, and promulgated to the whole nation^d. So

^b Strype's Life of Whitgift, book iv. chap. 11. Neal, vol. I. p. 564.

^c Strype, vol. iv. p. 177.

^d Gifford, a clergyman, was suspended in 1584, for preaching up a limited obedience to the civil magistrate. Neal, vol. i. p. 435.

thoroughly

thoroughly were these principles imbibed by the people during the reigns of Elizabeth and her immediate predecessors, that opposition to them was regarded as the most flagrant sedition, and was not even rewarded by that public praise and approbation, which can alone support men under such dangers and difficulties, as attend the resistance of tyrannical authority. It was only during the next generation that the noble principles of liberty took root, and spreading themselves, under the shelter of puritanical absurdities, became fashionable among the people.

C H A P.
XLIV.
1603.

It is worth remarking, that the advantage usually ascribed to absolute monarchy, a greater regularity of police and a more strict execution of the laws, did not attend the former English government, tho' in many respects it fell under that denomination: A demonstration of this truth is contained in a judicious paper, which is preserved by Strype^e; and which was wrote by an eminent justice of peace of Somersetshire, in the year 1596, near the end of the queen's reign when the authority of that princess may be supposed to be fully corroborated, by time, and her maxims of government improved by long practice. This paper contains an account of the disorders which then prevailed in the county of Somerset. The author says, that forty persons had been there executed in a year for robberies, thefts, and other felonies; thirty-five burnt in the hand, thirty-seven whipt, one hundred and eighty-three discharged: That those who were discharged were most wicked and desperate persons, who never could come to any good, because they would not work, and none would take them into service: That notwithstanding this great number of indictments, the

^e Annals, vol. iv. p. 290.

CHAP. fifth part of the felonies committed in the county
 XLIV. were not brought to a trial, the greater number
 1603. escaped censure, either from the superior cunning
 of the felons, the remissness of the magistrates, or
 the foolish lenity of the people: That the rapines
 committed by the infinite number of wicked, wan-
 dering, idle people were intolerable to the poor
 countrymen, and obliged them to a perpetual watch
 of their sheep-folds, their pastures, their woods and
 their corn-fields: That the other counties of Eng-
 land were in no better condition than Somersetshire;
 and many of them were even in a worse: That there
 were at least three or four hundred able-bodied va-
 gabonds in every county, who lived by theft and
 rapine; and who sometimes met in troops to the
 number of sixty, and committed spoil on the inha-
 bitants: That if all the felons of this kind were as-
 sembled, they would be able, if reduced to good
 subjection, to give the greatest enemy her majesty
 has a strong battle: And that the magistrates them-
 selves were intimidated from executing justice upon
 them; and there were examples of justices of peace,
 who, after giving sentence against rogues, had inter-
 posed to stop the execution of their own sentence on
 account of the danger, which hung over them from
 the confederates of these felons.

IN the year 1575, the Queen complained in Parlia-
 ment of the bad execution of the laws; and threaten-
 ed, if the magistrates were not, for the future, more
 vigilant, that she would entrust authority to indigent
 and needy persons, who would find an interest
 in the more exact distribution of justice^f. It appears,
 that she was as good as her word. For in 1601, there
 were great complaints made in Parliament of the ra-
 pine of justices of peace; and a member said, that this

^f D'Ewes, p. 234.

magistrate was an animal, who, for half a dozen CHAP.
 of chickens, would dispense with a dozen of penal XLIV.
 statutes^s. It is not easy to account for this relaxati-
 on of government, and neglect of police, during a 1603.
 reign of so much vigour as that of Elizabeth. The
 small revenue of the crown is the most likely cause that
 can be assigned. The Queen had it not in her power
 to interest a great number in assisting her to execute
 the laws.

ON the whole, the English have no reason, from
 the example of their ancestors, to be in love with
 the picture of absolute monarchy; or to prefer the
 unlimited authority of the prince, and his unbound-
 ed prerogatives, to that noble liberty, that sweet
 equality, and that happy security, by which they are
 at present distinguished above all nations of the uni-
 verse. The utmost that can be said in favour of the
 government of that age (and perhaps it may be said
 with truth) is, that the power of the prince, tho' re-
 ally unlimited, was exercised after the European
 manner, and entered not into every part of the ad-
 ministration; that the instances of a high exerted
 prerogative were not so frequent as to render prop-
 erty sensibly insecure, or reduce the people to a total
 servitude; that the freedom from faction, the quick-
 ness of execution, and the promptitude of those mea-
 sures, which could be taken for offence, or defence,
 made some compensation for the want of a legal and
 determined liberty; that as the prince commanded
 no mercenary army, there was a tacit check on him,
 which maintained the government in that me-
 dium, to which the people had been accustomed;
 and that this situation of England was in reality
 more remote from, tho' seemingly it approached
 nearer to, a despotic and eastern monarchy, than the

^s Ibid. p. 661--664.

CHAP.
XLIV.

1603.

present government, of that kingdom where the people tho' guarded by multiplied laws, are totally naked, defenceless, and disarmed.

WE shall close this chapter with a brief account of the revenues, the military force, the commerce, the arts, and the learning of England during this period.

QUEEN Elizabeth's œconomy was very remarkable; and in some instances seemed to border on avarice. The smallest expence, if it could possibly be saved, appeared considerable in her eyes; and even the charge of an express, during the most delicate transactions, was not below her notice^b. She was also attentive to every profit; and embraced opportunities of gain, which may appear somewhat extraordinary. She kept the see of Ely vacant nineteen years, in order to pocket the revenueⁱ; and it was usual with her, when she promoted a bishop, to take the opportunity of pillaging the see of some of its manors^k. But that there was in reality little or no avarice in the Queen's temper appears from this circumstance, that she never amassed any treasure; and even refused subsidies from the Parliament, when she had no present occasion for them. Yet we must not conclude from this circumstance, that her œconomy proceeded from a tender concern for her people: She loaded them with monopolies and exclusive patents, which are infinitely more oppressive than the most heavy taxes, levied in a legal and regular manner. The real source of her frugal conduct was derived from her desire of independency, and her care to preserve her dignity, which would have been endangered, had she reduced herself to the necessity of having frequent recourse to parliamentary supplies. In consequence of this motive, the Queen, tho' en-

^b Birch's Negot. p. 21.
17215.

ⁱ Strype, vol. iv. p. 351.

^k Ibid.

gaged in successful and necessary wars, thought it CHAP.
XLIV.
more prudent to make a continual dilapidation of the
royal demesnes^k, than demand the most moderate
supplies from the commons. As she lived unmarried
and had no posterity, she was contented to serve her
present turn, tho' at the expence of her successors,
who, by reason of this policy, joined to other acci-
dents, found themselves, on a sudden, reduced to
the most extreme indigence. 1603.

THE splendor of a court was, during this age, a
great part of the public charge; and as Elizabeth
was a single woman, and expensive in no kind of
magnificence, except cloaths, this circumstance ena-
bled her to perform great things by her narrow re-
venue. She is said to have paid four millions of
debt, left on the crown by her father, brother, and
sister; an incredible sum for that age^l. The states
at the time of her death owed her about eight hun-
dred thousand pounds: And the King of France four
hundred and fifty thousand^m. Tho' that prince was
extremely frugal, and after the peace of Vervins,
was continually amassing treasure, the Queen never
could, by the most pressing remonstrances, prevail
on him to make payment of those sums, which she
had so generously advanced him, during his great-
est distresses. One payment of twenty thousand
crowns, and another of fifty thousand, were all she
could obtain, by the strongest representations she
could make of the difficulties to which the rebellion
in Ireland had reduced herⁿ. The Queen expended
on the wars with Spain between 1589 and 1593, the

^k Rymer, tom. xvi. p. 141. D'Ewes, p. 151, 457, 525, 629. Bacon, vol. iv. p. 363.

^l D'Ewes, p. 473. I think it impossible to reconcile this account of the public debts with that given by Strype, Eccles. Mem. vol. ii. p. 344. that in the year 1553, the crown owed but 300,000 pounds. I own, that this last sum appears a great deal more likely. The whole revenue of Queen Elizabeth would not in ten years have paid four millions.

^m Winwood, vol. i. p. 29, 54.

ⁿ Ibid. p. 117, 395.
sum

CHAP.
XLIV.

1603.

sum of one million three hundred thousand pounds, beside the double subsidy, amounting to two hundred and eighty thousand pounds, granted her by Parliament^a. In the year 1599 she spent six hundred thousand pounds in six months in the service of Ireland^b. Sir Robert Cecil affirmed, that in ten years time, Ireland cost her three millions four hundred thousand pounds^c. She gave the earl of Essex a present of thirty thousand pounds upon his departure for the government of that kingdom^d. Lord Burleigh computed that the value of the gifts conferred on that favourite amounted to three hundred thousand pounds: a proof of her strong affection towards him! It was a common saying during this reign; *The Queen pays bountifully, tho' she rewards sparingly*^e.

It is difficult to compute exactly the Queen's ordinary revenue, but it certainly fell much short of five hundred thousand pounds a year^f. In 1590, she raised the customs from fourteen thousand pounds a year to fifty thousand, and obliged Sir Thomas Smith, who had farmed them, to refund some of his former profits^g. This improvement of the revenue was owing to the suggestions of one Caermarden; and was extremely opposed by Burleigh, Leicester, and Walsingham. But the Queen's perseverance overcame all their opposition. The great undertakings, which she executed with so narrow a revenue, and with such small supplies from her people, prove the mighty effects of wisdom and

^a D'Ewes, p. 483.^b Camden, p. 167.^c Appendix

to the earl of Essex's apology.

^d Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii.^e Nanton's Regalia, chap. i.^f Franklyn in his annals p.9, says that the profit of the kingdom, besides Wards and the dutchy of Lancaster (*which amounted to about 120,000 pounds*) was 188,197 pounds, the crown lands seem to be comprehended in this computation.^g Camden, p. 558. This account of Camden is difficult or impossible to be reconciled to the state of the customs in the beginning of the subsequent reign, as they appear in the journals of the commons. See Hist. of James, chap. 1.

oeconomy. She received from the Parliament, during the course of her whole reign, only twenty subsidies and thirty-nine fifteenths. It is not easy to compute exactly the amount of these supplies; because the value of a subsidy was continually falling; and in the end of her reign it amounted only to eighty thousand pounds*, tho' in the beginning it had been an hundred and twenty thousand. If we suppose that the supplies granted Elizabeth during a reign of forty-five years amounted to three millions, we shall not probably be much wide of the truth†. This sum makes only sixty-six thousand six hundred and sixty-six pounds a year; and it is surprizing, that while the Queen's demands were so moderate, and her expences so well regulated, she should ever have found any difficulty of getting a supply from the Parliament, or be reduced to make sale of the crown-lands. But such was the extreme, I had almost said, absurd parsimony of the Parliaments during that period. They valued nothing in comparison of their money: The members had no connexion with the court; and the very idea, which they conceived of the trust committed to them, was, to reduce the demands of the crown, and to grant as few supplies as possible. The crown, on the other hand, conceived the Parliament in no other light than a means of supply. Queen Elizabeth made a merit to her people of seldom assembling Parliaments‡. No redress of grievances was expected from these assemblies: They were supposed to meet for no other purpose than to impose taxes.

CHAP.

XLIV.

1603.

* D'Ewes, p. 630.

† Lord Salisbury computed them at two millions eight hundred thousand pounds. Journ. 17. February 1609. King James was certainly mistaken when he computed the Queen's supplies at 135,000 pounds a year. Franklyn, p. 49.

‡ Strype, vol. iv. p. 124.

CHAP.
XLIV.

1603.

BEFORE Queen Elizabeth's reign, the English princes had usually recourse to the city of Antwerp for voluntary loans; and their credit was so low, that, besides the exorbitant interest of ten or twelve per cent, they were obliged to make the city of London join in the security. Sir Thomas Gresham, that great and enterprizing merchant, one of the chief ornaments of this reign, engaged the company of merchant-adventurers to grant a loan to the Queen; and as the money was regularly paid, her credit by degrees established itself in the city, and she shook off this dependance on foreigners^a.

IN 1559, the Queen employed Gresham to borrow for her two hundred thousand pounds at Antwerp, in order to enable her to reform the coinage, which was at that time extremely debased^b. She was so unpolitic as to make herself an innovation in the coin; by dividing a pound of silver into sixty-two shillings, instead of sixty, the former standard. This is the last time, that the coin has been tampered with in England.

QUEEN Elizabeth, sensible how much the defence of her kingdom depended on its naval power, was desirous to encourage commerce and navigation: But as her monopolies tended to extinguish all domestic industry, which is much more valuable than foreign trade, and is the foundation of it, the general train of her conduct was very ill calculated to serve the purpose at which she aimed, much less to promote the riches of her people. The exclusive companies also were an immediate check on the foreign trade. Yet, notwithstanding these discouragements, the spirit of the age was strongly bent on naval enterprizes; and besides, the military expeditions against the Spaniards, many at-

^a Stowe's Survey of London, book i. p. 286.
lord Royston's from the paper office, p. 295.

^b MS. of

tempts were made for new discoveries, and many new branches of foreign commerce were opened by the English. Sir Martin Forbisher undertook three fruitless voyages to discover the north-west passage: Davis, not disheartened by this ill success, made a new attempt, when he discovered the straits, which pass by his name. In 1600, the Queen granted the first patent to the East India company: The stock of that company was seventy-two thousand pounds; and they fitted out four ships, under the command of James Lancaster, for this new branch of trade. The adventure was successful; and the ships, returning with a rich cargo, encouraged the company to continue that commerce.

CHAP.
XLIV.
1603.

THE communication with Muscovy had been opened in Queen Mary's time by the discovery of the passage to Archangel: But the commerce to that country did not begin to be carried to a great extent till about the year 1569. The Queen obtained from the Czar an exclusive patent to the English for the whole trade to Muscovy^c; and she entered into a personal, as well as national, alliance with him. This Czar was named John Basilides, a most furious tyrant, who suspecting continually the revolt of his subjects, stipulated to have a safe retreat and protection in England. In order the better to ensure himself of this resource, he proposed to marry an English woman, and the Queen intended to have sent him the lady Anne Hastings, daughter to the earl of Huntingdon: But when the lady was informed of the barbarous manners of the country, she wisely declined purchasing an empire at the expence of her ease and safety^d.

The English, encouraged by the privileges, which they had obtained from Basilides, ventured farther into these countries, than any Europeans had formerly

^c Camden, p. 408.

^d Ibid. p. 493.

CHAP.
XLIV.

1603.

BEFORE Queen Elizabeth's reign, the English princes had usually recourse to the city of Antwerp for voluntary loans; and their credit was so low, that, besides the exorbitant interest of ten or twelve per cent, they were obliged to make the city of London join in the security. Sir Thomas Gresham, that great and enterprizing merchant, one of the chief ornaments of this reign, engaged the company of merchant-adventurers to grant a loan to the Queen; and as the money was regularly paid, her credit by degrees established itself in the city, and she shook off this dependance on foreigners^a.

IN 1559, the Queen employed Gresham to borrow for her two hundred thousand pounds at Antwerp, in order to enable her to reform the coinage, which was at that time extremely debased^b. She was so unpolitic as to make herself an innovation in the coin; by dividing a pound of silver into sixty-two shillings, instead of sixty, the former standard. This is the last time, that the coin has been tampered with in England.

QUEEN Elizabeth, sensible how much the defence of her kingdom depended on its naval power, was desirous to encourage commerce and navigation: But as her monopolies tended to extinguish all domestic industry, which is much more valuable than foreign trade, and is the foundation of it, the general train of her conduct was very ill calculated to serve the purpose at which she aimed, much less to promote the riches of her people. The exclusive companies also were an immediate check on the foreign trade. Yet, notwithstanding these discouragements, the spirit of the age was strongly bent on naval enterprizes; and besides, the military expeditions against the Spaniards, many at-

^a Stowe's Survey of London, book i. p. 286.
lord Roylston's from the paper office, p. 295.

^b MS. of

tempts were made for new discoveries, and many new branches of foreign commerce were opened by the English. Sir Martin Forbisher undertook three fruitless voyages to discover the north-west passage: Davis, not disheartened by this ill success, made a new attempt, when he discovered the straits, which pass by his name. In 1600, the Queen granted the first patent to the East India company: The stock of that company was seventy-two thousand pounds; and they fitted out four ships, under the command of James Lancaster, for this new branch of trade. The adventure was successful; and the ships, returning with a rich cargo, encouraged the company to continue that commerce.

C H A P. XLIV.

1603.

THE communication with Muscovy had been opened in Queen Mary's time by the discovery of the passage to Archangel: But the commerce to that country did not begin to be carried to a great extent till about the year 1569. The Queen obtained from the Czar an exclusive patent to the English for the whole trade to Muscovy^c; and she entered into a personal, as well as national, alliance with him. This Czar was named John Basilides, a most furious tyrant, who suspecting continually the revolt of his subjects, stipulated to have a safe retreat and protection in England. In order the better to ensure himself of this resource, he proposed to marry an English woman, and the Queen intended to have sent him the lady Anne Hastings, daughter to the earl of Huntingdon: But when the lady was informed of the barbarous manners of the country, she wisely declined purchasing an empire at the expence of her ease and safety^d.

The English, encouraged by the privileges, which they had obtained from Basilides, ventured farther into these countries, than any Europeans had formerly

^c Camden, p. 408.^d Ibid. p. 493.

CHAP. done. They transported their goods along the river Dwina in boats made of one entire tree, which XLIV. they towed and rowed up the stream as far as Walogda. From thence, they carried them seven days journey by land to Yeraslau, and then down the Volga to Astracan. At Astracan, they built ships, crossed the Caspian Sea, and distributed their commodities into Persia. But this bold attempt met with such discouragements that it was never renewed^e.

AFTER the death of John Basilides, his son Theodore revoked the patent, which the English enjoyed for a monopoly of the Russian trade; and when the Queen remonstrated against this innovation, he told her ministers, that princes must carry an indifferent hand, as well between their subjects as between foreigners; and not convert trade, which by the laws of nations ought to be common to all, into a monopoly for the private gain of a few^f. So much juster notions of commerce were entertained by this barbarian, than were practised by the renowned Queen Elizabeth! Theodore, however, continued some privileges to the English, on account of their being the first discoverers of the communication between Europe and his country.

THE trade to Turkey was begun about 1583; and that commerce was immediately confined to a company by Queen Elizabeth. Before that time, the grand signior had always conceived England to be a dependant province of France; but having heard of the Queen's power and reputation he gave a good reception to the English, and even granted them larger privileges than he had given to the French.

^e Ibid. p. 418.
Memoirs, vol. i. p. 36.

^f Ibid. p. 493.

^z Birch's

THE merchants of the Hanse towns complained CHAP. XLIV.
loudly in the beginning of Elizabeth's reign of the
treatment which they had received in the days of
King Edward and Queen Mary. She very prudent-
ly replied, that as she would not innovate any thing,
she would protect them still in the immunities and pri-
vileges, which she found them possessed of. This an-
swer not contenting them, their commerce was soon af-
ter suspended for a time, to the great advantage of the
English merchants, who tried what they could them-
selves effectuate for the promotion of their own in-
dustry. They took the whole trade into their own
hands: and their returns proving successful, they
divided themselves into staplers and merchant-ad-
venturers; the former residing constantly at one
place, the other trying their fortunes in other towns
and states abroad with cloth and other manufactures.
This success so enraged the Hanse-towns, that they
tried all the methods, which a discontented people
could devise, to draw upon the English merchants
the ill opinion of other nations and states. They
prevailed so far as to obtain an imperial edict, by
which the English merchants were prohibited all
commerce in the empire: The Queen, by way of
retaliation, retained sixty of their ships, which had
been seized in the river of Lisbon with contraband
goods of the Spaniards. These ships the Queen in-
tended to have restored, as desiring to have compro-
mised all differences with those trading cities; but
when she was informed, that a general assembly was
held at Lubec, in order to concert measures for dis-
tressing the English trade, she caused the ships and
cargoes to be confiscated; only two of them were
released to carry home the news, and to inform
these states, that she had the greatest contempt ima-
ginable for all their proceedings^b.

^b Lives of the Admirals, vol. i. p. 470.

CHAP.
XLIV.

HENRY the eighth, in order to fit out a navy, was obliged to hire ships from Hamburg, Lubec, Dantzick, Genoa, and Venice: But Elizabeth, very early in her reign, put affairs upon a better footing; both by building some ships of her own, and by encouraging the merchants to build large trading vessels, which, on occasion, were converted into ships of warⁱ. In 1582, the seamen in England were computed at fourteen thousand two hundred and ninety-five men^k; the number of vessels twelve hundred and thirty-two; of which there were only two hundred and seventeen above eighty tons. Monson computes, that tho' the navigation decayed in the first years of James the first, by the practice of the merchants, who carried on their trade in foreign bottoms^l, yet before 1640, this number of seamen was trebled in England^m.

THE navy which the Queen left at her decease appears considerable, when we reflect only on the number of vessels, which were forty-two: But when we consider that none of these ships carried above forty guns; that four only came up to that number; that there were but two ships of a thousand ton; and twenty-three below five hundred, some of fifty, and some even of twenty tons; that the whole number of the guns belonging to the fleet were seven hundred and seventy-fourⁿ; we must entertain a very contemptible idea of the English navy compared to the force which it has now attained. In the year 1588, there were not above five vessels, equipped by the noblemen and sea-ports, which exceeded two hundred tons^o.

IN 1599, an alarm was given of an invasion from the Spaniards, and the Queen equipped a fleet and

ⁱ Camden, p. 388.^k Monson, p. 256.^l Ibid. p. 300.^m Ibid. p. 210, 256.ⁿ Monson, p. 196.

The English na-

vy at present carries about 14000 guns.

^o Ibid. p. 300.

levied an army in a fortnight to oppose them. No-^{CHAP.} thing gave foreigners a higher idea of the power of ^{XLIV.} England than this sudden armament. In 1575, all the militia in the kingdom were computed at an hundred and eighty-two thousand nine hundred and twenty-nine^p. A distribution was made, in 1595, of an hundred and forty thousand men, besides those which Wales could supply^q. These armies were formidable by their numbers; but their discipline and experience were not proportional. Small bodies from Dunkirk and Newport frequently ran over and plundered the east coast: So unfit was the militia, as it was then constituted, for the defence of the kingdom. The lord lieutenants were first appointed to the counties in this reign.

MR. MURDEN^r has published a paper, which contains the military force of the nation at the time of the Spanish Armada, and which is somewhat different from the account given by our ordinary historians. It makes all the able-bodied men of the kingdom amount to an hundred and eleven thousand five hundred and thirteen; those armed, to eighty thousand eight hundred and seventy-five; of whom forty four thousand seven hundred and twenty-seven were trained. It must be supposed that these able-bodied men consisted of such only as were registered, otherwise the small number is not to be accounted for. Yet Sir Edward^s said in the House of Commons, that he was employed about the same time, together with Popham, Lord Chief Justice, to take a survey of all the people of England, and that they found them to be 900,000 of all sorts. This number, by the ordinary rules of computation, supposes, that there were above 200,000 men able to bear arms. Yet even this number is surprizingly small.

^p Lives of the Admirals, vol. i. p. 432.

^q Strype, vol. iv. p. 221.

^r P. 608.

^s Journ. 25. April, 1621.

CHAP. Can we suppose thus the kingdom is seven times
 XLIV. more populous at present? And that Murden's was
 the real number of men, excluding catholics and infirm persons?

WHATEVER opinion we may form of the comparative populousness of England in these two periods, it must be allowed, that there is a prodigious encrease of power, in that, more perhaps than in any other European state, since the beginning of the last century. It would be no paradox to affirm, that Ireland alone could at present exert a greater force than all the three kingdoms were capable of at the death of Queen Elizabeth. And we might go farther, and assert, that one good county of England is capable of making, at least of supporting, a greater effort than the whole kingdom was in the reign of Harry V; when the maintainance of a garrison in a small town, like Calais, formed more than a third of the ordinary national expence. Such are the effects of liberty, industry, and good government!

THE state of the English manufactures was at this time very low; and foreign wares of almost all kinds had the preference^{*}. About 1590, there were in London four persons only rated in the subsidy-books so high as four hundred pounds^u. This computation is not indeed to be deemed an exact estimate of their wealth. In 1567, there were found on enquiry to be four thousand eight hundred and fifty-one strangers of all nations in London: Of whom three thousand eight hundred and thirty-eight were Flemings, and only fifty-eight Scots^z. The persecutions in France and the Low Countries drove afterwards a greater number of foreigners into England; and the commerce, as well

^{*} D'Ewes, p. 505.
 461, 462.

^u Ibid. p. 497.

^z Haynes, p.

as manufactures, of that kingdom was very much improved by them^r. It was then that Sir Thomas Gresham built, at his own charge, the magnificent fabric of the Exchange for the reception of the merchants: The Queen visited it, and gave it the appellation of the Royal Exchange.

CHAP.
XLIV.

THERE were two attempts made in this reign to settle colonies in America; one by Sir Humphry Gilbert in Newfoundland, another by Sir Walter Raleigh in Virginia: But neither of these projects proved successful. All these noble settlements were made in the following reigns. The current money of the kingdom, in the end of this reign, is computed at four millions^z.

THE nobility in this age supported still, in some degree, the antient magnificence in their hospitality, and in the numbers of their retainers; and the Queen found it prudent to retrench, by proclamation, their expences in this last particular^a. The expence of hospitality, she somewhat encouraged, by the frequent visits she paid her nobility, and the magnificent feasts which she received from them. The earl of Leicester gave her an entertainment in Kenilworth castle, which was extraordinary for expence and magnificence. Among other particulars, we are told, that three hundred and sixty-five hog-heads of beer were drank at it^b. The earl had fortified this castle at great expence; and it contained arms for ten thousand men^c. The earl of Derby had a family consisting of two hundred and forty servants^d. Stowe remarks it as a singular proof of beneficence in this nobleman, that he was contented with his rent from his tenants, and exacted not

^r Stowe, p. 668.

^z Lives of the Admirals, vol. i. p.

475.

^a Strype, vol. iii. Appen. p. 54.

^b Biogr. Brit.

vol. iii. p. 1791.

^c Strype, vol. iii. p. 394.

^d Stowe,

p. 674.

CHAP.
XLIV.

any extraordinary services from them: A proof that the absolute power of the sovereign (what was almost unavoidable) had very generally countenanced the nobility in tyrannizing over the people. Burleigh, tho' he was frugal, and had no paternal estate, kept a family consisting of an hundred servants^e. He had a standing table for gentlemen, and two other tables for persons of meaner condition, which were always served alike, whether he was in town or in the country. About his person he had people of great distinction, insomuch that he 'could reckon up twenty gentlemen retainers who had each a thousand pounds a year; and as many among his ordinary servants, who were worth from a thousand pounds to three, five, ten, and twenty thousand pounds^f. It is to be remarked, that, tho' the revenue of the crown was at that time very small, the ministers and courtiers found means, by employing the exorbitant prerogative, to acquire much greater fortunes than it is possible for them at present to gain, from their larger salaries, and more limited authority.

BUT tho' there were preserved great remains of the antient customs, the nobility were, by degrees, acquiring a taste of elegant luxury; and many edifices, in particular, were built by them, neat, large, and sumptuous, to the great ornament of the kingdom, says Camden^g; but to the no less decay of the glorious hospitality of the nation. It is, however, more reasonable to think, that this new turn of expence promoted arts and industry; while the antient hospitality was the source of vice, disorder, sedition, and idleness.

^e Strype, vol. iii. p. 129. Appen.
^g Page 452.

^f Biogr. Brit. p. 1267.

AMONG the other species of luxury, that of apparel began much to encrease during this age; and the Queen thought proper to restrain it by proclamation^b. Her example was very little conformable to her edicts. As no woman was ever more conceited of her beauty, nor more desirous of making impressi-
 on on the hearts of beholders, no one ever went to a greater extravagance in apparel, or studied more the variety and richness of her dresses. She appeared almost every day in a different habit; and tried all the several modes, by which she hoped to render herself agreeable. She was also so fond of her cloaths, that she never could part with any of them; and at her death she had in her wardrobe all the different habits, to the number of three thousand, which she had ever worn in her life-time^c.

THE retrenchment of the antient hospitality, and the diminution of retainers, were favourable to the prerogative of the sovereign; and by disabling the great noblemen from resistance, promoted the execution of the laws, and extended the authority of the courts of justice. There were many particular causes in the situation and character of Henry the seventh, which augmented the authority of the crown: Most of these causes concurred in succeeding princes; together with the factions of religion, and the acquisition of the supremacy, a most important article of prerogative: But the manners of the age were a general cause, which operated during this whole period, and which continually tended to diminish the riches, and still more the influence, of the Aristocracy, antiently so formidable to the crown. The habits of luxury dissipated the immense fortunes of the antient barons; and as the new methods of expence gave subsistence to mechanics and

^b Camden, p. 452.

^c Carte, vol. iii. p. 702, from Beaumont's Dispatches.

C H A P.
XLIV.

merchants, who lived in an independant manner on the fruits of their own industry, a nobleman, instead of the unlimited ascendant which he was wont to assume over those who were maintained at his board, or subsisted by salaries conferred on them, retained only that moderate influence which customers have over tradesmen, and which can never be dangerous to civil government. The landed proprietors also having a greater demand for money than for men, endeavoured to turn their lands to the best account with regard to profit, and either inclosing their fields, or joining many small farms into a few large ones, dismissed those useless hands which formerly were always at their call, in every attempt to subvert the government, or oppose a neighbouring baron. By all these means the cities increased; the middle rank of men began to be rich and powerful; the prince, who, in effect was the same with the law, was implicitly obeyed; and tho' the farther progress of the same causes begot a new plan of liberty, founded on the privileges of the commons, yet in the interval between the fall of the nobles and the rise of this order, the sovereign took advantage of the present situation, and assumed an authority almost absolute.

WHATEVER may be commonly imagined, from the authority of lord Bacon, and from that of Harrington, and later authors, the laws of Henry the seventh contributed very little towards the great revolutions which happened about this period in the English constitution. The practice of breaking entails, by a fine and recovery, had been introduced in the preceding reigns; and this prince only gave indirectly a legal sanction to the practice, by reforming some abuses which attended it. But the settled authority which he acquired to the crown, enabled the sovereign to encroach on the separate jurisdictions of the barons, and produced

produced a more general and regular execution of the laws. The counties palatine underwent the same fate as the feudal jurisdictions; and by a statute of Henry the eighth^k, the jurisdictions of these counties was annexed to the crown, and all writs were ordained to run in the King's name. But the change of manners was the chief cause of the secret revolution of the government, and subverted the power of the barons. CHAP. XLIV.

LEARNING, on its first revival, was held in great estimation by the English princes and nobles; and as it was not yet prostituted by being too common, even the Great deemed it an object of ambition to attain a character for literature. The four successive sovereigns, Henry, Edward, Mary, and Elizabeth, may, on one account or other, be admitted into the class of authors. Queen Catharine Parr translated a book: Lady Jane Gray, considering her age, and her sex, and her station, may be regarded as a prodigy of literature. Sir Thomas Smith was raised from being professor in Cambridge, first to be ambassador to France, and then secretary of state. The dispatches of those times, and among others those of Burleigh himself, are very frequently interlarded with quotations from the Greek and Latin classics. Even the ladies of the court valued themselves on knowlege: Lady Burleigh, lady Bacon, and their two sisters, were mistresses of the antient, as well as modern languages; and valued themselves more on their erudition than on their rank and quality.

QUEEN Elizabeth wrote and translated several books: and she was familiarly acquainted with the Greek as well as Latin tongue. It is pretended, that

* 27 Hen. viii. c. 24.

CHAP. she made an extemporary reply in Greek to the university of Cambridge, who had addressed her in that language. It is certain, that she answered in Latin, without premeditation, and in a very spirited manner, to the Polish ambassador, who had been wanting in respect to her. When she had finished, she turned about to her courtiers, and said, "God's death, my lords," (for she was much addicted to swearing) "I have been forced this day to scour up my old Latin, that hath long lain rusting!" Elizabeth, even after she was Queen, did not entirely drop the ambition of appearing as an author; and next to her desire of admiration for beauty, this seems to have been the chief object of her vanity. She translated Boethius of the Consolation of Philosophy; in order, as she pretended, to allay her grief for Henry the fourth's change of religion. As far as we can judge from Elizabeth's compositions, we may pronounce, that notwithstanding her application, and her excellent parts, her taste in literature was very indifferent: She was even inferior to her successor in this particular, who was himself far from being a just model of eloquence.

UNHAPPILY for literature, at least for the learned of this age, the Queen's vanity lay more in shining by her own learning, than in encouraging men of genius by her liberality. Spencer himself, the finest English writer of his age, was long neglected; and after the death of Sir Philip Sydney, his patron, was allowed to die almost for want. This poet contains great beauties, a sweet and harmonious versification, easy elocution, a fine imagination; yet does the perusal of his work become so tedious, that one never finishes it from the mere pleasure which it affords: It soon becomes a kind of task-reading; and it requires some effort

¹ Speed.

and resolution to carry us on to the end of his long performance. This effect, of which every one is conscious, is usually ascribed to the change of manners: But manners have more changed since Homer's age; and yet that poet still remains the favourite of every reader of taste and judgment. Homer copied true natural manners, which, however rough or uncultivated, will always form an agreeable and interesting picture: But the pencil of the English poet was employed in drawing the affectations, and conceits, and fopperies of chivalry, which appear ridiculous as soon as they lose the recommendation of the mode. The tediousness of continued allegory, and that too seldom striking or ingenious, has also contributed to render the *Fairy Queen* peculiarly tiresome; not to mention the too great frequency of its descriptions, and the languor of its stanza. Upon the whole, Spencer maintains his place in the shelves among our English classics: But he is seldom seen on the table; and there is scarce any one, if he dares to be ingenuous, but will confess, that, notwithstanding all the merit of the poet, he affords an entertainment with which the palate is soon satiated. Several writers of late have amused themselves in copying the stile of Spencer; and no imitation has been so indifferent as not to bear a great resemblance of the original: His manner is so peculiar, that it is almost impossible not to transfer some of it into the copy.

CHAP.

XLIV.

HISTORY OF GREAT BRITAIN.

CHAP. XLV.

Introduction.—James's first transactions.—State of Europe.—Rosni's negotiations.—Raleigh's conspiracy.—Hampton-court conference.—A Parliament.—Peace with Spain.

CHAP. XLV. 1603. **T**HE crown of England was never transmitted from father to son with greater tranquillity, than it passed from the family of Tudor to that of Stuart. During the whole reign of Elizabeth, the eyes of men had been employed in search of her successor; and when old age made the prospect of her death more immediate, there appeared none but the King of Scotland, who could advance any just claim or pretension to the throne. He was the great grand-son of Margaret, eldest daughter of Henry VII. and, on the failure of all the male-line, his hereditary right remained unquestionable. If the religion of Mary Queen of Scots, and the other prejudices contracted against her, had formed any considerable obstacle to her succession; these objections, being entirely personal, had no place with regard to her son. Men also considered, that, tho' the title, derived from blood, had been frequently violated since the Norman conquest, such licences had proceeded more from force or intrigue, than from any deliberate maxims of government. The lineal heir had still in the end prevailed; and both his exclusion and restoration had been commonly attended with such convulsions, as were sufficient to warn all prudent men not lightly to give way to such irregularities. If the will of Henry VIII. authorized by act of parliament, had tacitly excluded the Scottish line; the tyranny and caprices of that monarch had rendered his memory so odious, that a settlement of this nature, unsupported

ported by any just reason, had no authority with the people. Queen Elizabeth too, with her dying breath, had recognized the undoubted title of her kinsman, James; and the whole nation seemed to dispose themselves with joy and pleasure for his reception. Tho' born and educated amidst a foreign and hostile people, men hoped, from his character of moderation and wisdom, that he would embrace the maxims of an English monarch; and the prudent foresaw greater advantages, resulting from an union with Scotland, than disadvantages from submitting to a prince of that nation. The alacrity, with which the English looked towards the successor, had appeared so evident to Elizabeth, that, concurring with other causes, it affected her with the deepest melancholy; and that wise Princess, whose penetration and experience had given her the greatest insight into human affairs, had not yet sufficiently weighed the ingratitude of courtiers, and levity of the people.

As victory abroad, and tranquillity at home, had ever attended this Queen, she left the nation in such flourishing circumstances, that her successor possessed every advantage, except that of comparison with her illustrious name, when he mounted the throne of England. The King's journey from Edinburgh to London immediately afforded to the inquisitive some circumstances of comparison, which even the natural partiality in favour of their new sovereign, could not interpret to his advantage. As he passed along, all ranks of men flocked about him, from every quarter; allured by interest or curiosity. Great were the rejoicings, and loud and hearty the acclamations which resounded from all sides; and every one could remember how the affability and popularity of their Queen displayed themselves amidst such concourse and exultation of her

CHAP.
XLV.

1603.

First trans.
actions of
this reign.

CHAP. XLV. her subjects. But James, tho' sociable and familiar with his friends and courtiers, hated the bustle of a mixed multitude; and tho' far from disliking flattery, yet was he still fonder of tranquillity and ease. He therefore issued a proclamation, forbidding this great resort of people, on pretence of the scarcity of provisions, and other inconveniencies which would necessarily attend it^m.

1603.

HE was not, however, insensible to the great overflow of affection, which appeared in his new subjects; and being himself of an affectionate temper, he seems to have been in haste to make them some return of kindness and good offices. To this motive, probably, we are to ascribe that profusion of titles, which was observed in the beginning of his reign; when, in six weeks time, after his entrance into the kingdom, he is computed to have bestowed knighthood on no less than 237 persons. If Queen Elizabeth's frugality of honours, as well as of money, had been formerly repined at, it began now to be valued and esteemed: And every one was sensible, that the King, by his lavish and premature conferring of favours, had failed of obliging the persons, on whom he bestowed them. Titles of all kinds became so common, that they were no longer marks of distinction; and being distributed, without choice or deliberation, to persons, unknown to the Prince, were regarded more as the proofs of facility and good-nature, than of any determined friendship or esteem.

A PASQUINADE was affixed to St. Paul's, in which an art was promised to be taught, very necessary to assist frail memories, in retaining the names of the new Nobilityⁿ.

^m Kennet, p. 662.

ⁿ Wilson, in Kennet, p. 665.

WE may presume that the English would have thrown less blame on the King's facility in bestowing favours, had these been confined entirely to their own nation, and had not been shared out, in too unequal proportions, to his old subjects. James, who, thro' his whole reign, was more guided by temper and inclination than by the rules of political prudence, had brought with him great numbers of his Scots courtiers; whose impatience and importunity were apt, in many particulars, to impose on the easy nature of their master, and extort favours, of which, it is natural to imagine, his English subjects would very loudly complain. The Duke of Lenox, the earl of Mar, the Lord Hume, Lord Kinloss, Sir George Hume, Secretary Elphinstone^o, were immediately added to the English privy council. Sir George Hume, whom he created Earl of Dunbar, was his declared favourite, as long as that Nobleman lived; and was the wisest and most virtuous, tho' the least powerful, of all those whom the King ever honoured with that distinction. Hay, some time after, was created Viscount Doncaster, and then earl of Carlisle, and got an immense fortune from the crown; all which he spent in a splendid and courtly manner. Ramsay obtained the title of earl of Holderness; and many others, being raised, on a sudden, to the highest elevation, encreased, by their insolence, that envy, which naturally attended them, as enemies and strangers.

CHAP.

XLV.

1603.

It must, however, be owned, in justice to James, that he left almost all the chief offices in the hands of Elizabeth's ministers, and trusted the conduct of political concerns, both foreign and domestic, to his English subjects. Among these, Secretary Cecil, created successively Lord Effendon, Viscount Cranborne,

^o Wilson in Kennet, p. 662.

CHAP.

XLV.

1603.

and Earl of Salisbury, was always regarded as his prime minister and chief counsellor. Tho' the capacity and penetration of this minister were sufficiently known, his favour with the King created great surprize on the accession of that monarch. Cecil was son of the famous Burleigh, whose merits towards his sovereign and his country were great, but whose name was naturally odious to James; as the declared enemy of his mother, and the chief cause of her tragical death, by some esteemed the great stain in the bright annals of Elizabeth. He himself, as well as his father, had stood at the head of the court-faction, which opposed the greatness of the earl of Essex, and which, assisted by the imprudence or rather frenzy of that favourite, at last brought him to the scaffold. The people, by whom the Earl was infinitely beloved, resented the conduct of his enemies; but James still more, who had maintained a secret correspondence with Essex, and regarded him as a zealous partizan for the succession in the house of Stuart. Sir Walter Raleigh, Lord Grey, Lord Cobham, Cecil's associates, felt immediately the effects of these prejudices of their master, and were dismissed from their employments^p: But Cecil, who possessed all the art and cunning of a courtier, as well as many of the talents of a great statesman, had found the means of making his peace with James; and, unknown both to Elizabeth and all the other ministers, had entered into a secret commerce with the successor, during the latter years of the Queen's administration.

THE capacity of James and his ministers in negotiation was immediately put to trial, on the appearance of ambassadors from almost all the princes and states of Europe, in order to congratulate the King on his accession to the throne, and to form with him

^p Kennet, p. 663.

new treaties and alliances. Beside ministers from CHAP.
 Venice, Denmark, the Palatinate; Henry Frederic XLV.
 of Nassau, assisted by Barnevelt the Pensionary of ^{1603.}
 Holland, represented the states of the United Pro-
 vinces. Aremberg was sent by Archduke Albert;
 and Taxis was expected in a little time from Spain.
 But he who excited most the attention of the public,
 both on account of his own merit, and that of his
 master, was the Marquess of Rosni, afterwards Duke
 of Sully, prime minister and favourite of Henry IV. 8th June.
 of France.

WHEN the dominions of the house of Austria de- State of
 volved on Philip II. all Europe was struck with ter- Europe.
 ror; lest the power of a family, which had been
 raised by fortune, should now be carried to an im-
 measurable height, by the wisdom and conduct of
 this monarch. But never were apprehensions found
 in the event to be more groundless. Slow without
 prudence, ambitious without enterprize, false with-
 out deceiving any body, and refined without any
 true judgment; such was the character of Philip and
 such the character, which during his life-time and af-
 ter his death, he impressed on the Spanish councils.
 Revolted or depopulated provinces, discontented or
 indolent inhabitants, were the spectacles, which those
 dominions, lying in every climate of the globe, pre-
 sented to Philip III. a weak prince, and to the Duke
 of Lerma, a minister, weak and odious. But tho'
 military discipline, which still remained, was what
 alone gave some appearance of life and vigour to
 that languishing body; yet such was the terror,
 produced by former power and ambition, that the
 reduction of the house of Austria was the object of
 men's vows, throughout all the states of christen-
 dom. It was not perceived, that the French empire,
 now united in domestic peace, and governed by the
 most heroic and most amiable prince, that adorns
 modern story, was become, of itself, a sufficient coun-

CHAP. terpoise to the Spanish greatness. Perhaps, that
 XLV. prince himself did not perceive it, when he proposed,
 by his minister, a league with James, in conjunction
 with Venice, the United Provinces, and the northern
 crowns; in order to attack the Austrian dominions
 on every side, and depress the exorbitant power of
 that ambitious family^a. But the genius of the
 English monarch was not equal to such vast enter-
 prizes. The love of peace was his ruling passion;
 and it was his peculiar felicity, that the conjunctures
 of the times rendered the same object which was a-
 greeable to him, in the highest degree advantageous
 to his people.

1603.
 Rosni's
 negotiati-
 ons.

THE French ambassador, therefore, was obliged to depart from these extensive aims, and to concert with James the means of providing for the safety of the United Provinces: Nor was this object altogether without its difficulties. The King, before his accession to the throne of England, had entertained very strong scruples with regard to the revolt of the Low Countries; and being always open and sincere^r, except when deliberately resolved to dissemble, he had, on many occasions, gone so far as to give the Dutch the denomination of rebels^s. But having conversed more fully with English ministers and courtiers, he found their attachment to that republic so strong, and their opinion of common interest so established, that he was obliged to sacrifice to politics his sense of justice; a quality, which, even when erroneous, is respectable as well as rare in a monarch. He therefore agreed with Rosni to support secretly the states-general, in concert with the King of France; lest their weakness and despair should oblige them to submit to their old master. The articles of the treaty were few and simple. It was stipulated, that the two

^a Sully's Memoirs.

^r Monsieur de la Boderie, the French leaguer, ambassador at that time in England, ascribes the virtue of openness and sincerity to the King. *Le naturel du Roi est assez ouvert.* vol. i. p. 120.

^s Winwood, vol. ii. p. 55.

Kings should allow the Dutch to levy forces both in CHAP.
 France and Britain; and should underhand remit to XLV.
 that republic the sum of 1,400,000 livres a year for
 the pay of these forces: That the whole sum should
 be advanced by the King of France; but that the
 third of it should be deducted from a debt due by
 him to Queen Elizabeth. And if the Spaniard at-
 tacked either of the Princes, they agreed to assist
 each other; Henry with a force of ten thousand,
 James, with that of six thousand men. This treaty,
 one of the wisest and most equitable concluded by
 James, during the whole course of his reign, was
 more the work of the Prince himself, than any of
 his ministers.

1603.

AMIDST the great tranquillity, both foreign and Raleigh's
 domestic, with which the nation was blest, nothing conspira-
 could be more surprising than the discovery of a cy.
 conspiracy to subvert the government, and to fix on
 the throne of England Arabella Stuart, a near rela-
 tion of the King, and descended equally from Hen-
 ry VII. Every thing remains still mysterious in this
 conspiracy; and history can give us no clue to un-
 ravel it. Watson and Clarke, two catholic priests,
 were accused of the plot: Lord Grey, a puritan:
 Lord Cobham, a thoughtless man, of no fixed princi-
 ple: and Sir Walter Raleigh, suspected to be of that
 philosophical sect, who were then extremely rare in
 England, and who have since received the appellation
 of *free-thinkers*. Together with these, Mr. Broke,
 brother to lord Cobham, Sir Griffin Markham, Mr.
 Copeley, Sir Edward Parham. What cement could
 unite men of such discordant principles in so danger-
 ous a combination; what end they proposed, or what
 means proportioned to an undertaking of this nature,
 has never yet been explained, and cannot easily be
 imagined. As Raleigh, Grey, and Cobham were

† Sully's Memoirs.

CHAP. XLV. commonly believed, after the Queen's death to have opposed proclaiming the King, till conditions should be made with him; they were, upon that, as well as other accounts, extremely obnoxious to the court and ministry; and people were apt, at first to suspect, that the plot was merely a contrivance of Secretary Cecil, to get rid of his old confederates, now become his most inveterate enemies. But the confession, as well as trial of the criminals, put the matter beyond all doubt^a. And tho' no one could find any marks of a concerted enterprize, it appeared, that men of furious and ambitious spirits, meeting frequently together, and believing all the world discontented like themselves, had entertained very criminal projects, and had even entered, some of them at least, into a correspondence with Aremberg, the Flemish ambassador, in order to give disturbance to the new settlement.

1603.

THE two priests^x and Broke^y were executed: Cobham, Grey, and Parham were pardoned^z, after they had laid their heads upon the block^a. Raleigh too was reprieved, not pardoned; and he remained in confinement many years afterwards.

It appears from Sully's Memoirs, that Raleigh secretly offered his services to the French ambassador; and we may thence presume, that, meeting with a repulse from that quarter, he had recourse, for the same unwarrantable purposes, to the Flemish minister. Such a conjecture we are now enabled to form; but it must be confessed, that, on his trial, there appeared no proof of this transaction, nor indeed any circumstance which could justify his condemnation. He was accused by Cobham alone, in a sudden fit of passion, upon hearing, that Raleigh, when examined, had pointed out some cir-

^a State Trials, p. 180. 2d Edit. Winwood, vol. 2. p. 8, 11.

^x November 29.

^y December 5.

^z De-

cember 9.

^a Winwood, vol. 2. p. 11.

cumstances,

cumstances, by which Cobham's guilt might be known and ascertained. This accusation Cobham afterwards retracted; and soon after, retracted his retraction. Yet, upon the written evidence of this single witness, a man of no honour nor understanding, and so contradictory in his testimony; not confronted with Raleigh; not supported by any concurring circumstance; was that great man, contrary to all law and equity, found guilty by the jury. His name was at that time extremely odious in England; and every man was pleased to give sentence against the capital enemy of Essex, the favourite of the people.

CHAP.

XLV.

1603.

Sir Edward Coke, the famous lawyer, then attorney-general, managed the cause for the crown, and threw out on Raleigh such gross abuse, as may be deemed a great reflection, not only on his own memory, but even, in some degree, on the manners of that age. Traitor, monster, viper, and spider of hell, are the terms, which he employs against one of the most illustrious men of the kingdom, who was under trial for life and fortune, and who defended himself with surprising temper, eloquence, and courage^b.

1604.

THE next occupation of the King was entirely according to his hearts content. He was now employed in dictating magisterially to an assembly of divines concerning points of faith and discipline, and in receiving the applauses of these holy men for his superior zeal and learning. The religious disputes between the church and the puritans had induced him to call a conference at Hampton-court, on pretence of finding expedients, which might reconcile both parties.

THO' the severities of Elizabeth towards the catholics had much weakened that party, whose genius was averse to the prevailing spirit of the nation; like seve-

^b State Trials, 1st Edit. p. 176, 177, 182.

rities had had so little influence on the puritans, who were encouraged by that spirit, that no less than seven hundred and fifty clergymen of that party signed a petition to the King on his accession; and many more seemed willing to adhere to it^e. They all hoped, that James having received his education in Scotland, and having ever professed an attachment to the church established there, would at least abate the rigour of the laws enacted against puritans; if he did not show them more particular grace and encouragement. But the King's disposition had taken strongly a contrary byass. The more he knew the puritanical clergy, the less favour he bore them. He had remarked in their Scots brethren a violent turn towards republicanism, and a zealous attachment to civil liberty; principles nearly allied to that religious enthusiasm, with which they were actuated. He had found, that being mostly persons of low birth and mean education, the same lofty pretensions, which attended them in their familiar addresses to their Maker, of whom they believed themselves the peculiar favourites, induced them to use the utmost freedoms with their earthly sovereign. In both capacities, of monarch and of theologian, he had experienced the little complaisance, which they were disposed to show him; whilst they controuled his commands, disputed his tenets, and to his face, before the whole people, censured his conduct and behaviour. If he had submitted to the indignity of courting their favour, he treasured up the stronger resentment against them, and was determined to make them feel, in their turn, the weight of his authority. Tho' he had often met with resistance and faction and obstinacy in the Scots nobility, he retained no ill-will to that order; or rather showed them favour and kindness in England,

^e Fuller, Book, 10. Collier vol. 2. p. 672.

beyond what reason and sound policy could well justify: But the ascendant, which the presbyterian clergy had assumed over him, was what his monarchical pride could never thoroughly digest^d.

HE dreaded likewise the popularity, which attended this order of men in both kingdoms. As useless austerities and self-denial are imagined, in many religions, to render us acceptable to a benevolent Being, who created us solely for happiness, James remarked, that the rustic severity of these clergymen and of their whole sect, had given them, in the eyes of the multitude, the appearance of sanctity and virtue. Strongly inclined himself to mirth and wine and sports of all kinds, he apprehended their censure for his manner of life, free and disengaged. And, being thus averse, from temper as well as policy, to the sect of puritans, he was resolved, if possible, to prevent its further growth in England.

BUT it was the character of James's councils, throughout his whole reign, that they were more wise and equitable, in their end, than prudent and political, in the means. Tho' justly sensible, that no part of civil administration required greater care or a nicer judgment than the conduct of religious parties, whose various geniuses, affections and antipathies, have so mighty an influence on public affairs; he had not perceived, that in the same proportion as this practical knowledge of theology is requisite, the speculative refinements in it are mean, and even dangerous in a monarch. By entering zealously into frivolous disputes, James gave them an air of importance and dignity, which they could

^d James ventured to say in his Basilicon Doron, published while he was in Scotland: "I protest before the great God, and since I am here as upon my Testament, it is no place for me to lie in, that ye shall never find with any Highland or Borderer Thieves, greater ingratitude and more lyes and vile perjuries, than with these fanatic spirits: And suffer not the principal of them to brook your land." *K. James's Works*, p. 161.

rities had had so little influence on the puritans, who were encouraged by that spirit, that no less than seven hundred and fifty clergymen of that party signed a petition to the King on his accession; and many more seemed willing to adhere to it^c. They all hoped, that James having received his education in Scotland, and having ever professed an attachment to the church established there, would at least abate the rigour of the laws enacted against puritans; if he did not show them more particular grace and encouragement. But the King's disposition had taken strongly a contrary bias. The more he knew the puritanical clergy, the less favour he bore them. He had remarked in their Scots brethren a violent turn towards republicanism, and a zealous attachment to civil liberty; principles nearly allied to that religious enthusiasm, with which they were actuated. He had found, that being mostly persons of low birth and mean education, the same lofty pretensions, which attended them in their familiar addresses to their Maker, of whom they believed themselves the peculiar favourites, induced them to use the utmost freedoms with their earthly sovereign. In both capacities, of monarch and of theologian, he had experienced the little complaisance, which they were disposed to show him; whilst they controuled his commands, disputed his tenets, and to his face, before the whole people, censured his conduct and behaviour. If he had submitted to the indignity of courting their favour, he treasured up the stronger resentment against them, and was determined to make them feel, in their turn, the weight of his authority. Tho' he had often met with resistance and faction and obstinacy in the Scots nobility, he retained no ill-will to that order; or rather showed them favour and kindness in England,

^c Fuller, Book, 10. Collier vol. 2. p. 672.

beyond what reason and sound policy could well justify: But the ascendant, which the presbyterian clergy had assumed over him, was what his monarchical pride could never thoroughly digest^d.

CHAP.

XLV.

1604.

He dreaded likewise the popularity, which attended this order of men in both kingdoms. As useless austerities and self-denial are imagined, in many religions, to render us acceptable to a benevolent Being, who created us solely for happiness, James remarked, that the rustic severity of these clergymen and of their whole sect, had given them, in the eyes of the multitude, the appearance of sanctity and virtue. Strongly inclined himself to mirth and wine and sports of all kinds, he apprehended their censure for his manner of life, free and disengaged. And, being thus averse, from temper as well as policy, to the sect of puritans, he was resolved, if possible, to prevent its further growth in England.

BUT it was the character of James's councils, throughout his whole reign, that they were more wise and equitable, in their end, than prudent and political, in the means. Tho' justly sensible, that no part of civil administration required greater care or a nicer judgment than the conduct of religious parties, whose various geniuses, affections and antipathies, have so mighty an influence on public affairs; he had not perceived, that in the same proportion as this practical knowledge of theology is requisite, the speculative refinements in it are mean, and even dangerous in a monarch. By entering zealously into frivolous disputes, James gave them an air of importance and dignity, which they could

^d James ventured to say in his Basilicon Doron, published while he was in Scotland: "I protest before the great God, and since I am here as upon my Testament, it is no place for me to lie in, that ye shall never find with any Highland or Borderer Thieves, greater ingratitude and more lyes and vile perjuries, than with these fanatic spirits: And suffer not the principal of them to brook your land." *K. James's Works*, p. 161.

CHAP.
XLV.

1604.

Confer-
ence at
Hampton-
court.

4th Jan.

not otherwise have acquired; and being himself involved in the quarrel, he could no longer have recourse to contempt and ridicule, the only proper method of appeasing it. The church of England had not yet abandoned the rigid doctrines of grace and predestination: The puritans had not yet totally separated themselves from the church, nor openly renounced episcopacy. Tho' the spirit of the parties was considerably different, the only apparent subjects of dispute were concerning the cross in baptism, the ring in marriage, the use of the surplice, and the bowing at the name of Jesus. These were the mighty questions, which were solemnly agitated in the conference at Hampton-court between some bishops and dignified clergymen on the one hand, and some leaders of the puritan party on the other, the king and his ministers being present^e.

THE puritans were here so unreasonable as to complain of a partial and unfair management of the dispute; as if the search after truth were in any degree the object of such conferences, and a candid indifference, so rare even among private inquirers in *philosophical* questions, could ever be expected among princes and prelates, in a *theological* controversy. The King, it must be confessed, from the beginning of the Conference, showed the strongest propensity to the established church, and frequently inculcated a maxim, which, tho' it has some foundation, is to be received with great limitations, NO BISHOP, NO KING. The bishops, in their turn, were very liberal of their praises towards the royal disputant; and the Archbishop of Canterbury said, that *undoubtedly his Majesty spoke by the special assistance of God's spirit*^f. A few alterations in the liturgy were agreed to, and both parties separated with mutual dissatisfaction.

^e Fuller's Ecclesiastical History.^f Kennet, p. 665.

It had frequently been the practice of puritanical clergymen to form together certain assemblies, which they called *prophefying*s; where alternately, as moved by the spirit, they displayed their pious zeal in prayers and exhortations, and raised their own enthusiasm, as well as that of their audience, to the highest pitch, from that social contagion, which has so mighty an influence on holy fervours, and from the mutual emulation, which arose in those trials of religious eloquence. Such dangerous societies had been suppressed by Elizabeth; and the ministers in this conference moved the King for their revival. But James sharply replied, *If you aim at a Scottish presbytery, it agrees as well with monarchy as God and the devil. There Jack and Tom and Will and Dick shall meet and censure me and my council. Therefore I reiterate my former speech: Le Roi s'avisera. Stay, I pray for one seven years before you demand; and then, if you find me grow pursie and fat, I may perchance bearken unto you. For that government will keep me in breath, and give me work enough*.* Such were the political considerations, which determined the King in his choice among religious parties.

The next assembly, in which James displayed his learning and eloquence, was one that showed some A Parli- more spirit of liberty than appeared among his ment. bishops and theologians. The parliament was now March 19. ready to assemble; being so long delayed on account of the plague, which had broke out in London, and raged to such a degree, that 30,000 persons are computed to have died of it in a year; tho' the City contained at that time only about 150,000 inhabitants.

THE speech, which the King made on opening the parliament, displays fully his character, and proves him to have possessed more knowlege and greater parts

* Fuller's Ecclesiastical History.

CHAP. XLV. 1604. than prudence or any just sense of decorum and propriety^b. Tho' few productions of the age surpass this speech either in style or matter; it wants that majestic brevity and reserve, which becomes a king in his addresses to the great council of the nation. It contains, however, a very remarkable stroke of candor, where he confesses his too great facility in yielding to the solicitations of suitors^c. A fault, which he promises to correct, but which adhered to him, and distressed him, during the whole course of his reign.

THE first business, in which the commons were engaged, was of the utmost importance to the preservation of their privileges; and neither temper nor resolution were wanting in their conduct of it.

IN former periods of the English government, the house of commons were of so small weight in the balance of the constitution, that little attention had been given, either by the crown, the people, or the house itself, to the choice and continuance of the members. It had been usual, after parliaments were prolonged beyond one session, for the chancellor to exert a discretionary authority, of issuing new writs to supply the place of any members, whom he judged incapable of attending, either on account of their employment, their sickness, or other impediment. This practice gave that minister, and consequently the prince, an unlimited power of garbling at pleasure the representatives of the nation; yet so little jealousy had it created, that the commons of themselves, without any court influence or intrigue, and contrary to some former votes of their own, confirmed it in the twenty third of Elizabeth^d. At that time, tho' some members, whose place had been supplied on account of sickness, having

^b K. James's Works, p. 484, 485, &c. Journ. 22d March 1603. Kennet, p. 668. ^c K. James's Works, p. 495, 496. ^d Journ. January 19, 1580.

now recovered their health, appeared in the house, and claimed their seat; such was the authority of the chancellor, that merely out of respect to him, his sentence was adhered to, and the new members were continued in their places. Here a most dangerous prerogative was conferred on the crown: But to show the genius of that age, or rather the channels in which power then ran, the crown put very little value on this authority; insomuch, that two days afterwards, the chancellor, of himself, resigned it back to the commons, and gave them power to judge of a particular vacancy in their house. And when the question, concerning the chancellor's new writs, was again brought on the carpet towards the end of the session, the commons were so little terrified at the precedent, that, tho' they re-admitted some old members, whose seats had been vacated, on account of slight indispositions, yet they confirmed the chancellor's sentence, in instances where the distemper appeared dangerous and incurable¹. Nor did they proceed any farther, in vindication of their privileges, than to vote, *that during the sitting of parliament there do not, at any time, any writ go out for the choosing or returning any member without the warrant of the house*. In Elizabeth's reign we may remark, and the reigns preceding, sessions of parliament usually continued not above the twelfth part so long as the vacations: and during the latter, the chancellor's power, if he pleased to exert it, was still left, by this vote, as unlimited and unrestrained as ever.

In a subsequent parliament, the absolute authority of the Queen was exerted in a manner still more open; and began for the first time to give alarm to the commons. New writs having been issued by the chancellor, when there was no vacancy, and a controversy

¹ Journ. March 18, 1580. See farther D'Ewes, p. 430.

arising upon that incident; the Queen sent a message to the house, informing them, that it was impertinent for them to deal in such matters. These questions, she said, belonged only to the chancellor; and she had appointed him to confer with the judges, in order to settle all disputes with regard to elections. The commons had the courage a few days after, to vote "That it was a most perilous precedent, where two knights of a county were duly elected, if any new writ should issue out for a second election, without order of the house itself; that the discussing and adjudging of this and such like differences belonged only to the house; and that there should be no message sent to the lord chancellor, not so much as to enquire what he had done in the matter, because it was conceived to be a matter derogatory to the power and privilege of the house^m." This is the most considerable, and almost only instance of parliamentary liberty, which occurs, during the reign of that princess.

OUTLAWS, whether on account of debts or crimes, had been declared by the judgesⁿ, incapable of a seat in the house, where they must themselves be law-givers: But this opinion of the judges had been frequently over-ruled. I find, however, in the case of Vaughan^o, who was questioned for an outlawry, that, having proved all his debts to have been contracted for suretyship, and to have been, most of them, honestly compounded, he was allowed, on account of these favourable circumstances, still to keep his seat: Which plainly supposes, that, otherwise, it would have been vacated, on account of the outlawry^p.

^m Ibid, p. 397.ⁿ 39 H. vi.^o Journ. Feb. 8, 1580.^p In a subsequent Parliament that of the 35th of the Queen, the Commons, after great debate, expressly voted, that a person out-lawed might be elected. D'Ewes, p. 518. But as the matter had been much contested, the King might think the vote of

WHEN James summoned this parliament, he issued a proclamation^a; in which among many general advices, which, like a kind tutor, he bestowed on his people, he strictly charges them not to chuse any outlaw for their representative. And he adds; *If any person take upon him the place of knight, citizen, or burgesse, not being duly elected, according to the laws and statutes in that behalf provided, and according to the purport, effect, and true meaning of this our proclamation, then every person so offending to be fined or imprisoned for the same.* A proclamation here was plainly put on the same footing with a law, and that in so delicate a point as the right of elections: Most alarming circumstances, had there not been reason to believe, that this measure, being entered into so early in the King's reign, proceeded more from precipitation and mistake, than from any serious design of invading the privileges of his parliament^r.

SIR Francis Goodwin was chosen member for the county of Bucks; and his return, as usual, was made into chancery. The chancellor, pronouncing him an outlaw, vacated his seat, and issued writs for a new election^s. Sir John Fortescue was chosen in his place

the House no law, and might esteem his own decision of more weight than theirs. We may also suppose, that he was not acquainted with this vote. Queen Elizabeth in her speech to her last Parliament complained of their admitting outlaws, and represents that conduct of the House as a great abuse.

^a Jan. 11, 1604. Rymer, tom. xvi. p. 561.

^r The duke of Sully tells us, that it was a maxim of James, that no Prince in the first year of his reign should begin any considerable undertaking. A maxim very reasonable in itself, and very suitable to his cautious, if not timid character. The facility, with which he departed from this pretension is another proof, that his meaning was innocent. But had the privileges of Parliament been at that time exactly ascertained, or royal power fully limited, could such an imagination ever have been entertained by him, as to think, that his proclamations could regulate parliamentary elections.

^s Winwood, vol. ii. p. 18, 19.

by

CHAP.

XLV.

1604.

by the county: But the first act of the house was to reverse the chancellor's sentence, and restore Sir Francis to his seat. At the King's instigation, the lords desired a conference on this subject; but were absolutely refused by the commons, as the question regarded entirely their own privileges*. They agreed, however, to make a remonstrance to the King by the mouth of their speaker; where they maintained, that, tho' the returns were by form made into chancery, yet the sole right of judging with regard to elections belonged to the house itself, not to the chancellor". James was not satisfied, and ordered a conference between the house and the judges, whose opinion in this case was opposite to that of the commons. This conference, he said, he commanded as an *absolute king*^x; an epithet

* Journ. 26th March, 1604.

▪ Journ. 3d April 1604.

^x Sir Charles Cornwallis the King's ambassador at Madrid, when pressed by the Duke of Lerma to enter into a league with Spain, said to that minister; *Tho' his Majesty was an absolute king, and therefore not bound to give an account to any, of his actions; yet that so gracious and regardful a prince he was of the love and contentment of his own subjects, as I assured myself he would not think it fit to do any thing of so great consequence without acquainting them with his intentions.* Winwood, vol. ii. p. 222. Sir Walter Raleigh has this passage in the preface to his history of the world. *Philip II. by strong hand and main force, attempted to make himself not only an absolute monarch over the Netherlands, like unto the kings and monarchs of England and France, but, Turk like, to tread under his feet all their natural and fundamental laws, privileges and antient rights.* We may infer from these passages, either that the word *absolute* bore a different sense from what it does at present, or that men's ideas of the English government were then different. This latter inference seems juster. The word being derived from the French, bore always the same sense as in that language. An absolute monarchy in Charles I's answer to the nineteen propositions is opposed to a limited: and the King of England is acknowledged not to be absolute. So much had matters changed even before the civil war. In Sir John Fortescue's treatise of absolute and limited monarchy, a book wrote in the reign of Edward the IVth, the word *absolute* is taken in the same sense as at present; and the government of England is said not to be absolute. They were the princes of the house of Tudor chiefly, who introduced that administration, which had the appearance of absolute government. The princes before them were restrained by the barons; as those after them by the

1604.

we are apt to imagine, not very grateful to English ears, but one to which they had already been somewhat accustomed from the mouth of Elizabeth^r. He added, *That all their privileges were derived from his grant, and hoped they would not turn them against him^z*, a sentiment, which, from her conduct, it is certain, that Princess had also entertained, and which was the reigning principle of her courtiers and ministers, and the spring of all her administration.

THE commons were in some perplexity. Their eyes were now opened, and they saw the consequences of that power, which had been assumed by the chancellor, and to which their predecessors had, in some instances, blindly submitted. *By this course*, said a member, *the free election of the counties is taken away, and none shall be chosen but such as shall please the King and council. Let us, therefore, with fortitude, understanding, and sincerity, seek to maintain our privilege. This cannot be construed any contempt in us, but merely a maintenance of our common rights, which our ancestors have left us, and which it is just and fit for us to transmit to our posterity^a*. Another said^b, *This may be called a quo warranto, to seize all our liberties. A chancellor, added a third, by this course may call a parliament consisting of what persons he pleases. Any suggestion, by any person, may be the cause of sending a new writ. It is come to this plain question, whether the chancery or parliament ought to have authority^c*.

NOTWITHSTANDING this watchful spirit of liberty, which now appeared in the commons, their deference for majesty was so great, that they appointed a

House of Commons. The people had, properly speaking, little liberty in either of these antient governments, but the least, in the more antient.

^r Camden in Kennet, p. 375. ^z Journ. 29 March. 5 April 1604. ^a Journ. 30 March 1604. ^b Id. Ibid. ^c Id. Ibid.

CHAP. XLV. committee to confer with the judges before the King and council. There the question of law began to appear, in James's eyes, a little more doubtful than he had hitherto imagined it; and in order to bring himself off with some honour, he proposed that both Goodwin and Fortescue should be set aside, and a writ be issued, by warrant of the house, for a new election. Goodwin gave his consent; and the commons embraced this expedient; but in such a manner, that, while they showed their regard for the King, they secured for the future, the free possession of their seats, and the right, which they claimed, of judging solely in their own elections and returns^d.

1604.

A POWER like this, so essential to the exercise of all their other powers, themselves so essential to public liberty, cannot fairly be deemed an encroachment in the commons; but must be regarded as an inherent privilege, happily rescued from that ambiguity, which the negligence of some former parliaments had thrown upon it.

AT the same time, the commons, in the case of Sir Thomas Shirley established their power of punishing, as well the persons at whose suit any member is arrested, as the officers, who either arrest or detain him. Their asserting of this privilege admits of the same reflection^e.

^d Even this Parliament, which shewed so much spirit and good-sense in the affair of Goodwin, made a strange concession to the crown, in their fourth session. Toby Mathews, a member, had been banished by order of council upon direction from his Majesty. The parliament not only acquiesced in this arbitrary proceeding, but issued writs for a new election. Such novices were they, as yet in the principles of Liberty! See Journ. 14 Feb. 1609. Mathews was banished by the King, on account of his change of religion to popery. The King had an indulgence to those who had been educated catholics; but could not bear the new converts. It was probably the animosity of the Commons against the papists, which made them acquiesce in this precedent, without reflecting on the consequences! The jealousy of Liberty, tho' roused, was not yet thoroughly enlightened.

^e Journ. 6, and 7, May, 1604.

ABOUT this period, the minds of men, through-
out all Europe, but especially in England, seem to
have undergone a general, but insensible revolution. Tho' letters had been revived in the preced-
ing age, they seem to have been chiefly cultivat-
ed by men of sedentary professions; nor had they,
till now, begun to spread themselves, in any degree,
among men of the world. Arts, both mechanical
and liberal, were every day receiving great im-
provements. Navigation had extended itself over
the whole globe. Travelling was secure and agree-
able. And the general system of politics, in Eu-
rope, was become more enlarged and comprehen-
sive.

CHAP.
XLV.
1604.

IN consequence of this universal fermentation,
the ideas of men enlarged themselves on all sides,
and the several constituent parts of the gothic go-
vernments, which seem to have lain asleep for so
many ages, began, every where, to operate and
encroach on each other. On the continent, where
the necessity of discipline had begot mercenary ar-
mies, the prince commonly established an unlimit-
ed authority, and overpowered, by force or in-
trigue, the liberties of the people. In England, the
love of freedom, which, unless checked, flourishes
extremely in all liberal natures, acquired new force,
and was regulated by more enlarged views, suita-
ble to that cultivated understanding, which be-
came, every day, more common, among men of
birth and education. A familiar acquaintance with
the precious remains of antiquity excited in eve-
ry generous breast a passion for a limited constitu-
tion, and begot an emulation of those manly vir-
tues, which the Greek and Roman authors, by
such animating examples, as well as pathetic ex-
pressions, recommend to us. The severe, tho' popu-
lar, government of Elizabeth had confined this ri-
sing spirit within very narrow bounds: But when a

CHAP. new and foreign family succeeded to the throne, and
 XLV. a prince less dreaded and less beloved; symptoms
 immediately appeared of a more free and independent
 1604. genius in the nation.

HAPPILY this Prince possessed neither sufficient capacity to perceive the alteration, nor sufficient art and vigour to check it in its early advances. Jealous of regal, because conscious of little personal authority, he had established within his own mind a speculative system of absolute government, which few of his subjects, he believed, and none but traitors and rebels, would make any scruple to admit. On which-ever side he cast his eyes, every thing concurred to encourage his prejudices. When he compared himself with the other hereditary sovereigns of Europe, he imagined, that, as he bore the same rank, he was intitled to equal prerogatives, not considering the innovations lately introduced by them, and the military force, by which their authority was supported. In England, that power, almost unlimited, which had been exercised for above a century, especially during the late reign, he ascribed solely to royal birth and title; not to the prudence and spirit of the monarchs, nor to the conjunctures of the times. Even the opposition, which he had struggled with in Scotland, encouraged him still farther in his favourite notions; while he there saw, that the same resistance, which opposed regal authority, violated all law and order, and made way, either for the ravages of a barbarous nobility, or for the more intolerable insolence of seditious preachers. In his own person, therefore, he thought all legal power to be centered, by an hereditary and a divine right: And this opinion might have proved dangerous, if not fatal, to liberty; had not the firmness of the persuasion, and its seeming evidence induced him to trust solely to his right,

right, without making the smallest provision either of C H A P.
XLV.
force or politics, in order to support it.

SUCH were the opposite dispositions of parliament and prince, at the commencement of the Scottish line; dispositions just beginning to exist and to appear in the parliament^f, but thoroughly established and openly avowed on the part of the prince.

1604.

THE spirit and judgment of the house of commons appeared, not only in defence of their own privileges, but also in their endeavour, tho', at this time, in vain, to free trade from these shackles, which the high exerted prerogative, and even, in this respect, the ill-judged tyranny of Elizabeth, had imposed upon it.

JAMES had already, of his own accord, called in and annulled all the numerous patents for monopolies, which had been granted by his predecessor, and which

^f At that time men of genius, and of enlarg'd minds had adopted the principles of liberty, which were, as yet, pretty much unknown to the generality of the people. Sir Matthew Hales had publish'd a remonstrance against the King's conduct towards the Parliament during this session. The remonstrance is drawn with great force of reasoning and spirit of liberty; and was the production of Sir Francis Bacon and Sir Edwin Sandys, two men of the greatest parts and knowledge in England. It is drawn in the name of the Parliament; but as there is no hint of it in the Journals, we must conclude, either that the authors, sensible that the strain of the piece was much beyond the principles of the age, had not ventured to present it to the house, or that it had been, for that reason, rejected by them. The dignity and authority of the commons are strongly insisted upon in this remonstrance; and it is there said, that their submission to the ill treatment, which they received during the latter part of Elizabeth's reign, had proceeded from their tenderness towards her age and her sex. But the authors are mistaken in these facts: For the house received and submitted to as bad treatment in the beginning and middle of that reign. The government was equally arbitrary in Mary's reign, in Edward's, in Harry the eighth and seventh's. And the farther we go back in history, tho' there might be more of a certain irregular kind of liberty among the barons, the commons were still of less authority. King James, as they themselves acknowledge'd, gave the house of commons more liberty of speech, than had been indulg'd them by any of his predecessors.

fettered

fettered extremely every species of domestic industry: But the exclusive companies still remained; another species of monopoly, by which almost all foreign trade, except that to France, was brought into the hands of a few rapacious engrossers, and all prospect of future improvement in commerce was for ever sacrificed to a little temporary advantage of the sovereign. These companies, tho' arbitrarily erected, had carried their privileges so far, that the whole commerce of England was centered in London; and it appears that the customs of that port amounted to 110,000*l.* a-year, while those of all the kingdom beside yielded only seventeen thousand². Nay, the whole trade of London was confined to about 200 citizens^b, who were easily enabled, by combining among themselves, to fix whatever price they pleased both to the exports and imports of the nation. The committee, appointed to examine this enormous grievance, one of the greatest which we read of in English story, insists on it as a fact well known and avowed, however contrary to the present received opinion, that shipping and seamen had sensibly decayed during all the preceding reign¹. And tho' nothing be more common than complaints of the decay of commerce, even during the most flourishing periods; yet is this a consequence which might naturally result from such arbitrary establishments, at a time when the trade of all the other nations of Europe, except that of Scotland, enjoyed full liberty and indulgence.

² Journ. 21 May, 1604.^b Id. *ibid.*¹ A remonstrance from the Trinity-house, in 1602, says, that in a little above twelve years, after 1588, the shipping and number of seamen in England decayed about a third part. Anglesey's happy future state of England, p. 128. from Sir Julius Cæsar's collections. See Journ. 21 May 1604.

WHILE the commons were thus attempting to give liberty to the trading part of the nation, they also endeavoured to free the landed interest from the burthen of wardships^k, and to remove those remains of the feudal tenures, under which the nation still laboured. A just regard was shown to the crown in the whole conduct of this affair; nor was the remedy, sought for, considered as a matter of right, but merely of grace and favour. The profit, which the King reaped both from wards and from respite of homage, was estimated; and it was proposed to compound for these prerogatives by a secure and independent revenue. But after some debates in the house, and some conferences with the lords, the affair was found to contain more difficulties than could easily, at that time, be surmounted; and it was not then brought to any conclusion.

CHAP.
XLV.

1604.

THE same fate attended an attempt of a like nature, to free the nation from the burthen of purveyance; an old prerogative in the crown, by which the officers of the household were empowered to take, without consent of the owners, provisions for the King's family, and carts and horses for the removal of his baggage, upon paying a stated price for them. This prerogative had been much abused by the purveyors^l; and the commons showed some intention to offer the King fifty thousand pounds a-year for the abolition of it.

ANOTHER affair of the utmost consequence was brought before this parliament, where the commons shewed a greater spirit of independence than any true judgment of national interest. The union of the two kingdoms was very zealously, and even impatiently urged by the King^m. He justly regarded it as the peculiar felicity of his reign, that he had terminated

^k Journ. 1 June, 1604.

^l Journ. 30 April, 1604.

^m Journ. 21 April. 1 May, 1604. Parliamentary History, vol. v. p. 91.

CHAP. the bloody animosities of these hostile nations, and
 XLV. had reduced the whole island under one empire;
 1604. enjoying tranquillity within itself, and security
 from all foreign invasions. He hoped, that,
 while his subjects of both kingdoms reflected on
 past disasters, besides regarding his person as infi-
 nitely precious, they would entertain the strongest
 desire of securing themselves against the return of
 like calamities, by a thorough union of laws, par-
 liaments, and privileges. He considered not, that
 this very reflection operated, as yet, in a contra-
 ry manner, on men's prejudices, and kept alive
 that mutual hatred between the nations, which had
 been carried to the greatest extremity, and requir-
 ed time to allay it. The more urgent the King ap-
 peared in promoting so useful a measure, the more
 backward was the English parliament in concur-
 ring with him; while they ascribed his excessive
 zeal, to that partiality, in favour of his antient sub-
 jects, of which they thought, that, on other occa-
 sions, they had reason to complain. Their com-
 plaisance for the King, therefore, carried them no
 farther than to appoint forty-four English to meet
 with thirty-one Scots commissioners, in order to de-
 liberate concerning the terms of an union; but with-
 out any power of making advances towards the esta-
 blishment of it*.

THE same spirit of independence, and perhaps not
 better judgment, appeared in the house of commons,
 when the question of supply was brought before them,
 by some members who were attached to the court.
 In vain was it urged, that tho' the King received a
 supply, which had been voted to Elizabeth, and
 which had not been collected before her death; yet
 he found it burthened with a debt contracted by the
 Queen, equal to the full amount of it: That peace

* Journ. 7 June, 1604. Kennet, p. 673.

was not yet thoroughly concluded with Spain, and that Ireland was still expensive to him: That on his journey from Scotland, amidst such an immense concourse of people, and on that of the Queen and royal family, he had expended considerable sums: And that, as the courtiers had looked for greater liberalities from the Prince on his accession, and had imposed on his generous nature; so the Prince, in his turn, would expect, at the beginning, some mark of duty and attachment from his people, and some consideration of his necessities. No impression was made on the house of commons by these topics; and the majority appeared fully determined to refuse all supply. The burthen of the government, at that time, lay surprizingly light upon the people: And that very reason, which to us, at this distance, may seem a motive for generosity, was the real cause why the parliament was, on all occasions, so remarkably frugal and reserved. They were not, as yet, accustomed to open their purses in so liberal a manner as their successors, in order to supply the wants of their sovereign; and the smallest demand, however requisite, appeared in their eyes unreasonable and exorbitant. The commons seem also to have been desirous of reducing the crown to still farther necessities, by their refusing a bill, sent down to them by the lords, for entailing the crown lands for ever on the King's heirs and successors^o. The dissipation, made by Elizabeth, had probably taught him the necessity of this law, and shewn them the advantage of refusing it.

IN order to cover a disappointment, which might bear a bad construction both at home and abroad, James sent a message to the house^p, where he told them, that he desired no supply; and he was very

^o Parliamentary Hist. vol. v. p. 108.

^p Journ. 26 June 1604.

CHAP. forward in refusing what was never offered him.

XLV. ^{1604.} Soon after, he prorogued the parliament, not without discovering, in his speech, visible marks of dissatisfaction. Even so early in his reign, he saw reason to

7th July. make public complaints of the restless and encroaching spirit of the puritanical party, and of the malevolence, with which they endeavoured to inspire the commons. Nor were his apprehensions without reason; since the commons, now finding themselves free from the arbitrary government of Elizabeth, apply'd for a conference with the lords, and presented a petition to the King; the purport of both which was to procure, in favour of the puritans, a relaxation of the ecclesiastical laws.* The use of the surplice and of the cross in baptism is there chiefly complained of; but the remedy seems to be expected solely from the King's dispensing power†. The same papers discover the violent animosity of the commons against the catholics together with the intolerating spirit of that assembly.

Peace
with
Spain.
18th August.

THIS summer, the peace with Spain was finally concluded, and was signed by the Spanish ministers at London‡. In the conferences, previous to this treaty, the nations were found to have so few claims on each other, that, except on account of the support given by England to the Low Country provinces, the war might appear to have been continued more on account of personal animosity between Philip and Elizabeth, than any contrariety of political interests between their subjects. Some articles in the treaty, which seem prejudicial to the Dutch commonwealth, were never executed by the King; and as the Spaniards made no complaints on that head; it appeared, that, by secret agreement, these articles were understood in a different sense from what they seem naturally to bear, and that

* Parliamentary history, vol. 5. p. 98, 99, 100.

† Rymer, tom. xvi. p. 585, &c.

the King reserved the power of sending assistance to the Hollanders^s. The Constable of Castile came into England to ratify the peace; and on the part of England, the Earl of Hartford was sent into the Low Countries for the same purpose, and the Earl of Nottingham, Lord high admiral, into Spain. The train of the latter was numerous and splendid; and the Spaniards, it is said, were extremely surprised, when they beheld the blooming countenances and graceful appearance of the English, whom their bigotry, inflamed by the priests, had represented as so many monsters and infernal demons.

C H A P.

XLV.

1604.

Tho' England, by means of her naval force, was perfectly secure, during the latter years of the Spanish war, James shewed an extreme impatience to put an end to hostilities; and soon after his accession, before any terms of peace were concerted or even proposed by Spain, he recalled all the letters of marque, which had been granted by Queen Elizabeth. The Archduke Albert had made some advances of a like nature^u, which invited the King to take this friendly step. But what is remarkable; in James's proclamation for that purpose, he plainly supposes, that, as he had himself while King of Scotland, always lived in amity with Spain, peace was attached to his person, and that merely by his accession to the crown of England, without any articles of treaty or agreement, he had ended the war between the kingdoms^x. This igno-

^s Winwood, vol. ii. p. 27. p. 330, *et alibi*. In this respect James's peace was more honourable than that which Henry the 4th himself made with Spain. That prince stipulated not to assist the Dutch; and the supplies, which he secretly sent them were in direct contravention to the treaty.

^t 23d of June, 1603.

^u Grotii Annal. Lib. 12.

^x See proclamations during the first seven years of K. James. Winwood. vol. ii. p. 65.

C H A P. XLV. Prince of the law of nations may appear surprising in a Prince, who was thirty-six years of age, and who had reigned from his infancy, did we not consider, that a king of Scotland, who lives in close friendship with England, has few transactions to manage with foreign princes, and has little opportunity of acquiring experience. Unhappily for James, his timidity, his prejudices, his indolence, his love of amusement, particularly of hunting, to which he was extremely addicted, ever prevented him from making any progress in the knowledge or practice of foreign politics, and in a little time diminished that regard, which all the neighbouring nations had paid to England, during the reign of his predecessor.

JAMES

C H A P. XLVI.

Gun-powder conspiracy. — A parliament. — Truce betwixt Spain and the United Provinces. — A parliament. — Death of the French King. — Arminianism. — State of Ireland.

WE come now to relate an event, one of the most memorable, which history has conveyed to posterity, and containing at once a singular proof both of the strength and weakness of the human mind; its widest departure from morals, and its most steady attachment to religious prejudices. 'Tis the *Gun-powder treason* of which I speak; a fact as certain as it appears incredible.

THE Roman catholics had expected great favour and indulgence on the accession of James, both as he was descended from Mary, who had sacrificed her life to their cause, and as he himself, in his early youth, was believed to have shown some partiality towards them; which nothing, they thought, but interest and necessity had since restrained. 'Tis pretended, that he had even entered into positive engagements to tolerate their religion, so soon as he should mount the throne of England; whether their credulity had interpreted in this sense some obliging expressions of the King, or that he had employed such an artifice, in order to render them favourable to his title⁷. Very soon they discovered their mistake; and were at once surprized and enraged to find James, on all occasions, express his intention of executing strictly the laws enacted against them, and of persevering in all the rigorous measures of Eli-

⁷ State Trials vol. ii. p. 201, 202, 203. Winwood vol. ii. p. 49.

CHAP.

XLVI.

1605.

zabeth. Catesby, a gentleman of good parts and of an antient family, first thought of a most extraordinary method of revenge; and he opened his intention to Piercy, a descendant of the illustrious house of Northumberland. In one of their conversations with regard to the distressed condition of the catholics, Piercy having broke into a fally of passion, and mentioned the assassinating the King; Catesby took the opportunity of revealing to him a nobler and more extensive plan of treason, which not only included a sure execution of vengeance, but afforded some hopes of restoring the catholic religion in England. In vain, said he, would you put an end to the King's life: He has children, who would succeed both to his crown and to his maxims of government. In vain would you extinguish the whole royal family: The nobility, the gentry, the parliament are all infected with the same heresy, and could raise to the throne another prince and another family, who, besides their hatred to our religion, would be animated with revenge for the tragical death of their predecessors. To serve any good purpose, we must destroy, at one blow, the King, the royal family, the lords, the commons; and bury all our enemies in one common ruin. Happily, they are all assembled on the first meeting of the Parliament; and afford us the opportunity of glorious and useful vengeance. Great preparations will not be requisite. A few of us, combining, may run a mine below the hall, in which they meet, and choosing the very moment when the King harangues both houses, consign over to destruction these determined foes to all piety and religion. Mean while, we ourselves standing aloof, safe and unsuspected, shall triumph in being the instruments of divine wrath, and shall behold with pleasure those sacrilegious walls, in which were past the edicts for proscribing our church and butcher-

ing

ing her children, tost into a thousand fragments; while their impious inhabitants, meditating perhaps still new prosecutions against us, pass from flames above to flames below, there for ever to endure the torments due to their offences^z.

CHAP.
XLVI.
1605.

PIERCY was charmed with this project of Catefby; and they agreed to communicate the matter to a few more, and among the rest to Thomas Winter, whom they sent over to Flanders, in quest of Fawkes, an officer in the Spanish service, with whose zeal and courage they were all thoroughly acquainted. When they enlisted any new conspirator, in order to bind him to secrecy, they always, together with an oath, employed the sacrament, the most sacred rite of their religion^a. And 'tis remarkable, that no one of these pious devotees ever entertained the least compunction with regard to the cruel massacre, which they projected, of whatever was great and eminent in the nation. Some of them only were startled by the reflection, that of necessity many catholics must be present; as spectators or attendants on the King, or as having seats in the house of peers: But Tesmond, a jesuit, and Garnet, superior of that order in England, removed these scruples, and shewed them how the interests of religion required, that the innocent should here be sacrificed with the guilty.

ALL this passed in the spring and summer of the year 1604; when the conspirators also hired a house in Piercy's name, adjoining to that in which the parliament was to assemble. Towards the end of that year they began their operations. That they might be less interrupted, and give less suspicion to the neighbourhood, they carried in store of provisions

^z History of the Gunpowder 'Treason, vol. I. p. 190, 198, 210.

^a State Trials,

with

CHAP.

XLVI.

1605.

with them, and never desisted from their labour. Obstinate to their purpose, and confirmed by passion, by principle and by mutual exhortation, they little feared death in comparison of a disappointment; and having provided arms, together with the instruments of their labour, they resolved there to perish in case of a discovery. Their perseverance advanced the work; and they soon pierced the wall, tho' three yards in thickness; but on approaching the other side, they were somewhat startled with hearing a noise, which they knew not how to account for. Upon inquiry, they found, that it came from the vault below the house of lords; that a magazine of coals had been kept there; and that, as the coals were selling off, the vault would be let to the highest bidder. The opportunity was immediately seized; the place hired by Piercy; thirty-six barrels of powder lodged in it; the whole covered up with faggots and billets; the doors of the cellar boldly flung open; and every body admitted, as if it contained nothing dangerous.

CONFIDENT of success, they now began to look forward, and to plan the remaining part of their project. The King, the Queen, Prince Henry, were all expected to be present at the opening of the parliament. The Duke, by reason of his tender age, would be absent; and it was resolved, that Piercy should seize him, or assassinate him. The Princess Elizabeth, a child likewise, was kept at Lord Harrington's house in Warwickshire; and Sir Everard Digby, Rookwood, Grant, being let into the conspiracy, engaged to assemble their friends, on pretence of a hunting-match, and seizing that Princess, immediately to proclaim her Queen. So transported were they with rage against their adversaries, and so charmed with the prospect of revenge, that they forgot all care of their own safety; and trusting to the general confusion, which must result from
so

so unexpected a blow, they foresaw not, that the fury of the people, now unrestrained by any authority, must have turned against them, and would probably have satiated itself, by an universal massacre of the catholics.

CHAP.

XLVI.

1605.

THE day, so long wished for, now approached, on which the parliament was appointed to assemble. The dreadful secret, tho' communicated to above twenty persons, had been religiously kept, during the space of near a year and a half. No remorse, no pity, no fear of punishment, no hope of reward, had, as yet, induced any one conspirator, either to abandon the enterprize, or make a discovery of it. The holy fury had extinguished in their breasts every other motive; and it was an indiscretion at last, proceeding chiefly from these very bigotted prejudices and partialities, which saved the nation.

TEN days before the meeting of the parliament, Lord Monteagle, a catholic, son to Lord Morley, received the following letter, which had been delivered to his servant by an unknown hand. *My Lord, Out of the love I bear to some of your friends, I have a care of your preservation. Therefore I would advise you, as you tender your life, to devise some excuse to shift off your attendance at this parliament. For God and man have concurred to punish the wickedness of this time. And think not slightly of this advertisement; but retire yourself into your country, where you may expect the event in safety. For, tho' there be no appearance of any stir, yet, I say, they will receive a terrible blow, this parliament, and yet they shall not see who hurts them. This council is not to be condemned, because it may do you good, and can do you no harm: For the danger is past, as soon as you have burned the letter. And I hope God will give you the grace to*

VOL. V.

A a a a

make

CHAP. *make good use of it, to whose holy protection I commend*
 XLVI. *you* ^b.

1605.

MONTEAGLE knew not what to make of this letter; and tho' inclined to think it a foolish attempt to frighten and ridicule him, he judged it safest to carry it to Lord Salisbury, secretary of state. Tho' Salisbury too was inclined to give little attention to it, he thought proper to lay it before the King who came to town a few days after. To the King it appeared not so light a matter; and from the serious earnest stile of the letter, he conjectured, that it implied something very dangerous and important. *A terrible blow, and yet the authors concealed; a danger so sudden, and yet so great;* these circumstances seemed all to denote some contrivance by gun-powder; and it was thought advisable to inspect all the vaults below the houses of parliament. This care belonged to the earl of Suffolk, Lord chamberlain; who purposely delayed the search, till the day before the meeting of the parliament. He remarked those great piles of wood and fagots, which lay in the vault under the upper house; and he cast his eye upon Fawkes, who stood in a dark corner, and passed himself for Piercy's servant. That daring and determined courage, which so much distinguished this conspirator, even among those heroes in villany, was fully painted in his countenance, and was not passed unnoticed by the Lord chamberlain^c. Such a quantity also of fuel, for the use of one who lived so little in town as Piercy, appeared a little extraordinary^d; and upon comparing all circumstances it was resolved that a more thorow inspection should be made. About midnight, Sir Thomas Knevet, a justice of peace, was sent with proper attendants; and before the door of the vault,

^b K. James's Works, p. 227.
^d Id. Ibid.
 p. 229.

^c K. James's Works,

finding

finding Fawkes, who had just finished all his preparations, he immediately seized him, and turning over the faggots, discovered the powder. The matches and every thing proper for setting fire to the train were taken in Fawkes's pocket; who finding his guilt now apparent, and seeing no refuge but in boldness and despair, expressed the utmost regret, that he had lost the opportunity, of firing the powder at once, and of sweetening his own death by that of his enemies^e. Before the council, he displayed the same intrepid firmness, mixt even with scorn and disdain; refusing to discover his accomplices and shewing no concern but for the failure of the enterprize^f. This obstinacy lasted two or three days: But being confined to the Tower, left to reflect on his guilt and danger, and the rack being just shown to him; his courage, fatigued with so long an effort, and unsupported by hope or society, at last failed him; and he made a full discovery of all the conspirators^g.

CHAP.

XLVI.

1605.

CATESBY, Piercy, and the other criminals, who were in London, tho' they had heard of the alarm taken at the letter sent to Monteagle; tho' they had heard of the lord chamberlain's search; yet were resolved to persist to the utmost, and never abandon their hopes of success^h. But at last, hearing that

^e K. James's Works, p. 230.

^f Winwood, vol. ii. p.

173.

^g King James's Works, p. 231.

^h Some histo-

rians have imagined, that the King had secret intelligence of the conspiracy, and that the letter to Monteagle was wrote by his direction, in order to obtain the fame of penetration in discovering the plot. But the known facts refute this supposition. That letter being commonly talked of, might naturally have given an alarm to the conspirators, and made them contrive their escape. The visit of the Lord chamberlain ought to have had the same effect. In short, it appears, that no body was arrested or enquired after, for some days, till Fawkes discovered the names of the conspirators. We may infer, however, from a letter in Winwood's Memorials, vol. II. p. 171. that Salisbury's sagacity led the King in his conjectures, and that the minister, like an artful courtier, gave his master the praise of the whole discovery.

CHAP. Fawkes was arrested, they hurried away to Warwick-
 XLVI. shire; where Sir Everard Digby, making account
 1605. that success had attended his confederates, was already in arms, in order to seize the princess Elizabeth. She had escaped into Coventry; and they were obliged to put themselves on their defence against the country, who were raised from all quarters, and armed, by the sheriffs. The conspirators, with all their attendants never exceeded the number of eighty persons; and being surrounded on every side, could no longer entertain hopes, either of escaping or prevailing. Having therefore confessed themselves, and received absolution, they boldly prepared for death, and resolved to sell their lives as dear as possible to the assailants. But even this miserable consolation was denied them. Some of their powder took fire, and disabled them for defence¹. The people rushed in upon them. Piercy and Catesby were killed with one shot. Digby, Rookwood, Winter, and others, being taken prisoners, were tried, confessed their guilt, and died, as well as Garnet, by the hands of the executioner. Notwithstanding this horrid crime, the bigotted catholics were so devoted to Garnet, that they fancy'd miracles to be wrought by his blood²; and in Spain he was regarded as a Martyr³.

NEITHER had the desperate fortune of the conspirators urged them to this enterprize, nor had the former profligacy of their lives prepared them for so great a crime. Before that audacious attempt, their conduct seems, in general, to be liable to no reproach. Catesby's character had entitled him to such regard, that Rookwood and Digby were seduced by their implicit trust in his judgment; and they declared, that, from the motive alone of friendship to him, they were ready, on any

¹ State Trials, vol. i. p. 199. Discourse of the manner, &c. p. 69, 70. ² Winwood, vol. II. p. 300.

³ Winwood, vol. ii. p. 300.

occasion,

occasion, to have sacrificed their lives^m. Digby himself was as highly esteemed and beloved as any man in England; and he had been particularly honoured with the good opinion of Queen Elizabethⁿ. 'Twas bigotted zeal alone, the most absurd of prejudices masqued with reason, the most criminal of passions covered with the appearance of duty, which seduced them into measures, that were fatal to themselves, and had so nearly proved fatal to their country^o.

CHAP.
XLVI.

1605.

THE lords Mordaunt and Sturton, two catholics, were fined, the former, 10,000 pounds, the latter 4000, by the star-chamber; because their absence from parliament had begot a suspicion of their being made acquainted with the conspiracy. The Earl of Northumberland was fined 30,000 pounds, and detained several years prisoner in the Tower; because, among other grounds of suspicion, he had admitted Percy into the number of gentlemen pensioners, without his taking the requisite oaths^p. These sentences may be thought somewhat arbitrary: But such was the nature of all proceedings in the star-chamber.

THE King, in his speech to the parliament, observed, that, tho' religion had engaged the conspirators in so criminal an attempt, yet ought we not to involve all the Roman catholics in the same guilt, or suppose them equally disposed to commit such enormous barbarities. Many holy men, he said, and our ancestors among the rest, had been seduced to concur with that church in her scholastic doctrines; who yet

^m State Trials vol. i. p. 201. ⁿ Athen. Ox. vol. ii. fol. 354.

^o Digby after his condemnation said in a letter to his wife:

“ Now for my intention, let me tell you, that if I had thought

“ there had been the least sin in the plot, I would not have been

“ of it for all the world; and no other cause drew me, to ha-

“ zard my fortune and life but zeal to God's religion.” He ex-

presses his surprize to hear that any catholics had condemned it.

Digby's papers, published by secretary Coventry. ^p Camden in

Kennet, p. 692.

had

CHAP.
XLVI.

1605.

had never admitted her seditious principles, concerning the Pope's power of dethroning kings, or sanctifying assassination. The wrath of heaven is denounced against crimes, but innocent error may obtain its favour; and nothing can be more hateful than the uncharitableness of the puritans, who condemn alike to eternal torments, even the most inoffensive protestants to popery. For his part, he added, that conspiracy, however atrocious, should never alter, in the least, his plan of government: While with one hand he punished guilt; with the other, he would still support and protect innocence^a. After this speech, he prorogued the parliament, till the 22d of January^r.

1606.

THE moderation, and, I may say, magnanimity, of the King, immediately after so narrow an escape from a most detestable conspiracy, was no wise agreeable to his subjects. Their animosity against popery, even before this provocation, had risen to a great pitch; and it had perhaps been more prudent in James, by a little dissimulation, to have conformed himself to it. His theological learning, confirmed by disputation, had happily fixed his judgment in the protestant faith; yet was his heart a little byassed by the allurements of Rome, and he had been extremely pleased, if the making some advances could have effected an union with that antient mother-church. He strove to abate the acrimony of his own subjects against the religion of their fathers: He became himself the object of their diffidence and aversion. Whatever measures he embraced in Scotland to introduce prelacy, in England to enforce the authority of the present church, and support

^a K. James's works. p. 503. 504.

^r The Parliament this session passed an act obliging every one to take the oath of allegiance; a very moderate test, since it decided no controverted points between the two religions, and only engaged the person who took it to abjure the Pope's power of dethroning Kings. See K. James's works, p. 250.

its rites and ceremonies; were interpreted as so many steps towards popery, and were represented by the puritans as symptoms of idolatry and superstition. Ignorant of the consequences, or unwilling to sacrifice to politics his inclination, which he called his conscience, he persevered in the same measures, and gave trust and preferment, almost indifferently, to his catholic and protestant subjects. And finding his person, as well as his title less obnoxious to the church of Rome, than those of Elizabeth, he gradually abated the rigour of those laws, which had been enacted against that church, and which were so acceptable to his bigotted subjects. But the effects of these dispositions on both sides became not very sensible, till towards the conclusion of his reign.

CHAP.
XLVI.

1606.

AT this time, James seems to have possessed, in some degree, the affections even of his English subjects, and, in a pretty high degree, their esteem and regard. Hitherto their complaints were chiefly levelled against his too great constancy in his early friendships; a quality, which had it been attended with more œconomy, the wise would have excused, and the candid would even, perhaps, have applauded. His parts, which were not despicable, and his learning, which was great, being highly extolled by his courtiers and gownmen, and not yet tried in the management of any delicate affairs, for which he was unfit, raised a very high idea of him in the world; nor was it always thro' flattery or insincerity, that he received the title of the second Solomon. A report, which was suddenly spread about this time, of his being assassinated, visibly struck a great consternation into all orders of men*. The commons also abated, this session, somewhat of their excessive frugality and granted him an aid of three subsidies and six fif-

A parliament.

* Kennet, p. 676.

teenths,

1606.

teenths, which, Sir Francis Bacon said in the house, might amount to about four hundred thousand pounds: And for once the King and parliament parted in friendship and good humour. The hatred, which the catholics seemed to bear him, gave him, at this time, an additional value in the eyes of his people. The only point, in which the commons gave him displeasure, was by discovering their constant goodwill to the puritans, in whose favour they desired a conference with the Lords[†]: which was rejected.

THE aid, granted by Parliament, was payable in four years; and the King's profusion, joined to the necessary charges of the government, had already very much anticipated this supply, and disposed him to dissipate, in a very little time, among his friends and courtiers, the residue of it. To engage him farther into expence, his brother-in-law, the King of Denmark payed him a visit this summer; and the whole court was employed in feasting and revelry, in masques and interludes[‡]. Great erudition and profound morality, with little taste or pleasantry, prevail in all these entertainments: Mystery, allegory, and allusion reign throughout. Italy was then the model for wit and ingenuity among the European nations. France herself, who afterwards set so much better patterns of elegance and pleasure, was at that time contented to copy servilely laboured and romantic inventions of her southern neighbour.

November,
18.

THE chief affair which was transacted next session, was the intended union of the two kingdoms. Nothing could exceed the King's passion and zeal for this noble enterprize, but the parliament's prejudice and reluctance against it. There remain two excellent speeches

[†] Journ. 20 May, 1606.
net, p. 676.

[‡] Journ. 5 April 1606.

^{*} Ken-

in favour of the union, which deserve to be compared together; that of the King, and that of Sir Francis Bacon. Those, who affect in every thing such an extreme contempt for James, will be surprised to find, that his discourse, both for good reasoning and eloquent composition, approaches very near that of a man, who was undoubtedly, at that time, one of the greatest geniuses of Europe. A few trivial indiscretions and indecorums may be said to characterize the harangue of the monarch, and mark it for his own. And in general, so open and avowed a declaration in favour of a measure, where he had taken no care, by any precaution or intrigue, to ensure success, may safely be pronounced a very great indiscretion. But the art of managing parliaments, by private interest or cabal, being found hitherto of little use or necessity, was not, as yet, become a part of English politics. In the common course of affairs, government could be conducted without their assistance; and when their concurrence became requisite to the measures of the crown, it was, generally speaking, except in times of great faction and discontent, obtained without much difficulty.

THE King's influence seems to have rendered the Scots parliament very cordial in all the steps, which they took towards the union. Tho' the advantages which Scotland might hope from that measure, were more considerable; yet were the objections too, with regard to that kingdom, more striking and obvious. The benefit, which must have resulted to England, both by accession of strength and security, was not despicable; and as the English were, by far, the greater nation, and possessed the seat of government, the objections, either from the point of honour or from jea-

v K. James's Works, p. 509.

VOL. V.

B b b b

lousy,

CHAP.
XLVI.
1606.

lously, could not reasonably have any place among them. The English parliament indeed seem to have been swayed merely by the vulgar motive of national antipathy. And they persisted so obstinately in their prejudices, that all the efforts for a thorough union and incorporation, ended only in the abolition of the hostile laws, formerly enacted between the kingdoms^z.

SOME precipitant steps, which the King, a little after his accession, had taken, in order to promote his favourite project, had been here observed to do more injury than service. From his own authority, he had assumed the title of King of Great Britain; and had quartered the arms of Scotland, with those of England, in all coins, flags, and ensigns. And he had engaged the judges to make a declaration, that all those, who, after the union of the crowns, should be born in either kingdom, were, for that reason alone, naturalized in both. This was a nice question, and according to the ideas of those times, susceptible of subtle reasoning on both sides. The King was the same: The parliaments were different. To render the people therefore the same, we must suppose, that the sovereign authority resides chiefly in the prince, and that these popular assemblies are rather ordained to assist with money and advice, than indued with any controuling or active powers in the government. *It is evident, says Bacon in his pleadings on this subject, that all other commonwealths, monarchies only excepted, do sub-*

^z The commons were even so averse to the union, that they had complained in the former session to the lords of the bishop of Bristol, for writing a book in favour of it; and the prelate was obliged to make submissions for this offence. The crime imputed to him seems to have consisted in his treating of a subject, which lay before the Parliament. So little notion had they as yet of general liberty! See Parliamentary History, vol. v. p. 108, 109, 110.

sist by a law precedent. For where authority is divided amongst many officers, and they not perpetual, but annual or temporary, and not to receive their authority but by election, and certain persons to have voices only in that election, and the like; these are busy and curious frames, which of necessity do presuppose a law precedent, written or unwritten to guide and direct them: But in monarchies, especially hereditary, that is, when several families or lineages of people do submit themselves to one line, imperial or royal; the submission is more natural and simple; which afterwards, by law subsequent, is perfected and made more formal; but that is grounded upon nature^a. It would seem from this reasoning, that the idea of an hereditary, limited monarchy, tho' implicitly supposed in many public transactions, had never, as yet, been expressly formed by any English lawyer or politician.

CHAP.

XLVI.

1606.

EXCEPT the obstinacy of the parliament with regard to the union, and an attempt on the King's ecclesiastical jurisdiction^b, most of their measures, during this session, were sufficiently respectful and obliging; tho' they still discover a vigilant spirit, and a careful attention towards public good and national liberty. The votes also of the commons show, that that house contained a mixture of puritans, who had acquired great authority among them^c, and who, together with religious prejudices, were continually suggesting ideas, more suitable to a popular than a monarchical form of government. The natural appetite for rule, made the commons lend a willing ear to every doctrine, which tended to augment their power and influence.

^a Bacon's works, vol. iv. p. 190, 191. Edit. 1730.

^b Journ. 2. 2 December, 5 March, 1606 25, 26 June 1607.

^c Journal, 26 February, 4, 7 March, 1606. 2 May, 17 June, 1607.

CHAP.

XLVI.

1607.

A PETITION was moved in the house for a more rigorous execution of the laws against popish recusants, and an abatement towards protestant nonconformists. Both these two points were equally unacceptable to the King; and he sent orders to the house to proceed no farther in that matter. The house were inclined, at first, to consider these orders as a breach of privilege: But they soon acquiesced, when told, that this measure of the King, was supported by many precedents, during the reign of Elizabeth^d. Had the house been always disposed to make the precedents of that reign the rule of their conduct, they needed never have had any difference with any of their monarchs.

5th June. THE complaints of Spanish depredations were very loud among the English merchants^e. The lower house sent a message to the lords, desiring a conference with them, in order to their presenting a joint petition to the King on that subject. The lords took some time to deliberate on this message; because, they said, the matter was *weighty* and *rare*. It probably occurred to them, at first, that the parliament's interposing in affairs of state would appear unusual and extraordinary. And to show, that in this sentiment they were not guided by court influence; after they had deliberated, they agreed to the conference.

THE house of commons began now to feel themselves of such importance, that, on the motion of Sir Edwin Sandys, a member of great authority, they entered, for the first time, an order for the regular keeping of their journals^f. When all business was finished, the King prorogued the parliament.

^d Journ. 16, 17 June, 1607.

^f Journ. 3 July, 1607.

^e Journ. 25 Feb. 1606.

ABOUT this time, there was an insurrection of CHAP.
the country people in Northamptonshire, headed by XLVI.
one Reynolds, a man of low condition. They 1607.
went about destroying inclosures; but carefully a-
voided the committing any other outrage. This in- 4th July.
surrection was easily suppressed, and, tho' great le-
nity was used towards the insurgents, yet were some
of the ringleaders punished. The chief cause of
that trivial commotion seems to have been of itself,
far from trivial. It was become the common prac-
tice in England to disuse tillage, and throw the land
into inclosures for the sake of pasture. By this
means, the kingdom was depopulated, or at least,
prevented from increasing so much in people, as
might have been expected from the daily encrease of
industry and commerce.

NEXT year presents us with nothing memorable: 1608.
But in the spring of the subsequent, after a long
negotiation, was concluded, by a truce of twelve
years, that war, which, for near half a century, had
been carried on with such fury, between Spain and 1609.
the states of the United Provinces. Never contest Truce be-
seemed, at first, more unequal: Never contest was twixt
finished with more honour to the weaker party. On Spain and
the side of Spain were numbers, riches, authority, the Uni-
discipline: On the side of the revolted provinces ted Pro-
were found the attachment to liberty and the enthu-
siasm of religion. By her naval enterprizes the re-
public maintained her armies; and joining peaceful
industry to military valour, she was enabled, by her
own force, to support herself, and gradually rely
less on those neighbouring princes, who, from jea-
lousy to Spain, were at first prompted to encourage
her revolt. Long had the pride of that monarchy
prevailed over her interest, and prevented her from
hearkening to any terms of accommodation with her
rebellious subjects. But finding all intercourse cut
off between her provinces by the maritime force of
the

CHAP. the states, she at last agreed to treat with them as a
 XLVI. free people, and solemnly to renounce all claim and
 pretension to their sovereignty.

1609.
 March 30.

THIS chief point being once gained, the treaty was easily brought to a conclusion, under the joint mediation and guarantee of France and England. All exterior appearances of honour and regard were paid equally to both crowns: But very different were the sentiments which the states, as well as all Europe, entertained of the princes, who wore them. Frugality and vigour, the chief circumstances, which procure regard among foreign nations, shone as conspicuously in Henry as they were defective in James. To a contempt of the English monarch, Henry seems to have added a considerable degree of jealousy and aversion, which were sentiments altogether without foundation. James was perfectly just and fair in all transactions with his allies^z, but it appears from the memoirs of those times, that each side deemed him partial towards their adversary, and fancied, that he had entered into secret measures against them^a. So little equity have men in their judgments of their own affairs; and so dangerous is that entire neutrality affected by the King of England!

1610.
 9th Feb.
 A Parlia-
 ment.

THE little concern, which James took in foreign affairs, renders the domestic occurrences, particularly those of parliament, the most interesting of his reign. A new session was held this spring; the King full of

^z The plan of accommodation which James recommended is found in Winwood, vol. ii. p. 49, 430; and is the same that was recommended by Henry, as we learn from Jeanin, tom. 3. p. 416, 417. It had long been imagined by historians from Jeanin's authority, that James had declared to the court of Spain that he would not support the Dutch in their pretensions to liberty and independence. But it has since been discovered by Winwood's memorials, vol. ii. p. 456, 466, 469, 475, 476, that that report was founded on a lye of president Rickardot's.

^a Winwood and Jeanin, *passim*.

hopes of receiving supply; the commons, of circumscribing his exorbitant prerogative. The Earl of Salisbury, now created treasurer on the death of the Earl of Dorset, laid open the King's necessities, first to the Peers, then to a committee of the lower house¹. He insisted on the unavoidable expences, in supporting the navy, and in suppressing a late insurrection in Ireland: He mentioned three numerous courts, which the King was obliged to maintain, for himself, for the Queen, and for the Prince of Wales: He observed, that Queen Elizabeth, tho' a single woman, had received very large supplies, in the years preceding her death, which alone were expensive to her: and he asserted, that during her reign, she had very much dissipated the crown-lands; an expedient, which, tho' it supplied her present necessities, without laying burthens on her people, multiplied extremely the necessities of her successor. From all these causes he thought it no-wise strange, that the King's income should fall short so great a sum as eighty one thousand pounds of his stated and regular expence; without mentioning contingencies, which ought always to be esteemed a fourth of the yearly charges. And as the crown was now necessarily burthened with a great and urgent debt of 300,000 pounds, he thence inferred the absolute necessity of an immediate and large supply from the people. To all these reasons, which James likewise urged in a speech addressed to both houses, the commons remained inexorable. But not to shock the King with an absolute refusal, they granted him one subsidy and one fifteenth; which would scarce amount to a hundred thousand pounds. And James received the mortification of discovering, in vain, all his wants, and of begging aid of subjects, who had no reasonable indulgence nor consideration for him.

CHAP.
XLVI.

1610.

March 21.

¹ Journ. 17 Feb. 1609. Kennet, p. 681.

CHAP.

XLVI.

1610.

AMONG the many causes of disgust and quarrel, which now daily and unavoidably multiplied between Prince and Parliament, this article of money is to be regarded as none of the least considerable. After the discovery and conquest of the West-Indies, gold and silver became every day more plentiful in England, as well as in the rest of Europe; and the price of all commodities and provisions rose to a pitch beyond what had ever been known, since the declension of the Roman empire. As the revenue of the crown rose not in proportion^{*}, the Prince was insensibly reduced to poverty amidst the general riches of his subjects, and required additional funds, in order to support the same magnificence and force, which had been maintained by former monarchs. But while money thus flowed into England, we may observe, that, at the same time, and probably from that very cause, arts and industry of all kinds received a mighty increase; and elegance in every enjoyment of life became better known, and more cultivated among all ranks of people. The King's servants, both civil and military, his courtiers, his ministers, demanded more ample supplies from the impoverished Prince, and were not contented with the same simplicity of living, which had satisfied their ancestors. The Prince himself began to regard an increase of pomp and splendor as requisite to support the dignity of his character, and to preserve the same superiority above his subjects, which his predecessors had enjoyed. Some equality too, and proportion to the other sovereigns of Europe, it was natural for him to desire; and as they had universally enlarged their revenue and multiplied their taxes, the King of England deemed it reasonable, that his subjects who were generally as rich as theirs,

^{*} Besides the great dissipation of the crown-lands, the fee-farm-rents never increased, and the other lands were let on long leases and at a great undervalue, little or nothing above the old rent.

should bear with patience some additional burthens and impositions. CHAP. XLVI.

UNHAPPILY for the King, those very riches, with the increasing knowlege of the age, bred opposite sentiments in his subjects; and begetting a spirit of freedom and independence, disposed them to pay little regard, either to the entreaties or menaces of their sovereign. While the barons possessed their former immense property and extensive jurisdictions, they were apt on every disgust, to endanger the monarch and throw the whole government into confusion: But this very confusion often, in its turn, proved favourable to the monarch, and made the nation again submit to him, in order to re-establish justice and tranquillity. After that both the power of alienations, and the increase of commerce had thrown the ballance of property into the hands of the commons, the situation of affairs and the dispositions of men became susceptible of a more regular plan of liberty; and the laws were not supported singly by the authority of the sovereign. And tho' in that interval, after the decline of the peers, and before the people had yet experienced their force, the princes assumed an exorbitant power, and had almost annihilated the constitution under the weight of their prerogative; so soon as the commons recovered from their lethargy, they seem to have been astonished at the danger, and were resolved to secure liberty by firmer barriers, than their ancestors had hitherto provided for it.

HAD James possessed a very rigid frugality, he might have warded off this crisis somewhat longer; and waiting patiently for a favourable opportunity to increase and fix his revenue, might have secured the extensive authority, which was transmitted to him. On the other hand, had the commons been inclined to act with more generosity and kindness towards their Prince, they might probably have turned his necessities

CHAP.

XLVI.

1610.

AMONG the many causes of disgust and quarrel, which now daily and unavoidably multiplied between Prince and Parliament, this article of money is to be regarded as none of the least considerable. After the discovery and conquest of the West-Indies, gold and silver became every day more plentiful in England, as well as in the rest of Europe; and the price of all commodities and provisions rose to a pitch beyond what had ever been known, since the declension of the Roman empire. As the revenue of the crown rose not in proportion*, the Prince was insensibly reduced to poverty amidst the general riches of his subjects, and required additional funds, in order to support the same magnificence and force, which had been maintained by former monarchs. But while money thus flowed into England, we may observe, that, at the same time, and probably from that very cause, arts and industry of all kinds received a mighty increase; and elegance in every enjoyment of life became better known, and more cultivated among all ranks of people. The King's servants, both civil and military, his courtiers, his ministers, demanded more ample supplies from the impoverished Prince, and were not contented with the same simplicity of living, which had satisfied their ancestors. The Prince himself began to regard an increase of pomp and splendor as requisite to support the dignity of his character, and to preserve the same superiority above his subjects, which his predecessors had enjoyed. Some equality too, and proportion to the other sovereigns of Europe, it was natural for him to desire; and as they had universally enlarged their revenue and multiplied their taxes, the King of England deemed it reasonable, that his subjects who were generally as rich as theirs,

* Besides the great dissipation of the crown-lands, the fee-farm-rents never increased, and the other lands were let on long leases and at a great undervalue, little or nothing above the old rent.

should bear with patience some additional burthens and impositions.

CHAP.
XLVI.

UNHAPPILY for the King, those very riches, with the increaling knowlege of the age, bred opposite sentiments in his subjects; and begetting a spirit of freedom and independence, disposed them to pay little regard, either to the entreaties or menaces of their sovereign. While the barons possessed their former immense property and extensive jurisdictions, they were apt on every disgust, to endanger the monarch and throw the whole government into confusion: But this very confusion often, in its turn, proved favourable to the monarch, and made the nation again submit to him, in order to re-establish justice and tranquillity. After that both the power of alienations, and the increase of commerce had thrown the ballance of property into the hands of the commons, the situation of affairs and the dispositions of men became susceptible of a more regular plan of liberty; and the laws were not supported singly by the authority of the sovereign. And tho' in that interval, after the decline of the peers, and before the people had yet experienced their force, the princes assumed an exorbitant power, and had almost annihilated the constitution under the weight of their prerogative; so soon as the commons recovered from their lethargy, they seem to have been astonished at the danger, and were resolved to secure liberty by firmer barriers, than their ancestors had hitherto provided for it.

1610.

HAD James possessed a very rigid frugality, he might have warded off this crisis somewhat longer; and waiting patiently for a favourable opportunity to increase and fix his revenue, might have secured the extensive authority, which was transmitted to him. On the other hand, had the commons been inclined to act with more generosity and kindness towards their Prince, they might probably have turned his necessities

VOL. V.

C c c c

ties

CHAP.
XLVI.

1610.

ties to good account, and have bribed him to depart peaceably from the most dangerous articles of his prerogative. But he was a foreigner, and ignorant of the arts of popularity; they were soured by religious prejudices, and tenacious of their money: And, in this situation, it is no wonder, that, during this whole reign, we scarce find an interval of mutual confidence and friendship between prince and parliament.

THE King by his prerogative alone, had, some years before, altered the rates of the customs, and had established new impositions on several kinds of merchandize. This exercise of power will naturally, to us, appear arbitrary and illegal; yet according to the principles and practices of that time, it might admit of some apology. The duties of tonnage and poundage were at first granted to the crown, by a vote of parliament, and for a limited time; and as the grant frequently expired and was renewed, there could not then arise any controversy concerning the origin of the King's right to levy these duties; and this imposition, like all others, was plainly derived from the voluntary consent of the people. But as Henry V. and all the succeeding princes, had the revenue conferred on them for life, the Prince, so long in possession of these duties, began gradually to consider them as his own proper right and inheritance, and regarded the vote of parliament as a mere formality, which rather expressed the acquiescence of the people in his prerogative, than bestowed any new gift or revenue upon him.

THE Parliament, when it first granted poundage to the crown, had fixed no particular rates: The imposition was given as a shilling a pound, or five *per cent.* on all commodities: It was left to the King himself and the Privy Council, aided by the advice of such merchants as they should think proper to consult, to fix the

the value of goods, and thereby the rates of the customs: And as that value had been settled before the discovery of the West-Indies, it was become much inferior to the prices, which almost all commodities bore in every market of Europe; and consequently, the customs, tho' supposed to be five *per cent.* did not, in reality, amount to a third of that value. The King, therefore, was naturally led to think, that rates, which were now plainly false, ought to be corrected¹; that a valuation of commodities, fixed by one act of the privy council, might be amended by another; that if his right to poundage was inherent in the crown, he should also possess, of himself, the right of correcting its inequalities; if it was granted by the people, he should at least support the spirit of the law, by fixing a new and a juster valuation of all commodities. But besides this reasoning, which seems plausible, if not solid, the King was supported in that act of power by two direct precedents, one in the reign of Mary, another in the beginning of Elizabeth^m. Both these Princesses had, without consent of parliament, altered the rates of some particular commodities; and as their impositions had, all along, been submitted to without a murmur, and still continued to be levied, the King had no reason to apprehend, that a farther exercise of the same authority would give any occasion of complaint. That less umbrage might be taken, he was extremely moderate in the new rates, which he established. The law entitled him to levy five *per cent.* on all commodities; yet he really did not, on the whole, exceed two: The customs, during his whole reign, rose only from 127,000 pounds a-year to 160,000; tho' besides the encrease of the rates, there was a sensible encrease of commerce and industry during that

C H A P.

XLVI.

1610.

¹ Winwood, vol. ii. p. 438. ^m Journ. 18th April, 5th and 10th May, 1614, &c. 20th February, 1625.

period: But all this precaution could not save him from the complaints of the house of commons. A spirit of liberty had now taken possession of that house: The leading members, being men of an independent genius and large views, began to regulate their opinions, more by the future consequences which they foresaw, than by the former precedents which were laid before them; and they less aspired at maintaining the antient constitution, than at establishing a new one, and a freer and a better. In their remonstrances to the King on this occasion, they observed it to be a general opinion, *That the reasons of that practice might be extended much farther, even to the utter ruin of the antient liberty of the kingdom, and the subjects right of property in their lands and goods*^a. Tho' expressly forbid by the King to touch his prerogative, they passed a bill abolishing these impositions; which was rejected by the house of lords.

In another address to the King, they objected to the practice of borrowing upon privy seals, and desired that the subjects should not be forced to lend money to his Majesty, nor give a reason for their refusal. Some murmurs likewise were thrown out in the house against a new monopoly of the licence of wines^o. It must be confessed, that forced loans and monopolies were established on many and recent precedents; tho' diametrically opposite to all the principles of a free government^p.

THE house likewise discovered some discontent against the King's proclamations. James told them,

^a Journ. 23d May, 1610.

^o Parliament. Hist. vol. v.

p. 241.

^p We find the King's answer in Winwood's Memorials, vol. iii. p. 193, 2d edit. "To the third and fourth" (namely, that it might be lawful to arrest the King's servants "without leave, and that no man should be inforced to lend money, nor to give a reason why he would not) his Majesty sent "us an answer, that because we brought precedents of anti-

That tho' he well knew, by the constitution and policy of the kingdom, that proclamations were not of equal force with laws; yet he thought it a duty incumbent on him, and a power inseparably annexed to the crown, to restrain and prevent such mischiefs and inconveniencies as he saw growing on the state, against which no certain law was extant, and which might tend to the great detriment of the subject, if there should be no remedy provided till the meeting of a parliament. And this prerogative, he adds, our progenitors have, as well in antient as later times, used and enjoyed^a. The intervals between sessions, we may observe, were frequently so long as to render it requisite for a prince to interpose by his prerogative; and it was an established maxim among the lawyers, that all the proclamations of a king were abrogated by his death^r. But what the authority could be, which bound the subjects, and yet was inferior to the authority of laws, seems inexplicable by any maxims of reason or politics: And in this instance, as in many others, it is easy to see, how unintelligible the English constitution was, before the parliament was able, by continued acqui-

CHAP.
XLVI.
1610.

“quity to strengthen those demands, he allowed not of any precedents drawn from the time of usurping or decaying princes, or people too bold and wanton; that he desired not to govern in that commonwealth, where subjects should be assured of all things, and hope for nothing. It was one thing *submittere principatum legibus*; and another thing *submittere principatum subditis*. That he would not leave to posterity such a mark of weakness upon his reign; and therefore his conclusion was, *non placet petitio, non placet exemplum*: Yet with this mitigation, that in matters of loans he would refuse no reasonable excuse, nor should my Lord Chamberlain deny the arresting of any of his Majesty's servants, if just cause was shown.” The Parliament however, acknowledged at this time with thankfulness to the King, that he allowed disputes and inquiries about his prerogative, much beyond what had been indulged by any of his predecessors. *Parliament. Hist.* vol. v. p. 230. This very session, he expressly gave them leave to produce all their grievances, without exception.

^a *Parliament. Hist.* vol. v. p. 250.

^r *Journ.* 12th May, 1614.

tions or encroachments, to establish it on fixt principles of liberty.

UPON the settlement of the reformation, that extensive branch of power, which regards ecclesiastical matters, being then without an owner, seemed to belong to the first occupier; and Henry VIII. failed not immediately to seize it, and to exert it even to the utmost degree of tyranny. The possession of it was continued with Edward; and recovered by Elizabeth; and that ambitious Princess was so remarkably jealous of this flower of her crown, that she severely reprimanded the parliament, if they ever presumed to intermeddle in these matters; and they were so over-awed by her authority, as to submit, and to ask pardon on these occasions. But James's parliaments were much less obsequious. They ventured to lift up their eyes, and to consider this prerogative. They there saw a very large province of government, possessed by the King alone, and never communicated with the parliament. They were sensible, that this province admitted not of any exact boundary or circumscription. They had felt, that the Roman pontiff, in former ages, under pretence of religion, was gradually making advances to usurp the whole civil power. They dreaded still more dangerous consequences from the claims of their own sovereign, who resided among them, and who, in many other respects, possessed such unlimited authority. They therefore deemed it absolutely necessary to circumscribe this branch of prerogative, and accordingly, in the preceding session, they passed a bill against the establishment of any ecclesiastical canons without consent of parliament*. But the house of lords, as is usual, defended the barriers of the throne, and rejected the bill.

* Journ. 2d, 11th December; 5th March, 1606.

IN this session, the commons contented themselves CHAP. with remonstrating against the proceedings of the *high XLVI.*
commission court^t. It required no great penetration to

see the extreme danger to liberty, arising from large discretionary powers in a regal government. But James, as was natural, refused compliance with the application of the commons. He was probably sensible, that, besides the great diminution of his authority, many inconveniencies must necessarily result from the abolishing all power of this nature in every magistrate; and that the laws, were they ever so carefully framed and digested, could not possibly provide against all contingencies; much less, where they had not, as yet, attained a sufficient degree of accuracy and refinement.

BUT the business, which chiefly occupied the commons, during this session, was the abolition of wardships and purveyance; prerogatives, which had been more or less touched on, every session, during the whole reign of James. In this affair, the commons employed the proper means, which might intitle them to success: They offered the King a settled revenue as an equivalent for the powers, which he should part with; and the King was willing to hearken to terms. After much dispute, he offered to give up these prerogatives for 200,000 pounds a-year, which they agreed to confer on him^u. And nothing remained, towards closing

^t Parliament. Hist. vol. V. p. 247. Kennet. p. 681.

^u We learn from Winwood's Memorials, vol. ii. p. 193, the reason assigned for this particular sum. "From thence my Lord Treasurer came to the price; and here he said, that the King would no more rise and fall like a merchant. That he would not have a flower of his crown (meaning the court of wards) so much tossed; that is was too dainty to be so handled. And then he said, that he must deliver the very countenance and character of the King's mind out of his own hand-writing: which, before he read, he said he would acquaint us with a pleasant conceit of his Majesty. As concerning the number of ninescore thousand pounds, which was our number, he could not affect, because nine was the number of the poets,

CHAP. the bargain, but that the commons should determine
XLVI the funds, from which this sum should be levied.

1610.

This session was too far advanced to bring so difficult a matter to a full conclusion; and tho' the parliament met again, towards the end of the year, and resumed the question, they were never able to terminate an affair, which they seemed so intent upon. The journals of that session are lost; and, as the historians of this reign are very negligent in relating parliamentary affairs, of whose importance they were not sufficiently apprized, we know not exactly the reason of this failure. It only appears, that the King was extremely dissatisfied with the conduct of the parliament, and soon afterwards dissolved it. This was his first parliament, and it sat near seven years.

IN the midst of all these attacks, some more, some less violent, on royal prerogative, the King displayed, as openly as ever, all his exalted notions of monarchy and the authority of princes. Even in a speech to the parliament, where he begged for supply, and where he should naturally have used every art to ingratiate himself with that assembly, he expressed himself in these terms; "I conclude, then, the point, touching the power of kings, with this axiom of divinity, that, as to dispute *what God may do*, is blasphemy, but *what God wills*, that divines may lawfully and do ordinarily dispute and discuss; so is it sedition in subjects to dispute what a king may do in the height of his

"who were always beggars, tho' they served so many muses; and eleven was the number of the apostles, when the traitor, Judas, was away; and therefore might best be affected by his Majesty: But there was a mean number, which might accord us both; and *that was ten*: which, said my lord Treasurer, is a sacred number; for so many were God's commandments, which tend to virtue and edification." If the commons really voted 20,000 pounds a year more, on account of this *pleasant conceit* of the King and the Treasurer, it was certainly the best paid wit, for its goodness, that ever was in the world.

power.

“ power. But just kings will ever be willing to de-
 “ clare what they will do, if they will not incur the
 “ curse of God. I will not be content, that my power
 “ be disputed upon; but I shall ever be willing to
 “ make the reason appear of my doings, and rule my
 “ actions according to *my laws*.” Notwithstanding
 the great extent of prerogative in that age, these ex-
 pressions would probably give some offence. But we
 may observe, that, as the King’s despotism was more
 speculative than practical, so the independency of the
 commons was, at this time, the contrary; and, tho’
 strongly supported by their present situation as well
 as disposition, was too new and recent to be as yet
 founded on systematical principles and opinions.”

* K. James’s Works, p. 531.

† It may not be unworthy observation, that James, in a Book
 called *The true Laws of free Monarchies*, which he published a
 little before his accession to the crown of England, affirmed,
 “ That a good king, altho’ he be above the law, will subject
 “ and frame his actions thereto, for example’s sake to his sub-
 “ jects, and of his own free will, but not as subject or bound
 “ thereto.” In another passage, “ According to the fundamen-
 “ tal law already alleged, we daily see, that in the parliament
 “ (which is nothing else but the head court of the king and his
 “ vassals) the laws are but craved by his subjects, and only
 “ made by him at their roagation, and with their advice. For
 “ albeit the King *make daily* statutes and ordinances, enjoining
 “ such pains thereto as he thinks meet, without any advice of
 “ parliament or estates; yet it lies in the power of no parlia-
 “ ment to make any kind of law or statute, without his sceptre
 “ be to it, for giving it the force of a law.” *K. James’s Works*,
 p. 202. It is not to be supposed, that, at such a critical junc-
 ture, James had so little sense as, directly, in so material a
 point, to have openly shocked what were the universally esta-
 blished principles of that age: On the contrary, we are told by
 historians, that nothing tended more to facilitate his accession,
 than the good opinion entertained of him by the English, on ac-
 count of his learned and judicious writings. The question,
 however, with regard to the royal power was, at this time,
 become a very dangerous point; and without employing ambi-
 guous, insignificant terms, which determined nothing, it was im-
 possible to please both King and parliament. Dr Cowell, who
 had magnified the prerogative in words too intelligible, fell this
 session under the indignation of the commons. *Parliament. Hist.*

CHAP.
XLVI.1610.
3d May.
Death of
the French
King.

THIS year was distinguished by a memorable event, which gave great alarm and concern in England; the murder of the French monarch by the poinard of the fanatical Ravaillac. That experience and reputation, which this heroic prince had been acquiring for so many years; those treasures, which he had amassed; those armies, which he had enlisted and disciplined; were on the point of being employed in some great enterprize, which would probably have changed the face of Europe: when a period was put to his glory by an enthusiastic madman, who sacrificed at once his own life and that of the prince to his detestable prejudices. Were the designs, ascribed to Henry by the compilers of Sully's Memoirs, less chimerical, they might be admitted, on account of the testimony, by which that narration is supported: But such vast projects, had they been real, he must have revolved and digested in his mind for many years; and 'tis observable, that about a twelve-month before, he had been very instrumental in making peace between Spain and the United Provinces; a measure, by which he deprived himself of the assistance of his firmest ally, and the best able to second his enterprizes. 'Tis more probable, that the war, which, at the time of his death, he intended to commence against Spain, was the result of ambition, revenge, or love, in a powerful and military prince, who had long wished for an opportunity of attacking

vol. v. p. 221. The King himself, after all his magnificent boasts, was obliged to make his escape thro' a distinction, which he framed between a king *in abstracto* and a king *in concreto*: An abstract king, he said, had all power; but a concrete king was bound to observe the laws of the country, which he governed. *K. James's Works*, p. 533. But, how bound? By conscience only! Or might his subjects resist him and defend their privileges? This he thought not fit to explain. And so difficult is it to explain that point, that, to this day whatever liberties may be used by private inquirers, the laws have, very prudently, thought proper to maintain a total silence with regard to it.

his

his enemy, and who was at last roused by a sudden C H A P.
 motive or provocation. With his death, the glory of XLVI.
 the French monarchy suffered an eclipse for some 1610.
 years; and that kingdom falling under an adminis-
 tration weak and bigotted, factions and disorderly,
 the Austrian greatness began anew to appear for-
 midable to Europe.

IN England, the antipathy to the catholics revived
 a little upon this tragical event; and some of the
 laws which had been formerly enacted for no other
 purpose than to keep these religionists in awe, began
 now to be executed with greater rigour and severity^z. 1611.

THO' James's timidity and indolence fixed him,
 during most of his reign, in a very prudent inatten-
 tion to foreign affairs, there happened, this year, an
 event in Europe of such mighty consequence as to
 rouse him from his lethargy, and summon up all his Armini-
 zeal and enterprize. A professor of divinity, named anism.
 Vorstius, the disciple of Arminius, was called from
 a German to a Dutch university; and as he differed
 from his Britannic Majesty in some nice questions con-
 cerning the intimate essence and secret decrees of God,
 he was considered as a dangerous rival in scholastic
 fame, and was, at last, obliged to yield to the legions
 of that royal doctor, whose syllogisms he might have
 refuted or eluded. If vigour was wanting in other in-
 cidents of James's reign, here he behaved even with
 haughtiness and insolence; and the states were ob-
 liged, after several remonstrances, to deprive Vor-
 stius of his chair, and to banish him their domini-
 ons^a. The King carried no farther his prosecuti-
 ons against that professor; tho' he had very cha-
 ritably hinted to the states, *That, as to the burning*
Vorstius for his blasphemies and atheism, he left them
to their own christian wisdom; but surely never
heretic better deserved the flames^b. It is to be

^z Kennet, p. 684.
 Works, p. 355.

^a Id. p. 715.

^b K. James's

CHAP. XLVI. 1611. remarked, that, at this period, all over Europe, except in Holland alone, the practice of burning heretics still prevailed, even in protestant countries; and instances were not wanting in England, during the reign of James. The Dutch themselves were, at last, by state intrigue, and the tyranny of Prince Maurice, forced from their rational and humane maxims; and the persecuting bigots, a little after this time, signalized their power by the death of the virtuous Barneveldt, and the imprisonment of the virtuous and learned Grotius. The scholastic controversies about free-will, and grace, and predestination, begot these violent convulsions.

IN tracing the coherence among the systems of modern theology, we may observe, that the doctrine of absolute decrees has ever been intimately connected with the enthusiastic spirit; as that doctrine affords the highest subject of joy, triumph, and security, to the supposed elect, and exalts them, by infinite degrees, above the rest of mankind. All the first reformers adopted these principles; and the Jansenists too, a fanatical set in France, not to mention the Mahometans in Asia, have ever embraced them. As the Lutheran establishments were subjected to episcopal jurisdiction, their enthusiastic genius gradually decayed, and men had leisure to perceive the absurdity of supposing God to punish, by infinite torments, what he himself, from all eternity, had unchangeably decreed. The King tho', at this time, his calvinistic education had rivetted him in the doctrine of absolute decrees, yet, being a zealous partizan of episcopacy, was insensibly engaged, towards the end of his reign, to favour the milder theology of Arminius. Even in so great a doctor, the genius of the religion prevailed over its speculative tenets; and with him, the whole clergy gradually dropped the more rigid principles of absolute reprobation

probation and unconditional decrees. Some noise C H A P. XLVI.
 was, at first, made about these innovations; but be-
 ing drowned in the fury of factions and civil wars
 which succeeded, the scholastic arguments made an
 insignificant figure amidst those violent disputes a-
 bout civil and ecclesiastical power with which the na-
 tion was agitated. And upon the restoration, the
 church, tho' she still retained her old subscriptions
 and articles of faith, was found to have totally
 changed her speculative doctrines, and to have
 embraced tenets more suitable to the genius of
 her discipline and worship, without its being possible
 to assign the precise period, in which the alteration
 was produced. 1611.

It may be worth observing, that, about this time,
 James, from his great desire to promote controver-
 sial divinity, erected a college at Chelsea for the en-
 tertainment of twenty persons, who should be en-
 tirely employed in refuting the papists and puritans^c.
 All the efforts of the great Bacon could not procure
 an establishment for the cultivation of natural philo-
 sophy: Even to this day, no society has been institut-
 ed for the polishing and fixing our language. The
 only encouragement, which the sovereign in Eng-
 land has ever given to any thing, that has the appea-
 rance of science, was this short-lived establishment
 of James; an institution quite superfluous, consider-
 ing the unhappy propension, which, at that time,
 so universally possessed the nation for polemical di-
 vinity.

To consider James in a more advantageous light, 1612.
 we must take a view of him as the legislator of Ire-
 land; and most of the institutions, which he had framed
 for the civilizing that kingdom, being finished about
 this period, it may not here be improper to give some

^c Kennet, p. 685. Camden's Brit. vol. i. p. 370. Gibson's
 edit.

CHAP. account of them. He frequently boasts of the ma-
 XLVI. nagement of Ireland as his master-piece; and it
 1612. will appear, upon inquiry, that his vanity, in this
 particular, was not altogether without foundati-
 on.

State of
 Ireland.

AFTER the subjection of Ireland by Elizabeth, the more difficult task still remained; to civilize the barbarous inhabitants, to reconcile them to laws and industry, and to render their subjection durable and useful to the crown of England. James proceeded in this work by a steady, regular and well concerted plan; and in the space of nine years, according to Sir John Davis, he made greater advances towards the reformation of that kingdom, than had been made in the 440 years, which had elapsed since the conquest was first attempted^d.

It was previously necessary to abolish the Irish customs, which supplied the place of laws, and which were calculated to keep that people for ever in a state of barbarism and disorder.

By the *Brebon* law or custom, every crime, however enormous, was punished, not with death, but by a fine or pecuniary mulct, which was levied upon the criminal. Murder itself, as among all the antient barbarous nations, was attoned for in this manner; and each man, according to his rank, had a different rate or value affixed to him, which, if any one was willing to pay, he needed not fear the assassinating his enemy. This rate was called his *eric*. When Sir William Fitzwilliams being Lord deputy, told Maguire, that he was to send a sheriff into Fermannah, which, a little before, had been made a county, and subjected to the English law; *Your sheriff*, said Maguire, *shall be welcome to me: But, let me know, beforehand, his eric, or the price of his head, that, if my people*

^d P. 259. edit. 1613.

cut it off, I may levy the money upon the county^e. AS CHAP. XLVI.
 for oppression, extortion, and other trespasses, so little were they regarded, that no penalty was affixed to them, and no redress for such offences could ever be obtained.

THE customs of *Gavelkinde* and *Tanistry* were attended with the same absurdity in the distribution of property. Upon the death of any person, his land, by the custom of *Gavelkinde*, was divided among all the males of the sept or family, both bastard and legitimate: And, after partition made, if any of the sept died, his portion was not shared out among his sons; but the chieftain, at his discretion, made a new partition of all the lands, belonging to that sept, and gave every one his share ^f. As no man, by reason of this custom, enjoyed the fixed property of any land; to build, to plant, to inclose, to cultivate, to improve, would have been so much lost labour.

THE chieftains and the Tanists, tho' drawn from the principal families, were not hereditary, but were established by election, or, more properly speaking, by force and violence. Their authority was absolute; and, notwithstanding that certain lands were assigned to the office, its chief profit resulted from exactions, dues, assessments, for which there was no fixed law, and which were levied at pleasure ^z. Hence arose that common bye-word among the Irish, *That they dwelt westward of the law, which dwelt beyond the river of the Barrow*: Meaning the country, where the English inhabited, and which extended not beyond the compass of twenty miles, lying in the neighbourhood of Dublin ^h.

^e Sir John Davis, p. 166.

^f Sir John Davis, p. 167.

^z Id. p. 173.

^h Id. p. 237.

AFTER abolishing these Irish customs, and substituting English law in their place; James, having taken all the natives under his protection, and declared them free citizens, proceeded to govern them by a regular administration, military as well as civil.

A sufficient army was maintained, its discipline inspected, and its pay transmitted from England, in order to keep the soldiers from preying upon the country, as had been usual in former reigns. When Odoghartie raised an insurrection, a reinforcement was sent over, and the flames of that rebellion were immediately extinguished.

ALL minds being first quieted by an universal indemnityⁱ; circuits were established, justice administered, oppression banished, and crimes and disorders of every kind severely punished^k. As the Irish had been universally engaged in the rebellion against Elizabeth, a resignation of all the rights, which had been formerly granted them to separate jurisdictions, was rigorously exacted; and no authority, but that of the King and the law, was permitted throughout the kingdom^l.

A resignation of all private estates was even required; and when they were restored, the proprietors received them under such conditions as might prevent, for the future, all tyranny and oppression over the common people. The value of the dues, which the nobles usually claimed from their vassals, was estimated at a fixed sum, and all further arbitrary exactions prohibited under severe penalties^m.

THE whole province of Ulster having fallen to the crown by the attainder of rebels, a company was established in London, for planting new colonies in that fertile country: The property was divided into moderate shares, the largest not exceeding 2000 acres:

ⁱ Id. p. 263.^k Id. p. 264, 265, &c.^l Id. p. 276.^m Sir John Davis, p. 278.

Tenants were brought over from England and Scotland: The Irish were removed from the hills and fastnesses, and settled in the open country: Husbandry and the arts were taught them: A fixed habitation secured: Plunder and robbery punished: And, by these means, Ulster, from being the most wild and disorderly province of all Ireland, soon became the best cultivated and most civilizedⁿ.

C H A P.
XLVI.

1612.

SUCH were the arts, by which James introduced humanity and justice among a people, who had ever been buried in the most profound barbarism. Noble cares! much superior to the vain and criminal glory of Conquests; but requiring ages of perseverance and attention to perfect what had been so happily begun.

A LAUDABLE act of justice was, about this time, executed in England upon Lord Sanquhir, a Scots nobleman, who had been guilty of a base assassination upon Turner, a fencing-master. The English nation, who were generally dissatisfied with the Scots, were enraged at this crime, equally mean and atrocious; but James appeased them, by preferring the severity of law to the intercession of the friends and family of the criminal^o.

ⁿ Id. p. 280.^o Kennet, p. 688.

END OF THE FIFTH VOLUME.

E e e e



AFTER abolishing these Irish customs, and substituting English law in their place; James, having taken all the natives under his protection, and declared them free citizens, proceeded to govern them by a regular administration, military as well as civil.

A sufficient army was maintained, its discipline inspected, and its pay transmitted from England, in order to keep the soldiers from preying upon the country, as had been usual in former reigns. When Odoghartie raised an insurrection, a reinforcement was sent over, and the flames of that rebellion were immediately extinguished.

ALL minds being first quieted by an universal indemnityⁱ; circuits were established, justice administered, oppression banished, and crimes and disorders of every kind severely punished^k. As the Irish had been universally engaged in the rebellion against Elizabeth, a resignation of all the rights, which had been formerly granted them to separate jurisdictions, was rigorously exacted; and no authority, but that of the King and the law, was permitted throughout the kingdom^l.

A resignation of all private estates was even required; and when they were restored, the proprietors received them under such conditions as might prevent, for the future, all tyranny and oppression over the common people. The value of the dues, which the nobles usually claimed from their vassals, was estimated at a fixed sum, and all further arbitrary exactions prohibited under severe penalties^m.

THE whole province of Ulster having fallen to the crown by the attainder of rebels, a company was established in London, for planting new colonies in that fertile country: The property was divided into moderate shares, the largest not exceeding 2000 acres:

ⁱ Id. p. 263.^k Id. p. 264, 265, &c.^l Id. p. 276.^m Sir John Davis, p. 278.

Tenants were brought over from England and Scotland: The Irish were removed from the hills and fastnesses, and settled in the open country: Husbandry and the arts were taught them: A fixed habitation secured: Plunder and robbery punished: And, by these means, Ulster, from being the most wild and disorderly province of all Ireland, soon became the best cultivated and most civilizedⁿ.

C H A P. XLVI.

1612.

SUCH were the arts, by which James introduced humanity and justice among a people, who had ever been buried in the most profound barbarism. Noble cares! much superior to the vain and criminal glory of Conquests; but requiring ages of perseverance and attention to perfect what had been so happily begun.

A LAUDABLE act of justice was, about this time, executed in England upon Lord Sanquhir, a Scots nobleman, who had been guilty of a base assassination upon Turner, a fencing-master. The English nation, who were generally dissatisfied with the Scots, were enraged at this crime, equally mean and atrocious; but James appeased them, by preferring the severity of law to the intercession of the friends and family of the criminal^o.

ⁿ Id. p. 280.^o Kennet, p. 688.

END OF THE FIFTH VOLUME.

E e e e

